

John Adams Library.



IN THE CUSTODY OF THE
BOSTON PUBLIC LIBRARY.



SHELF N^o

★ ADAMS

★ 173.10

John Adams
— " —

THE HISTORIE OF ITALIE.

A booke exceeding profitable
to be read, because it intreateth
of the estate of many and dy-
uers common weales, how
they haue bene, and
now be gover-
ned.

Printed at London in Flete-
street nere to Sainct Dunstons
Church by Thomas
Warhe.

CThe contentes of this booke.

The description of Italye.
Of the astate of Italie in general.
Abbzgement of the astate of Italye, from the
beginnyng vntyl the Romaine empire was viterly
diuided.

CThe description of Rome, and of the meruaylouse
antiquitees there.

COf the present astate of Rome.

CAbbzgement of the lines of the Romaine by Choppes

CThe Venetian astate, and the order of their common
weale.

CThe description of Naples.

CThe Histozie of Naples.

CThe description of Flozence.

CThe astate of Flozence.

CThe description of Genoa.

CThe astate of Genoa.

CThe description of Millayne.

CThe astate of Millayne.

CThe astate of Mantua.

CThe astate of Ferrara.

CThe astate of Placencia and Parma.

CThe astate of Urbine.

To the righte honourable and mine
 respectall good lord, John Erle of Marres-
 wike, Viscount Lisle, knight of the most
 noble order of the Garter, lord
 great chamberlaine, and
 highe admyrall of
 Englande.



Thoughe many wise and learned
 men haue so substanti ally set forth
 the infinite commodities that grow
 of the readyng of hystories, that my
 wyttes can not atteygne to a small
 parte of the due commendacyon
 thereof: Yet seinge my trauayle at
 this present hath ben to publish vnto our owne nation
 in our mother tounge the doynges of straungers, and
 spectallye of the Italian nation, whiche seemeth to flou-
 rysh in ciuillitee mooste of all other at this daye; me
 thought I coulde no lesse doe for the incourageynge of
 theim that shall take this boke in hande, than partelye
 reherse what profyte they maye gather by trauayllynge
 therein, First they shall see, vpon what little beginning
 many great states haue risen, and how they that haue
 had the power to rule, by vsynge their auctozitees well
 and prudently, haue merited immortall fame of honoure
 and praise: and vsynge tyrannye and ill gouernaunce,
 haue contrariwise bozne eternall sklander and shame.
 It encourageth the vertuose men, by the examplers
 that they reade, to encrease in vertue and nobilitie: and

The Preface.

Sheweth the bectouse, what the fruyte of their abuses are, and how naughtie doynges haue most commonlye naughtie endyng. It moueth the noble pynce to main- teigne peace and iustice, and sheweth the tyzanne, what plagues folow of warre and crueltee: and that though he bys tyzannye passe vnplagued in thys woꝛlde (whych hathened seldome) yet shall his name be hated and cur- sed in al ages and amongst al nactons, as Nero, He- liogabalus and suche other pynces be. It sheweth also, howe mutable fortune is, and howe that, whych hath bene gotten with extreeme peines, vnmearable expences, and vnrasonable effusion of bloude, hath ben lost in a moment: and that commonly he that hath conquered most in warre, at the beste is yet a loser, and finallye, that of diuision, either amongst the nobilytes or the commons, there ensueth bitter destruction of realmes, and subuercion of common wealthes. Where vnto there is none so great a minister as the alteracion of auncient lawes and customes.

¶ All these thynges, with infynite moe, byffoꝛes doe so set foꝛthe to the eyes of pynces (if they reade thein well) that their hertes shalbe moze enclined with peace and iustice to enriche their subiects, and therby procure them selves glorie, than by murderynge of innocentes, rautshyng of honest wīues and maidens, burning, spo- lyng and destruction of countreys (which are the effec- tes of warre) to make thein selves conquerours of that they can not long enslave. Foꝛ surelye, moze pꝛeise shall that pynce deserue, that leaueth bys realme quiete and welthe vnto his successoure, than he that foꝛ the con- quest of other countreys empouerisheth and disturberh bys owne.

And

The Preface

And because this lytle woꝝke declarēth bothe these
extremities, aswell what a number of beautifull citiees
haue been edified, and what great countreies haue been
enriched by peace and conoord, as also how many good
ly thynges and wonderful regions haue been destroyed
by strife and warre: Therefore would I wythe all
noble men to reade it, to the ende they may hereof take
occasion so honourably to spende their life tyme, that
after their death, they maye thynke in fame for ever.

And knowyng your lordshipp for your excellentē fea-
tes of chivalrie, bothe by sea and lande, to be suche a
one as is hable to iudge, whether mine opynion be good
or not, like as your wonderfull knowlage in ciuile or-
ders hath made you worthy to be no lesse esteemed ex-
cellent in counsaile, than as you haue ben tried a most
valtaunte capytayne in the warres I thereseze coulde
finde none, to whom I might so woorthily dedycate
my little trauatle as to you: Most humbly besee-
ching your lordshipp to accept it at my pooꝝe
handes, as the gifte of him that wisheth
you all health and honour. At Lon-
don the .xx. daye of Septem-
ber. 1549.

Your good Lordshippes humb-
le at commaundment,
V Vylliam Thomas.



The Table of this present Booke, by letter.

Abridgemente of
the estate of Italye,
from the begynnyng
vntyll the Romayne
empyre was vtterlye diuyled.
folio. 8

Abridgemente of the lyues of
the Romayne Bishoppes.
fol. 41

Abridgement of the Venetian
histories from the edification
of the cite to thys daye.

85
Academye in Florence 139

Adoaldus 18

Adrianus. 12

Agilulphus 18

Agostino Barbarico, 110

Agrippa 9

Alaricus king of Gothes. 15

Alba Siluius. 8

Alboinus 18

Alberto. 210

Aldobrandus. 20

Aldobrandino. 208

Alfonse kyng of Naples. 66

Alfons adopted heire to quene

Jehan. 131

Alfonse the seconde. 134

Alfonso. 212

Alexander Scuerus. 12

Amalasuntha 17

Amulius 9

Arcus Martius 10

Andrea Dandolo. 102

Andrea Contarini 104

Andrea Vendramino 109

Andrea Gritti. 111

Andrea Doria, 185, 186, 187.

Angelo Bartolico 98

Annates. 63

Antonio Veniero 105

Antonio Grimani 111

Antonio di Leua 200

Antonius Pius 12

Antonius Caracalla. 12

Antharis Flavius 18

Arches of tryumphe. 29

Archadius. 14

Arrigo Dandolo 96

Arno the riuer. 137

Artificers of Italye, 5

Arioldus. 18

Aristolphus 20

Arithpertus. 19, 20

Arcanius 8

Asprandus 20

Astate of Mantua 200

Astate of Ferrara 207

Astate of Placentia and Par-

ma. 212

Athalphus 16

Athis or Egiptus Siluius. 9

Attila 16, and 190

Auentinus 9

Augustus. 50

Auogadozi. 61

Aurelianus. 13

Azone 191

Azo the fyrst and seconde

208

Azo the. iii. 209

25.

B Agelardo. 117

Bartholomeo Gradeni-

co. 101

Beginnyng and successe

of the

The table

of the astate of Millaine.	
189.	
Belles.	91
Herengarius.	48
Bernabo.	191
Byschoppes palaice, with Bel- vedere.	40
Byschoppe of Rome besieged.	
113.	
Bizigus.	16
Boccatius.	127
Borso.	211.
Bouciuart.	177.
Bridges in Rome.	23
Bridges in Florence.	137
Buildepynges in Rome.	41
Buildepynges of Venice.	74
Buildepyng of Genoa.	163

C.

C esar.	fol. 50
Carus Caligula.	11
Cesar Fregoso.	188
Capt Siluius.	9
Cardinall hatres.	56
Cardynalles sacked and ba- ked.	62
Cardinall Sauli.	185
Carlo duca de Angio.	125
Carlo. ii.	126
Carlo. iii.	129
Carpentius.	9
Carus.	23
Castel sante Angelo.	41
Castell Nouo.	113
Caroccio.	122
Castel of Millaine.	289
Cercles.	31
Charles Martell.	45
Charles sunne taken ppysonce	
126.	
Charles the. v. emperour.	16.
Chilperike deposed.	45

Christo forso Moro.	168
Circuite of Itape.	1
Citce of Staples gotten by the Normaines.	120
Citce of Urbine.	214
Citta della.	159
Claudius.	11. 13
Colosses and Images.	34.
Comodus.	12
Commodities of Italy.	1
Common provision and Cha- ritable deedes in Venice.	82.
Common people.	149
Conrade.	124
Constantius.	14
Constantinus.	cedem
Consules.	10
Conduyctes of water in Rome	
27.	

Counsaile of Venice.	78
Corradino. 124. beheaded.	125.
Cortogoli.	184
Cosimo di Medici.	152
Couetousnesse.	134
Crueltee.	96. 98. 124. 125.
116. 208. 209.	
Customes in theyr lypynge in Venice.	83
Cyprius wonne.	109

D.

D apho.	fol. 18
Decius.	13.
Deodata.	89
Description of Italy.	1.
Description of Rome.	12
Description of Staples.	113.
Description of Florence.	137
Description of Millaine.	187.
Desyderius.	18. 10.
Didius Iulius.	12
Dignities and offyces in Venice.	77
	Diele.

The table.

Dioclesianus.	11
Diuidyng of the Empire.	15
Diuision.	141
Discorde.	131
Dominion of Venice.	76
Domenico Leone.	89
Domenico Menicaccio.	20.
Domenico Orscolo.	93
Domenico Fladenico.	eodem.
Domenico Contarini.	eod.
Domenico Siluio.	eod.
Domenico Michele.	94
Domenico Morosini.	45
Dominion and gouernaunce of Genoa.	161
Domitianus.	11.
Don Ferraudo Gonzaga.	
188. 206. 213.	
Donacion of Constantine.	
14. 43.	
Douchemens haulle in Venice	
111.	
Drogone.	116
Duke of Florence dominyon and reuerew.	139
Duke Cosmo.	159

E.

E dficacion of Rome.	9.
Edificacyon and successe of the citee of Florence	
140.	
Edifices in Florence.	137
Election of the Emperoure, whan and by whome it was ordained.	21
Electours of the empre.	50
Empire deuided.	15. 46
Empire chaunged.	48
Ende of the Romaine kynges.	10.
Ende of the Lumbardes reigne.	20.

Ende of the house of Roza maus in Sicilie.	121
Ende of the house of Suenta in the dominyon of Naples.	125.
Ende of the hous of Durazza	132.
Ende of the house of Arragon in Naples.	138
Emanuel emperoure.	96
Eneas.	8
Eneas Siluius.	eod.
Ercole.	221. 212.
Ezelino di Romano.	98.

F.

F acion of Italy.	fol. 2
Faunus.	8
Federico.	206. 215
Federike. 122. Kyng of Sicilie.	117. 135
Feedyng in Italy.	2.
Ferdinando.	133.
Ferdinando kyng of Spayne	136.
Ferrandino.	135
Fertilitye of Naples.	113
Fier breakyng out of the earth	11.
Florence destroyed and reedy- fyed.	140
Florentines customes.	138.
Florentynes common wealth constituted.	141
Francesco Maria.	215
Francesco.	204. 206.
Francesco Donato.	112
Francis Petrarcha.	60. 127
Francis dandolo.	108
Francis Foscaro.	106
Francis Forza.	181. 196
108.	
Fresco.	209.
2	Galba

The table.

G alba Sergius.	17
Galeazzo di Montefeltro.	214
Galeazzo	181, 191
193, 197.	
Galerius	14
Galenus.	13
Gormaldus	19
Gasparodi Uicomercato.	
181	
Gates of Rome,	24
Genfericus	16
Genfualdus	19
Gentlemen of Italye.	3
Giofrancesco.	205
Giangaleazo	193
Giovanni.	89, 91
Giovanni Dandolo	99
Giovanna prima.	127
Giovanna. ii.	130
Giovanni Coprigiani	190
Giovanni	192, 197
Giovanni Maria	194
Giustiniano	90
Giudice di ginarcha	169
Godfrey.	117
Gonzaga.	203
Gordianus	13
Gothes	15
Grangers and arsenales	36
Gratianus.	14
Grimoaldus.	19
Gueltes and gybelynes faction	141
Euglielmo Ferrabach	116
Euglielmo.	119, 120, 121.
123.	
Guido.	204
Guido conte di Urbino.	
214.	
Guido Balde.	215, 216.
Gundebalde.	16
Gundibertus	19

H ad of Tyber.	23
Helius Pertinax	12
Henrico imperatoze.	121.
Hylles in Rome	25
Hyll Testacchio	35
Hippodromus.	36
Hystorpe of Naples.	214
Honorius	14
Hospitales in Venyce.	82
Hospptalles in florence.	138
Hotte baynes.	113
Hugo Conte de arlt.	48
Hunes.	fol. 15
Hunfredo.	117
Husbandmen of Italye.	fol. 5.

I.

I acopo Contarini.	99
James Ciopolo.	97
Iano kynge of Cypus.	
177.	
Iano fregoso.	184
Ianus	8
Images put out of churches.	
44. 46.	
Ingratitude of people.	175
John Acton.	62
John Sozanzo	100
John Gradenco	103
John Delfino	codein
John Mocenigo	109
John Sharpe	149, 210.
Ioninianus.	14
Italys customes and nature	folio. 3.
Jubilye	58, 60.
Julius Cesar fyrst emperoure	
10.	
Juliano di Medici.	215
Julius Philippus.	13
Julianus	

The table.

Julianus apostata.	14
Junipertus,	20

K.

K Index of marble.	37
Kynges of Naples in-	
stituted kynges of Je-	
rusalem.	112
Kyng alfonse taken prysoner.	
132.	

L.

L Lewes of Uenpce.	81, 88
Ladislau.	103
Laurence di Medici.	155
115	
Latinus.	8
Latinus Siluius.	8
Laimpertus.	10
Lewes the. 12. kyng of fraunce	
135.	
Leather copned for money.	110
Libertee of straungers in Ne-	
nyce.	85.
Lidralitie	107
Lionello.	210
Lodouico Moro.	198
Lorenzo Tiepolo.	99
Lorenzo Celso.	101
Lucchino.	192
Lucius Tarquinius.	10
Luigi gonzaga.	1032
Luigi.	104, 205
Luitprandus.	20
Lumbarde.	fol. 15

M.

M Manfred.	56, 124.
Marcrinus	12.
Marcello.	88

Marino Morosini.	97
Marino giorgio.	100
Marino falerio.	102
Marco Cornario.	103
Marco Barbarico.	110
Marpe.	129

Marcus aurelius antonius.
13.

Martino Corrigiani	190
Matilda.	52, 101
Mattea magno.	161
Maurio.	89
Maximus.	12
Maximianus.	16
Merchandise of Italye.	2
Merchantes of Italy.	4
Michele Morosini.	105
Michele Steno.	196
Myllayne situate	188
Mylapnes name.	103
Morza.	208
Morbus gallicus.	135
Murder.	129
Mutio, father to Frauncys	
Sforza.	

N.

N Npoleone.	190
Narces.	17
Naimachie	29
Nero	11
Nerna.	11
Nicene counsaile	43
Nicolo Trono.	108
Nicolo marcello	109
Nico.	210, 211
Nobilitie suppressed	149
Nunitor	9
Numa Pompilius.	10

Obes

The table.

O belished.	fo. 33	Pietro Lando.	172
O belerio.	90.	Pietro Alnigi.	213.
O bictts flisco.	182	Picus.	8
O bizione.	209	P inamonte.	202
O ctavianus Augustus.	10	Plague of pestilence.	60
O do.	215	P leasures of Italie.	folio, 2
O doacrus.	16	P linius death.	113
O delaffo Falero.	94	P ollicie.	65, 164.
O fo.	88, 91	P orches in Rome.	31.
O fo Baduaro.	92	P ooze people.	82
O fo Ofcolo.	93	P opson that worketh not tyll	
O io Malipiero.	96	a tyme.	185
O riginal of Mantua.	201	P ractise of a prelate.	153
O riginal and successe of the		P resent state of Rome.	37
citce of Ferrara	208.	P riestes marriage.	52
O tho the fyrr.	115	P rince Edward of Englande	
O tho the. ii.	eadem.		126.
O tho Lucins.	11	P rysoners in Venice.	81
O ttone Ofcolo.	93	P robus.	13
O ttone.	190	P roca.	9.
O ttone Visconti.	eadem.	P ractours and treasure of	

P.

P olo Lucio.	87
P asserino.	202.
P asquale Malipiero.	
108.	
P atriarche Vitellesco.	132.
P artharus.	20
P eter kyng of Aragon.	126
P eter Fregoso.	180
P hilippo Coprig.	190.
P hilippo Marta.	194. def=
cruid.	195
P ietro Erdenico.	91, 99.
P ietro Candiano.	92
P ietro Tribuno.	eadem.
P ietro Baduaro.	92
P ietro Ofcolo.	eadem. 93
P ietro Barbolano.	93
P ietro Polano.	95
P ietro ziani.	97
P ietro Mocenigo.	109

Q.

Q ueene Johans hous=	
band strangled.	127
Queene Johan han=	
ged.	129

R.

R achis oz Lachis.	20
R afael Adorno.	180.
R aimpertas.	20
R aynoldes comming to Ma=	
ples.	132.
R aulfe Duke of Burgoyne.	
48.	
R ebellion on Sicile.	125.
R ealm of Naples.	6.
R enulus.	9

R esorte

The table.

Reforte of straungers into Ita-	
tala.	1
Reuenew of Venice.	76.
Richard kyng of Englande.	
163.	
Rinaldo.	109.
Rinert zeno.	98
Riuier of Tyber.	21.
Robert.	127
Roberto Guiscardo created	
Duke.	117
Rodoaldus.	19
Roger. 119. intypled kyng of	
Sicily.	119
Rome destroyed, with tymes.	17.
Rome gotten.	130
Romualdus.	19.
Romulus.	9.
Romulus, firste kyng of Ro-	
maynes.	9.
Rotharius.	18.

S.

S Sancte Peters church.	
40.	
Sainge of Fuluius. eod.	
Saralines compng into	
Italye firste.	115.
Saturus.	8
Sebastian zant.	95
Sepulchrum Bacchi.	36
Seruius Tullius.	10
Seuerus.	12
Sicily conquered by the Mo-	
maynes.	118.
Siluius Posthumus.	8.
Site of Italy.	fol. 1
Site of Venice.	73
Sordello.	202
Sophia.	17
Suppmittee of the Church.	
44.	
Spytynge And popsonynge of	

Romayne by shoppes.	78
Slaughter of frenchmen.	119
States of Italy.	6
State of Genoa.	160

T.

T Titus.	13
Taneredi the nozinain	
116.	
Tancress.	113
Tarquinius Priscus.	10.
Tecia.	17.
Temperature of Italy.	fol. 1
Temperature of Naples.	113
Temple in Rome.	31
Testament broken.	195
Theatres.	30
Thermes in Rome.	28
Theodolinda.	18
Theodoricus.	16
Theodotius.	14. 16
Thomas Beckette.	57.
Thomas Hocenic.	106
Title of the kyngedome of Je-	
rusalem.	126
Title of the seconde lyne of the	
house of Angio.	128
Titus.	11
Tullus Hostilius.	10
Turke conquered in Italye.	
134.	
Trade and customes of Ge-	
noa.	161
Traianus.	11
Treasure founde vnder the	
grounde.	118
Tribuno Meimio.	93
Tyberinus.	9
Tyberius.	11
Tyrannic.	199

T. Walla

The table.

<p>V</p>	<p>Ala. 43</p> <p>Valentino Borgia. 215</p> <p>Valentinianus. 14</p> <p>Valens. 14</p> <p>Valerianus 13</p> <p>Valdales. 85</p> <p>Marius Hellogabalus. 11</p> <p>Venetian estate. 73</p> <p>Vespasianus 11</p> <p>Waye into the holy land. 53</p> <p>Wyale Candiano. 93</p>	<p>Witale falero. 94</p> <p>Witale michael. eodem. 95</p> <p>Witius gallas. 113</p> <p>Wisconti 190</p> <p>Witellius. 11</p> <p>Willes of Rome. 23</p> <p>Warres of Venice. 81</p> <p>Wild beastes in florence. 138</p> <p>Wines of florence 139</p> <p>Wines of mollepyne. 188</p> <p>Women of Italye. fol. 6</p> <p>Wonder. 263</p>
-----------------	--	---

Thus endeth the table of this
present Booke sette out
by Letter.

The description

saye cattayle, and so many springs, fountaines, lakes, ryuers, and hatuens, that it is an open lappe to receyue the trade of all countreys: and as it were to offer al men helpe it semeth willingly to put it selfe into the sea.

The cytee of
Italpe.

At lyeth betwene the fyrte houre and the fyrste of the wynter in maner halfe way betwene the Equinocciall and the Pole: betwene (I saye) the heate of the Sonne and the colde of the No:the. For the citee of Bononia, (where the great resort of scholers from all nations is wonte to be) standeth almost in the herte of Italpe, and hath his eleuacion. 44. degrees: so that denyngs the quarter from the Equinocciall to the Septemtrion into 90. according to the rule of Cosmographie, and taking the one halfe therof, which is. 45. the difference is lytle so proue that Italie is in the middelt betwene the extremes of hote and colde. And seing than, that temperas sure is it that most of all other comforteth, nourisheth and mainteineth nature, it must nedes folow, that this being one of the most indifferent regions, must be very pleasaunt delicate and abundant.

This lptell discourse I haue made to the intente the wisse may the better vnderstand the cause of those thinges, that to my purpose I must hereafter treat vpon.

The commodyties of

Italpe.

If I shoulde goe about to discrysue vnto you perticulerly howe commodious the countrey is, aswel to the traffique of them that lyue by marchaundyse, as to the good lyfe of them that loue their rest, it shoulde be
enough

enough alone to occupie an whole volume, but because
I woulde seeme no more tediousse in this, than I coule
to doe in all the rest, I saye:

¶ First for merchaundise, Italle as an hert or knotte of
these partes on our halfe of the world, is the principall Merchaun-
dise.
place of recourse of all nations that occupie any thinge
of importaunce farre from home. For lyke as with vs
in England the most merchauntes of the realme resort
to London, to better their owne wares, and to bye suche
other as make for their purposes, even so they of France
of Spaine, of Germanie, and of all other westerlye pla-
ces, that coueyt the merchandise of Soria, Aegypt, Cy-
prus, Candia, Constantinople, and those other easterly
partes, as felwelles, dregges, spices, perfumes, sylkes,
cotten, suger, malmesetis, and other lyke: resorte mooste
commonly into Italye with their woulles, clothes, lyn-
nen, lecher, metalles, and suche other, to Genoa, My-
laine, Venice, Ancona, Missena, Naples, or to some
of those places where as traffique is bled: and there
metyng with Jewes, Turkes, Greekes, Moores, and
other easterlye merchauntes, sellynge the one they by
the other.

¶ Than for pleasure, he that hath money to paye for Pleasure.
that he taketh, shall haue in Italye what he can reso-
nablye desyre, fene breadde, synguler good wines both
stronge and small, fleshe of all sortes bothe wilde and
tame, foule of all kindes bothe of water and land, fishe
aswell of the sea as of the freshe water, but especyally
for the plentie of delycate frutes, as would make a man
leauie fleshe, foule and fishe to eate them: namelye in
the sommer. I meane the Pelons, Pepons, Pomegra-
nettes

The discription

nettes, Oranges, Lyminans, Citrös, and swete grapes: besides theyr pygges, apples, pearres, peaches, plomes, and olives, with a thousande other of that sorte.

And it is not to be meruailed at, thonghe (as the same goeth) the Italian be a small eater of fleshe.

For though here before I haue commended the temperance of Italy to be comparable with any other countrey: yet must you vnderstand, that in sommer the sonne is somewhat feruente, and in tyme of that heate, the lyghtnesse of those swete freshe frutes is better to be dygested, than the heauynesse of fleshe or fysh, whiche woulde not there be so lyghlye dygested. As I my selfe haue proued, that before tyme could in maner broke no frute; and yet after I had bene a whyle in Italie. I fell so in loue withall, that as long as I was there, I desired no meate moze, because me thought nothing moze wholesome, speciallye in sommer. And all be it, the heate be (as I haue sayde) somewhat feruent, yet it exceedeth not so muche as the hottest, as the colde wynter is temperate at the coldest. For at the most the colde there endureth not, lix. monethes of the xii. and some yeaeres in maner you shal feele no wynter at all.

Resorte of
strangers in
to Italy

The rehersted commodities, with infinite other, to longe here to create of, together with the lounge company of the Italpans (who in maner make moze of strangers than of theyr owne) dooe cause the infinite resorte of all nations that continually is sene there.

And I thinke verily, that in one region of all the world agayne, are not halfe so many strangers as in Italye: speciallye of gentlemen, whose resorte thither is pryncipally vnder pretence of studie.

For there are dyuerse
famous

famous eiteers, that be pꝛiueleged with great lyberties
foꝛ all scholars that come: as Padoa, Bononia, Pavia,
Ferrara, Pisa, and others: in euerye one of the whyche,
are excellent learned men, wꝛaged foꝛ the readyng of
Philosophye, of the ciuile lawes, and of all the lyberall
sciences. Besides excellent maisters of musicke to singe
and playe on all maner of instrumentes, and the beste
maisters of fence at all weapons that can be founde.

So that all kindes of vertue maye there be learned: and
therfoze are those places accordingly furnished, not of
suche students alone, as most commonly are broughte
vp in our vniuersities (meane mens chylde set to schole
in hope to lyue vpon byzed learninge) but foꝛ the moze
parte of noble mens sonnes, and of the best gentilmen,
that studie moze foꝛ knowlage and pleasure, than foꝛ
curiosities oꝛ laker. Foꝛ lightlye there passeth no thozs-
side without renninge at the tilte, tourneyng, fighting
at the barckers, and other lyke feates of armes, handled
and furnished after the beste sozte: the greatest doores
wherof are scholars.

This last winter lyng in Padoa, with diligente ser-
che I learned, that the noubꝛ of scholars there was
little lesse than fiftene hundꝛ, wherof I dare saye, a
thousand at the lest were gentilmen.

Of the Italian customes and nature.

The inheritance of landes in Itallie goth by Cas-
uell kynde, that is to witte, one by other as good
parte as an other. So that yf a Conte, (whyche
A, III. is as

The discription

is as muche to saye as an Earle (haue .xx. sonnes, euery one of theim is called Conte, and the youngeste haith as good parte in his fathers landes and goodes, as the eldest: vnlesse it be the estates of pynces, as of Mantua, Ferrara, Urbino, and suche others, which theldesse euer moze enjoyeth. And by this meane it is come to passe, that in p[ro]cesse of time with chaunge from welth to pouertee, there be diuers Eyles and Marqueses with out lande or goodes, retaining neuerthelesse the glory of that name to them and theirs for euer.

Gentlemen.

What to speake of the gentylmen, that haue whereof woozshypfully to lyue (whyche for the mooste parts doe commonly p[ro]fesse armes (me seemeth that none other nacion is lyke them in maiestie.

As p[er] this, to reherse the conformitie of speeche that is amongest theim selues (consyderyng what a number of dyuersities they haue in their tounge) it is a meruaile, that in maner all gentylmen do speake the courtisane. For notwithstanding that betwene the Florentine and Venetian is great diuersitie in speeche, as with vs betwene a Londoner and a Yorkeshyreman, and likewise betwene the Spanysh and the Romayne, the Napolitane and the Genouese: yet by the tounge you shall not lyghtlye dyscerne of what parte of the countrey any gentylman is, because that beyng Chyldren they are broughte vp in the courtisane onely. And generally (a fewe citieles excepted) in maners and condicions they are no lesse agreeable than in their speache, so honourable, so courtlye, so p[ro]udente, and so graue withall, that it shoulde seeme eche one of them to haue had a p[ri]ncetpe byngyng vp. To his superiour obedience, to his equall
humble

humble, and to his inferiour gentle and courteysle, amiable to a straunger, and despyous wth curiesp to winne his loue.

¶ I graunte, that in the expense oz loue of hys money to a straunger he is ware, and woull be at no moze cost than he is sure either to saue by, oz to haue thanke for, wherein I rather can commend hym than otherwyse. But this is out of doubt, a straunger cannot be better enterteyned, noz moze honourably entreated than amongst the Italians.

¶ They are berpe modest in their apparel, fine in trimmyng of their houses, and excedyng nere at their table. But aboue all other they are sober of speche, enemies of yll report, and so tender ouer their owne good name (whyche they call their honours) that whosoener speakeh euill of one of theim, shall dye for it, yf the partye schlaundered may know it, and finde tyme and place to doe it. Whereof there is a vns growen amongst them, that few gentilmen goe abroade vnarmed. And though some in this case doe discommende theym, yet myne opinion dooeth rather allowe than blame them. For the feare of suche daungers maketh men so ware of theyr tounge, that a man may goe xx. yeares throughe Italie withoute findyng repzoche oz villanie, vnlesse he prouoke it hym selfe.

¶ And if one gentilman happen to defame another, many times the defamed maketh his defiance by a wyrtze called Cartello, and openly chalengerth the defamer to fight in campe, so that there are seen sometime worthy ryualles betwene them.

¶ And it is true, that many yeares agoe, such contentions hath

The discription

on hath growen amongst them, that almoste the whole nation hath been diuided into parttakynge, as Guelphi and Ghibellini: impertall and frenche, with other like: whiche hath bene occasion of much manslaughter, and consequentlve of theyr forsayde continuall vse in wearyng of armure. But at this daye those open contentions are wonderfullve abated, whether it procede of weyrtinnesse or of wysedome I cannot tell.

¶ Finally in one thing I can singlerly commend them, that they woul not lightly meddle with other mennes matters, and that whan they heare ill repozte, they doe theyr best to couer the slander, saying that no man liueth without faulte: or with some other suche reason. But like as I could reckon in the Italians commendacion many thinges moze than are here reherfed, euen so on the other syde if I were dysposed to speake of vice, I might happen to fynde a number as ill as in anye other men: whyche are better vntouched than spoken of. For wheras temperance, modestye, and other ciuile vertues excell in the number of the Italian nobilitie, moze than in the nobilytee of anye other nation that I knowe: so vndoubteoly the fleshely appetite with vnnatural heate and other thinges in theym that be vicious, dooe passe all the termes of reason or honestye.

¶ And yet it is not to be forgotten, that these gentilmen generallve professethre thynges: the fyrste is armes, to mainteigne withall his honour, the seconde is loue, to shewe him selfe gentil and not cruel of nature: and the thyrde is learning, to be habile to know, to vnderstande, and to brier his opynion in matters of weight.

¶ The pꝛincipall merchantes are for the most part gentilmen.

tilmen . For whan there be of one house. iiii . or . liii .
 bretherne: lyghly one or two of theim dispose them sel-
 fes to merchaundyse . And if they happen not to deuide
 theyr fathers patrimony and substaunce (as manye ty-
 mes they dooe not) than doe the Merchauntes trauayle
 aswell for the wealth of theyr bretherne as theyr owne:
 for all renneth in common, be it gayne or losse . In
 dedde theyr outwarde professyon agreeth not wyth the
 gentylmen befoze reherfed. For they carpe nother wea-
 pon nor armure, but doe what they can to liue in peace:
 not onely serching the trades of al countreys with their
 merchaundise, but also occupying at home the most sub-
 stancyall fermes and possessyons by theyr factours, as
 hereafter moze plainly it foloweth . And because these
 merchauntes haue nothing the lesse reputacion of nobi-
 ltee, for theyr trade of merchaundise, therfoze it folow-
 eth that there be suche numbers of wealthy men in that
 countrey, as the like is not to be found any other where.
 For in dyuers cyties of Italye it is no meruaile to see.
 xx. persones in a Citee woozthe. 100000 . crownes a
 peece and upwardes.

As for the artificers I haue nothyng to saye; sayyng Artificers.
 that for the most part thei are the finest wozkemen and
 best inuentours of all other, and are so wel payed for it,
 that many of theim lyue as well as they that haue stan-
 dyng lyuinges; and grow sometimes vnto great wealth
 and richesse, but not lightly in two or thre descentes vnto
 to any reputacyon of nobyltee.

The housbandmen are of all handes oppressed. For Husbandmen
 in the countrey there dwelleth no man of substaunce.
 All the gentylmen and other that are wealthy, dwell in

The description

the walled cyties and towne, leauynge the villayges, feldes and pastures in theyr tenauntes handes, not to ferme at certaine rent as we dooe in Englande, but to the halfe, or to the thyrde of all grayne and fruyte as the grounde is fertile or barayne. And the pooze tenant is bound to tyll, sow and housbande the grounde at hys owne cosse and charge. So that the Landlozds parte cometh clere wythout dysbursyng of a peny.

And at the harvest and vintaige the Landlozde sendeth a man of his for his parte, who fyrste taketh hys choyse of the grayne, wyne, oyle, and fruyte, and than leaueth the reste to the tenaunte as hys parte aryseth to. And manye tymes yf the landelozde be cruell, whan he cannot sell hys thynges at hys owne pryce, than forceth he his tenaunt to vtter it for hym, and to pay for it, not as he can sell it, but as the landelozde woull. By reason wherof the pooze man is brought so low, that he is not hable sometyme to fynde bzeade of Zorgo (a very byle grayne) to feede hys pooze chyldzen wythal.

¶ And because I haue here named Zorgo, me thinketh it meete to tell, that in Italie groweth manye sortes of graine, as this Zorgo, Meglio, Segala, and xx. suche other, wherofe cannot be expessed by any Englyshe names, because in Englande there is no kynde of suche grayne. All whych serue to make course bzeade for the pooze people, and also for the staple of vytayles in stronge holdes. For the bzeade made therof (specially of Meglio) woull endure a number of yeres vn-corrupted. And in lyke maner they haue certaine kindes of other graine, that in generall are called Legumi (as we were wonte to call peasen, lenten stuffe) wherof
of they

of they vse all the yere longe to make theyr potages.

¶ Finally in the byllages are many faire houses made onely for the owners pastetime against the heate of the sommer. For than dooe they habandon the citees and goe vnto those houses for a moneth two or three, where vnder the freshe herbes, hedges and bootwes, amongst the delicate fruites they triumph in as much pleasure as maye be imagined. And for the most part eche man hath his make; with some instrumentes of musicke, and suche other thynges as serue for hys recreacyon. And yf euer the tenaunt haue good daye, than lycketh he his lippes of hys maysters leauynge.

Women.

¶ As for the women,

Some be wonders gale,

And some goe as they maye.

Some at libertee dooe swymme a flote,

And some woulde faine but they cannot.

Some be meerte, I wote wel why,

And some begyle the housbande, with finger in the eye.

Some be maryed agaynst theyr will,

And therfore some abyde Paydens Wyll,

In effect they are women all,

Euer haue been and euer shall.

¶ But in good earnest the gentill women generally, for gorgeouse atyre, apparayle and Jewelles, excede (I thynke) all other women of oure knowen worlde. I meane as well the courtesanes as the maryed women.

For in some places of Italye, speciallie where churches men doe reigne, you shall fynde of that sorte of women in riche apparalle, in furniture of household, in seruice, in horse and hackeney, and in all thinges that apper-

The discription

reynne to a belycate Lady, so well furnysshed, that to see one of theim vnknowynglye, she should seeme rather of the qualitee of a pryncesse, than of a common woman. But becanse I haue to speake hereafter in perticuler, I woull forbear to treate anye further of theym in thys place.

Of the states of Italse.

The greatest Prince of dominion there at thys presente is Charles the.v. Emperoure of Almaneyne, who for his parte hath the Realme of Naples and the Duchte of Appulaine: whyche realme is diuided into .8. regyons, and to the entente the readers maye the better be satisfied, I haue set forth as well the auncient names of those regions, as the present.

The Realme of Naples.

The present names,

The auncient,

(Campagnia di Roma)

Parte of) Maremma,

) Latium,

Terra di lauoro

Campania.

Principato.

Picentini.

Basilicata,

Lucania.

Calabria)

(Brutii.

(Grecia magna,

Salentini,

Calabria antiqua.

terra d'otrantio

Iapigia,

Mesapia,

Apulia Peucetia.

Puglia.

Aetholia,

Apulia Daunia,

The

The present names.

Abruzzo,

Valle Beneuentana.

The auncient.

Frentani,
Pelligni.
Marrucini.
Vestini.
Pecutii.
Marsi.
Samnites.

As for that part of the Duchie of Applaine that the emperour hath, it lieth in Lumbardie aunciently called Gallia Cisalpina, for the most parte on that syde of the riuer Pó, that was called Transpadana,

The bishop of Rome hath for his parte, the cytee of Rome, wth these countreys solowynge.

The present names.

The auncient.

(Campagnia.)

Parte of (Maremma.)

Parte of Tuscanie.

The Duchie of Spoleti.

Marca D' Ancona,

Romagnia.

Latium,

Hetruria.

Vmbria,

Piceni,

Flaminia,

Emilia,

The Citee of Bononia.

The Venetians for theyr parte haue the Citee of Venice wth those towne in and about theire marish called la Contrada di venetia, la Marca Triuigiana, and a great part of Lumbardy, aunciently called Gallia Cisalpina on the same side of the Pó, that was called Trans-

The description

padana, And parte of the countrey Istria.

The common wealths of Genoa, haue the countrey about thein nowe called, Il Genouesato and auntygentlye Liguria.

Tuscane, auncientlye called, Hetruria, is deuided into diuers dominions, wherof a small parte the byshop of Rome hath, but the greatest is the Duke of Florence, who hath. vii. citees vnder him: And than there be two common wealths, Siena and Lucca, whose territories are not greate.

The Duke of Ferrare hath parts of Romagnia, and parte of Lombardie.

The Duke of Mantua is all in Lombardie.

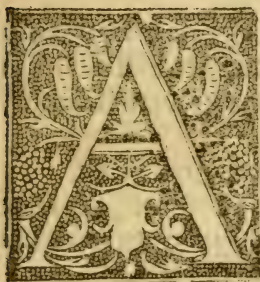
And the Duke of Urbine is betweene Marca d'Ancona and Tuscane, whose people are called of Plinie Metaurensi.

The Citees of Parma and Placentia in Lombardy haue bene of late transposed from the churche vnto the estate of a Duchye, but nowe it is deuoyded agayne: as hereafter you shal perceiue.

¶ Now here is to be noted, that every perticuler prince and common wealth of Italye, with in hys owne dominion, accompteth him selfe absolute lord and kyng, and lyueth vpon the customes, taxes and tallatges that he raiseth of hys subiectes. For lightlye they haue litrell or no landes at all of theyr owne. And generallye they pceded all together by the ciuile lawes, and are so diligent in the administration of iustice, spectallye against murderers and theues, that I thinke no countrey more quiete than it: the Realme of Naples, and some part of the Romaine territory excepted, where many times

nye tymes happeneth muche robbing by the waies,

An abbydgemente of the state of Italie,
from the beginnynge vntill the Romaine
Empire was vicerly decided.



After the generall floudde re-
mayned no moe but Noe, hys
iii. Sonnes and theyr wyfes, be-
twene whom it shoulde seme the
whole worlde was deuided. Sem
toke the East parte, Cham, the
south, and Iafet the weast. Some
wyte that Iafet was the same Ias-
nus that fyrst reigned in Italie, and some that Janus
was Iafettes Sonne. But whether so it be, this Janus
was euer taken for father of the gods, and was peynted
with two faces, either because he was father of two na-
cions, the Greekes and Italians, or els because the mo-
neth of Ianuary (whiche hath two respectes, one to the
beginnynge, and an other to the ende of the yeaere) toke
name of hym. While this Ianus reigned in Italie,
Saturne beyng chased out of the realme of Candia by
his soonne Iupiter, came in a maner naked vnto hym,
and Janus not onely receiued hym: But also gaue hym
the halfe of his dominion. For memoire wherof either
of theim builded a Cytee to hys owne name, that is to
wete Ianicula and Saturnia. From Janus vnto Nu-
mitor

Abbrigement of the

mitor were. xxi. kynges of the Latines, whose names, with the yeres of theyr regnes, hereafter folow.

1 Ianus.

2 Saturnus.

3 Picus, beyng a great talker, was therfore fegned of the poetes to be conuerted into a pie.

4 Faunus, was after worshypped for a God of the woodes.

5 Latinus chaunged the name of his people from Laurentini to Latini, and gaue hys daughter Lauinia to Eneas the Troyane, promysed before vnto Turnus, sonne of kyng Daunus.

6 These. v. kynges reigned about. 200. yeres.

Eneas maryed the daughter of Latinus, and after hys death, reigned. iiii. yeres, and buylded the cytee Lauinia.

7 Ascanius, sonne of Eneas and of Creusa, king priamus daughter, reigned. 38. yeares, and buylded Alba longa, to the whych he brought his fathers idoles called the gods Penates, but they of them selves tourned, iiii. tymes backe agayne to Lauinia.

8 Siluius Posthumus second son of Eneas, and begotten on Lauinia, reigned. xxix. yeares. Of whom all the latine kynges afterwarde surname them selves Siluii: & after some authours he was father to Brutus, that first named this Realme Britayne, and that slewe his owne father by mischaunce, which thyng Polidorus Virgilius doeth not graunt.

9 Eneas Siluius reigned. 31. yeares.

10 Latinus Siluius reigned. 50. yeres.

11 Alba Siluius, reigned. 39. yeres, and buylded Alba, whych

whiche he made hys royall Citie : but after it was destroyed by Tullus Hostilius . Of that citie descended those that to this day are called Albanesi, though they of their owne oꝝyginal holde diuers opinions.

Athis oꝝ Egypcus Silulius, reigned. 24. yeres. 12

Capit Silulius reigned. 28. yeres , and builded the citie of Capua. 13

Carpentus reigned. 13. yeres. 14

Tyberinus reigned. 9. yeres, of whom the riuer that renneth through Rome was first named tyber: by reason he was drowned in the same: foꝝ befoꝝe it was called Albula. 15

Agrippa reigned. 40. yeres. 16

Nemulus reigned 19. yeres, and was slaine with a thunderbolte. 17

Auentinus, reigned. 38. yeares , and was slayne in battaile on the hill Auentine, and buried there: wherof that hill toke his name, though Varro sayeth that the name proceeded of the sight of certayne birdes. 18

Proca reigned 23. yeres, and ordeined by testament, that of his two sonnes the one should haue his realme, and the other his treasure, so that the eldest toke the treasure, and the yongest the dominion. 19

Amulius reigned. 24. yeres, and chased his elder brother Numitor out of his realme, because he had learned by diuination, that one of his brothers descende should expel him out of his estate . Wherefoꝝe he slewe hys nephew Sergistus, & put his neece Rhea into a religion of virgines called Vestales, where at the end of. vii. yere she was gotten with childe by an vnknownen man, and brought foꝝth at one burden two sonnes Romulus 20

and Remus with the which Amulius was so offended that he not onely caused the mother to be buried quicke accordyng to the lawe, but also commaunded the two children to be throwe into Tyber, so that they were left on the banke, and there fed by a she woulfe (as the poetes feigne) but the trouth of the hyftorie is, that they were founde by a shepherde, whose wife (for hir beauty and licencious liuinge) was called Lupa, and so taken and nourished til they grew vnto suche yeres, that they reuenged thein selves, slew Amulius, and made theyr graundefather Numitor kynge.

- 21 Numitor reigned not fully one yere til Romulus and Remus together found the meane to slea him, and than builded the citee of Rome. Befoze whyche tyme these Latine kynges had reigned in all about. 620. yeres.

The edyficacyon of rome.

4450

After the Cite was buylded, the two byetherne so contended for genyng the name, and for the dominion, that Remus was slayne.

The fyrste kynge of the Romaynes.

- I Romulus than reigned, 38. yeres, and created. 100. senatours for the rule of the common wealth. And within 4. yeres after the edification of the citee, because the inhabytauntes (beyng men assembled of dyuers nations) had no women to mainteine succession, he deuised sacrifices and plates, to the whyche the Sabines aswel men as women resozted. So that by order of Romulus all the Sabine maydens, that came to the feast, were taken and maryed amonge the Romaynes. Therby the Sabines made warre against Romulus and procured diuers other of theyr neighbours to dooe the lyke, but the Romaine preuailed againste them all. Finally as he perused his souldiers on a day in a great tempest

tempest, he was stricken wth a thunderbolte, and because he could neuer more be hearde of, the Romaynes imagined, he was ascended to heauen, and therfore worshipped hym as a God.

Numa Pompilius reigned. 41. yeres, and kepte the c^{itie} in peace, and because the people thozoughe they passed continual warres were become in maner wilde, he therfore introduced religion and gods among them, and so bzonght theym to ciuilltyce.

Tullus Hostilius reigned. 33. yeres, and conquered the c^{itie} of Alba, whych he rased to the earth, and at laste³ bothe he and his house were burned wth thunder.

Ancus Martius reigned. xliiii. yeaeres, and subdued the Latines, wth dyuers other people about Rome. 4

Tarquinius Priscus reigned. 37. yeaeres, he doubled the number of senatours, and after he had vāquished⁵ the Sabines, entred triumphantly into Rome, but at last he was slayne by the sonnes of Ancus Martius.

Seruius Tullius reigned. 34. yeres, he ordeined first⁶ the payment of taxes, and thereby founde that he had at that tyme in Rome fourescore and foure thousand persons, and was slayne at last by the procurement of hys sonne in law Tarquine the proude.

Lucius Tarquinius reigned. 35. yeaeres, he was the⁷ fyrst that inuented prisons and courmentes, and by reason of the odious acte that his sonne didde in enforzng the chast Lucretia, wyfe of Collatinus (who therfore slew hys selfe) he and all hys were exiled oute of Rome, and the astate chaunged from kynges to consules, after^{The ende of the Romaine kings.} that the kynges had reigned aboue. 230. yeres.

Then byd the Romans ordeine two Consules rema^{Consules.}

Abbrigement of the

ueable from yere to yere. The fyrst were Lucius Iulius Brutus, & Lucius Tarquinius Collatinus, husband to the dead Lucretia: vnder whych order of Consules (a few chaunges excepted) the Romaynes maine reigned theyr common wealth, well nere. 500. yeares: and so pzenailed in conquestes ouer the world, that none other monarchie is to be compared vnto theyrs: nor almost so many other woorthy men to be read of in al the histories wyrtten, as were founde in that Citee for the tyme: as he that readeth Liue shall see. But because the onely wyrtting of their names wold occupie a greater part of my booke than should be requisite to my purpose, I shall beseeche all gentill readers to be contented that I referre theim ouer vnto the Romaine histories, whych are common to the whole worlde.

¶ Finally, aboute. 700. yeares after the edifficacyon of Rome, and. 47. befoze the comyng of Chyriste, the libertee of the Romaine common wealth ceased, by reason that Iulius Caesar, after the death of Pompeius, hauyng quieted the cyuile contencions, tooke on hym by force the whole Emppye, and had at hys commaundement the greatest part of all the worlde. From whome vnto the tyme of Constantine the fyrste, there reigned, 38. Emperours, as by theyr names hereafter it appeareth, and they all kepte theyr pzinypall seate in Rome, as the head citee of theyr monarchie.

- 1 Iulius Caesar, reigned in all not full ye. v. yeares, for Brutus & Cassius, with diuers other senatours conspired against him, and slew him in the senate house.
- 2 Octauianus Augustus reigned. 56. yeares, and 6. monethes, but the first. xii. yeres he had Marcus Antonius

The firste
Emperoure.

nus & Lepidus as parteners of the empire, till by force, with consente of the senate, he subdued them bothe: and because he was happie in his enterprises, the senators surnamed him Augustus. In the. 42. yere of his reigne, our Saviour Christ was borne.

¶ Tyberius, son in lawe vnto Octavian, reigned. xliii. 3 yeares . In the. xlviii. yere whereof Christe suffered bys passion, and Pilate wrote vnto Tyberius of the miracles that he had doen, wherfore Tyberius commanded he shoulde be worshipped as a God: but the senators would not graunte vnto it, because he had proclaimed it without theyr consentes.

¶ Calus Caligula reigned. lii. yeres and. i. monethes. A 4 man of so yll liuynge, that he shamed not to companye fleshely with his owne sisters, and was slayne by bys owne souldiours.

¶ Claudius reigned. xliii. yeres and. liii. monethes, and 5 was poysoned . Some write, that the seconde yere of Claudius reigne, Peter the apostle came to Rome, and there continued. xxv. yeares after . Whiche other some doe disallow, groundyng them vpon Peters age, that rechenyng the time, it was impossible Peter should liue so longe after Christes passion.

¶ Neroe reigned. xliii. yeres and. vii. monethes, whose 6 customes were odious to the whole worlde . He kylled his mother, bys wyfe, his mayster Seneca, and dyuers other excellent men: so that his owne souldiers rebelled agaynste hym and the whole Senate condemned him: wherfore he fledde, and because he coulde not escape, desperately slewe hym selfe.

¶ Galba Sergius reigned but. vii. monethes, by reason 7
C. lli. that

Abbrigement of the

that his next successeur laye in waite for hym, and slew him in the baines.

8 Otho Lucius reigned scarcely .iij. monethes, till he was overcome by his next successeur, so that through the despayre he slew hym selfe.

9 Vitellius reigned but .viij. Monethes. For the Romaine armie, that then was in the east parties, elected Vespasian emperoure. So that in despite therof Vitellius chased Sabinus Vespasians brother with diuers into the capitol, and there set fyre on theim. Wherefore Vespasian came streight to Rome, toke Vitellius, made hym to be drawen through the stretes, & he wien to peces.

10 Vespasianus reigned .x. yeaeres, and reduced the customes and lawes into a better order amonge the people, whiche by Nero and the other Emperours after hym were muche corrupted, and beganne the Amphiateer, now called Colisseo. And this was he that destroyed Ierusalem in fulfilling of Christs prophete.

11 Titus, sonne to Vespasianus, reigned .ii. yeres and .ii. monethes after his father, and was a verie gracious Prince.

12 Domitianus reigned .xv. yeres & .v. monethes, he was brother vnto Titus, but lyke Nero in condiscyons, for he delited in vnnatural vices, and in cruel death of men, so that he slew diuers senatours, persecuted lerned men and Christians, had all successe in his warres, and finally through conspiracie was slayne.

13 Nerua reigned one yere and .iiij. monethes, and was the first straunger (that is to wete no romayne bozne) that euer was made Emperour.

14 Traianus adopted son vnto Nerua and a Spaniard bozne,

borne, resigned. xix. yeres and, bi. Monethes, so benigne and courtesie a pynce, that for a prouerbe, men vsed to say, God make the happier than august, and better thā traiane, for being sometime aduertised of his frends, that he vsed him selfe to much familiarly, he answered, that a pynce ought to be vnto his subiectes such as they should be to hym: and geuyng the swoorde to a Pretor, that he had newly made, he sayde, vse this against mine enemies, but see the cause be iust, and if I deale vniustly, than spare not me: He prospered muche in hys warres, and greatly augmented the Romaine empyre.

Adrianus resigned. xxi. yeres, the most partie in peace, 15
for that was his studie. He was wel learned, and yeresly wrote a pynossication, he builded a notable sepulchre: wher vpon Cassel, S. Angelo nowe standeth. And in his tyme there arose vppe a false Messias among the Jewes, whych Adrian ouercame with muche a dooe.

Antonius Pius adopted sonne vnto Adrian reigned 16
xxii. yeres, so gentyl a pynce, that all the worlde loued hym. For he was wonte to saye, he had rather pserue one of his citisins, than destroy a. 1000. of his enemies.

Marcus Aurelius Antonius resigned. xix. yeres and 17
one moneth. At the first his brother Lucius Verus was soigned with hym, but he lyued not longe. This Marcus was an excellent Philosopher, wrote dyuers good booke, & prospered in the warres, where finally he died.

Commodus, son to Marcus Aurelius resigned. 13. yeres 18
more lyke in condicions vnto Nero, than to his father, so that at last he was both poysoned and strangled.

Helius was sarnamed Pertinax, because he roke the 19
empire on him in maner against his wyl, & resigned not
bi. mone.

Abbrigement of the

- vi. monethes , but that hys nexte succellour caused him to be slaine.
- 20 **C**laudius Iulianus reigned not full ye .viij. monethes, for his next succellour came against him dyscounfyted his armie, toke him, and caused him to be beheaded.
- 21 **S**euerus reigned .xviij. yeres, and restozed muche the Romaine Emppze from the decay that it was fallen in by his predeceffours tyme, prospered much in his warres, and dyed in the citee of **Bozke** : where (it is wyrtten) he made a dyche wyth a walle full of toures and bastillions from one sea to the other. 132. miles of length
- 22 **A**ntonius Caracalla reigned .vi. yeres, he caused his brother Geta to be slaine, married his stepmother Iulia, vsed muche tyrannye , and was at laste slaine by one of his owne souldiours.
- 23 **M**acrinus with his son reygned one yere , and were both slayne.
- 24 **M**arius Heliogabalus reigned .liij. yeres, so abhominable a man of liuynge , that after he had tryed all the wates of carnall vice, he caused hys owne members to be cut of, in hope to chaunge hys kynde. **W**herfore hys owne souldiours slewe him , dzewe his carcasle a longe the stretes, tyed a stone aboute his necke, and so thzewe him into Tyber.
- 25 **A**lexander Seuerus reigned .xiiij. yeres, ful of vertue and good gouernauce: but because he was seuer in punysshynge hys souldiours offences, they rebelled agaynst him, and slewe him.
- 26 **M**aximianus reygned .liij. yeres , and because he was created of the armie, without the Senatours consente, therfore did the senate ordeine new emperours agaynst hym

hym, so that his owne souldiours slewe him.

Gordianus reigned. vi. yeres, and prospered much in ²⁷
his warres, but at last for lacke of vittayles, the armie
rebelled againste him, and elected his nexte successeur
Emperour, by whose order Gordianus was slayne.

Julius Philippus with his sonne reigned. vii. yeres ²⁸
and were bothe chrystened, but finally they were slayne
by procurement of theyr next successeur.

Decius with his sonne reigned. ii. yeres and. iiii. mo-
nethes, a great persecutour of the chrystian religion. In ²⁹
his time the Gothes first assailed the Romaine empire,
and passed the riuier of Danubie, where Decius and
hys sonne mette with them, and in the battayle were
bothe slayne.

Clairus Gallus with his sonne reigned. ii. yeaeres and ³⁰
were slaine both of theyr owne army, as they were go-
yng againste Emilianus, that than would haue usur-
ped the Emperre.

Valerianus with his sonne Galienus, reigned. x. ye-
res. But Valerian in the. v. yere was taken in battaine ³¹
against Sapor kynge of Persia, who put oute his eyes,
and bled hym alwaies for his foote stole whan he went
to horsebacke: and Galienus became so vicious, that
he was faine to flee from Rome, and finally was slaine
of hys owne men.

Claudius elected by the senate, reigned one yere and
ix. monethes, fought against the Gothes and Germai- ³²
nes, and discomfited bothe theyr powers, but he sicke-
ned shorly and dyed: Whereupon the armie elected hys
brother Quintillianus Emperoure, who within. xviij.
dayes after was slayne.

33 Aurelianus reigned, 8. yeres and .vi. monethes, recou-
uered a number of regions that his predecessours had
lost, and was so prosperous in the warres, that Eutro-
pius compareth him vnto Alexander the great, or Cae-
sar. But at last he was slaine through craft of one
of his owne souldiours.

34 Tacitus reigned not fully, .vi. monethes, but dyed of
the feuer. And than was his brother Florianus elected,
but he liued lytle more than .ii. monethes.

35 Probus reigned, .vi. yeres, .iiii. monethes, he recou-
ered France, ouercame Saturninus and Proculus, that
had made theim selves Emperours, and synallye was
slayne of his owne souldiours.

36 Carus with his two sonnes reigned, .ii. yeres, and
achieued diuers worthy enterpryses. But his son Caris-
nus became so great a tyranne, and so vicious withal,
that he was compared to Nero, and at last slayne of his
owne souldiours.

37 Dioclesianus reigned, .xx. yeres, a greate persecutour
of the christian religion, because reason perswaded him,
that where as diuersities of opinions continued, there
coude be no peace, but perill of commocions. And
because he thought not him selfe able to rule the whole
empire alone, he toygned Maximianus with hym; and
either of theim made a depute, Dioclesianus toke Ga-
lerius, and Maximianus toke Constantius. Finally
whan they had brought the empire to a good stay, Dio-
clesian & Maximian both renounced their estates and
became priuate, though Maximian would gladly haue
taken it vpon him againe, to haue exalted his son Ma-
xentius. Wherfore his sonne in law Constantine caused
hym

hym to be slayne.

¶ Galerius with Constantius resigne d together. *ii.* yer- 38
res, and deuided the empire betwene theym: Galerius
had the east parte, and Constantius the west. Constantius, husband to the Queene Cleyn, died in Rome, and
Galerius, beinge fallen sicke, slew hym selfe. Neuer-
thelesse he dyed Maxentius had gotten the Romaine
souldiours called Pretoriani on hys parte, and so usur-
ped the name of Emperoure. Against whom Galerius
first sent his capitaine Seuerus, and afterwards Licin-
ius, but they preuailed not, for Maxentius contynued
til the coming of Constantine to Rome, who fought
with him, and so discomfited him, that in fleing he was
drownd in Tyber.

Constantine the firste, reduced the Ro-
maine affaie to tranquillitee, and toke Licinius as 309
compagnion in the empire: to whom he gaue hys
oldest sister in maryage. But as discorde is common
amonge princes, so it happened; that Licinius rebelled
against Constantine, and being overcome, was deposed,
and (as some wyse) slayne. So that Constantine reyg-
ned alone, the tyme of whose reygne in all was. *xxx.*
yeres and *v.* monethes. He was conuerted to the Chri- 318
stian fayth by bisshoppe Siluester, unto whom (as the
clergie holde opinion) he gaue his royal seate in Rome,
wyth auctoritee to vse all the imperiall rytes and ho-
nours, and made him head of the Christian church: and
therbyon remoued his imperiall seate from Rome to
Constantinople: whych citee he than had newly redif-
ed. And though authours agree that he in deede built
ed Constantinople, and chaunged it from the aunciente

name, which was Bizantium, yet many allow not Constantines donacion to Siluester to be true, but say, that some one of those bishops of Rome longe after Siluester, that vsurped the name of Peters successeur, to enlarge theyr credite and auctoritee, and to mainreigne theyr pompe, inuented this donacion. So that though Constantine or his successeurs removed theyr dwelling from Rome to Constantinople, yet did they neuertheles retereigne continually bothe the dominion of Rome and also the name of the Romaine empyre, vntill the takyng of Rome by Alaricus kynge of the Gothes, betweene whose commynge and the reigne of Constantine were these. ix. emperours solowynge.

I Constantinus, Constantius, & Constans sons of the first Constantine, and had the empire deuised betweene the. But Constantine, not contented with his parte, moued warre to Constans, & was slaine, and Constans at length was also slaine by treasō of one of his owne capitaines named Magnētius: who vsurped the empire, and after many battailes, beyng ouercome by Constantius, at last slewe him selfe. So that Constantius remaigned emperour alone, the time of whose reigne, with his bzyetherne togethers, was. xxiii. yeres.

2 Julianus surnamed Apostata, because being bozne a Christian he became a paynem, reigned. ii. yeres. First he rebelled agaynst his vncle Constantius, that had made hym Cæsar, and after his death (beyng made emperour) he persecuted cruelly the christian religion; and at length was slayne in battaille agaynst the Persians.

3 Constantinianus reigned. vii. monethes, restored the faith of Christ, and was constrained of necessitye to graunte vnto

Donacion of
constantine.

339

363

365

unto the king of Persia a great part of Mesopotamia:
whych was the fyrst tyme that ever the Romaines or
any Emperoure consented to diminish the Romaine
dominion.

Valentinianus reigned. xii. yeares, and was a good
Christian. 366

Valens reigned. liii. yerres, fauoured muche the Ar-
rian secte, and makynge warre agaynst the Gothes in
Thracia, was discomfited, besieged, and burned. 378

Gratianus reigned. vi. yerres, and he with his sonne
were both slaine by treason of Maximus and Arbogast
thus theyr owne raptaynes. 382

Theodosius reigned. xi. yeares, subdued the Gothes,
and discomfited the traitours Maximus and Arbogast
thus, that vsurped the Emperre, the fyrste of them was
slayne in the feld, the other for despayre slewe hym
himsel: and so he reuenged his predecessours death. 388

Archadius and Honorius reigned together. xiii. ye-
res, and than dyed Archadius. 407

Honorius after his brothers death reigned. xv. yerres,
in whose time Alaric, before named king of the Gothes,
prouoked through treasō of Stillicon the Emperours ca-
pitaine a Wandle bozne, tourned his armie, that than
was goynge into Fraunce, against the Emperour, & so
ouerrennyng all Italie, at length besieged Rome, and
toke it rather by famyne than force. And here beganne
the manifest decaye of the Romaine emperre. For from
this daye forward those Septentrional nationes, that is
to wete, the Gothes, the Vādales, the Hunes & Lumbardes,
with dyuers others, triumphed not onely ouer
Italy, but also ouer Fraunce, Spayne and parte of Af-

Strike, in such wyse, that though many of theyr armyes were discounfited by diuers of the emperours capitaines and others: yet in procelle of tyme they myngled theim selves so with the other nations, that they were no more known for strangers, but became Italians, Spanyardes, Frenchemen, and so forth.

After this first destruction of Italy, wth the takyng and spoylyng of Rome, the common people beganne to crye out, sayng: that syns they lefte the woo^rthyppynge of theyr auncient gods, and had embraced the new faith of Christ, all these afflictions through vengeance of the gods were fallen on theim: so that many doubted whether it were good to beleue or not. But surely, the removing of the imperial seate from Rome to Constantinople, was the greatest occasion of the Romaine empyres decaye. For when the emperours beganne to dwel in Grece, and to leaue Italy, now and then deuising the empyre, one to rule in the orient, and an other in the occident, theyr auncient reputacio declined so much, that theyr olone private capitaines enterprysed many times not onely to rebel, but also to blurpe the name of emperours. By reason whereof it came to passe, that wth in the space of 80. yeres there entred, vii. straunge kinges into Italie, wth so puissant armies, that they puttyther the whole countrey, or at least a great part thereof to sword and fyre.

Deuysing of
the empyre.

112 **F**yrst Alaricus, kynge of the Gothes before named, after he had gotten roun by such samyne, that many mothers did eate theyr owne children, ouerrane a Campaigne, the realme of Naples, and the lande of Brutt, and finally dyed in the cite of Cosenza.

After

After whom succeeded his kynsman Athaulfus, thae married Placidia sister of the emperour Honorius, taken amonge the prisoners of Rome, so wise a woman, thae whan hir husbante folowynge the trade of Alaricus, determined to goe to Rome, and to rase it to the earth, the with faire wordes dissuaded hym, and broughte hym to accorde with hir brother, in suche wyse that throughe the emperours procurement, he with all his nacyon of Gothes lefte Italye, and wente to conquere Spayne, where in the citee of Barcelona he was of hys owne folke traitterously slayne.

The second was Atila kyng of the Hunes, who with an infinite number of people entred into Italy, and put synge all to fyre and swoorde, passed ouer the countrey now called Lumbardy vnto the Appenine hillz, and as farre as Florence, whiche he rased to the earth, not withstandinge it was yeldd vnto hym wythoute resistance. But finally as he was goynge to Rome, entrendyng to do likewise there, Leo the firste, than byshop of the same, met him by the way, and so entreated him, that ceasinge from further crueltee, he wythdrew hym and all his into Hungarye, where not longe after he died of a sodaine death.

Chirdlie Gensericus entred into Italye with a great number of Vandales throughe this occasyon.

Theodosius the .ii. assigned his cousin Valentinian to rule the weast parte of the empire, who died wythin fewe yeares: so that Maximianus a Romayne, by force toke on him the occidētal empire, and married Eudossia late wife of the same Valētinian: who disceimynge thys Maximian, practised secretly with Gensericus then re-
gnyng

Abbrigement of the

gning in Affrica, & dfo so muche, that he came to Rome, toke it by force, flew Maximan, fpoyled and buened the citee, and finallie for a worthy reward, led Eudoffa and hir daughter prifoners wth hym at hys retourne into Affrike.

463 ¶ The fourth was Biorgus kyng of the Alant, after-
4 wardes called Alemani, who entred into Italie by the way of Trent, & ouerranne all Iftria, La Marca Tri- uifana, and a greate parte of Lumbardye, till at laft by Seuerianus one of the Emperours capitaines, he was fought withall, flayne and his hoft difcomfited.

5
471 ¶ The .v. was Odoacrus kyng of the Eruli, that fome-
time were of the countrey of Valachia beyond the riuer of Danubie, who wth an infinite number of mē twife in .xliii. yere ouerran all Italie, calling him felfe kyng thereof, tyl the Emperoure Zenon fente Theodoricus king of the Gothes againft him, who fought wth him, dyfcomfited all his hoft, and finally flew hym.

6
481 ¶ The .vi. was this Theodoricus hym felfe, who by the Emperoure Zenon was inuefted kyng of Italye, in the title wherof he caufed muche slaughter and deftruc- tion er euer he banquiffhed Odoacrus, but at lafte he eftabliffhed his royall feate in Rauenna, where he re- gned .25. yeres, and dyed of the flure, leauynge behynde hym a perpetuall fame of his worthynesse and vertue.

7
486 ¶ The .vii. was Gundealde kyng of Borgoyne, who wth a great multitude paffed the Alpes, ouerranne a greate parte of Lumbardie, and wth an infynce num- ber of prifoners, and a wonderfull praye of richesse re- turned into his owne countrey.

Nowe ye fhall vnderftande, that after Theodoriche was

was made kyng of Italy by the emperours consent, his daughter Amalasuntha folowed in successiō of the dominion, who after the death of hir owne son Atalaricus, accepted hir cousin Theodat^r for companiō in hir kyngdome, but he rendring yll for good, found meanes not onelye to exile hir, but also to make hir dye: to the entente he myght reygne alone. Which unkind dealing so muche offended his owne Gothish naciō, that they elected another kyng in Rome, named Vitigius, who shortlye caused Theodatus to be slaine by treason, and yet he hym self prospered not longe after. For er he had fully reigned, v. yeres, Bellisarius, a capitaine sent by the emperour Iustinian, recovered al Italy, besieged Vitigius in Rauenna, and finally toke him prisoner, and so led him to Constantinople.

When the Gothes had a litel renewed their strength, they made Totila theyr king, ouerranne all Italy, and 542 shortlye toke the citie of rome by force, reigning ouer the whole countrey. ix. yeares, till Narles, an other of the emperours capitaines came puissantly into Lumbardy, and in a sore foughten battayle slewe Totila, wyth a greate number of hys nacyon.

Notwithstandinge that dyscountfite the Gothes a 553 fresshe chose theim another kyng, called Teia, a veray balliaunt man, that wonderfully defended his dominion againsse the power of Narles: but finally in playne battaille Narles slew hym, and so discountfited hys armye, that the Gothes were constrained to submytte theim selves vnto the emperours obeisance, and from that tyme forth (beyng bozne of two or thre descenderes in Italye) they were no moze knowne for Gothes,

but taken for Italians, and there ended the Gothische name: Whiche from the comyng of Theodoricus, before named, had reigned in Italy the space of. 72. yeres. A meruailouse matter to see the instabilitee of these worldely thynges: that the Romaine empyre, whych so many yeres before had triumphed in ryches & welth over the whole world, should now be subiecte vnto all calamities and affliction. Rome it selfe. iiii. tymes taken by force within the space of. 140. yeaeres, the walles in many places thowē to the earth, the inestimable goodly buildinges of temples and palaces burned and spoyled, the infinite treasures of money, iswelles, and other ornaments put to sacke, or hidde vnder the ground by the owners, where it could neuer be founde: neither man woman nor childe spared of the enemyes farsouse swoorde, and finallye brought to that case, that it was more than an whole yere desolate without any creature to dwel in it, other then the wyld beasts. And not Rome alone, but also the moste parte of all the notable citiees of Italie were thus afflicted for the tyme.

But whan the Gothish nation was thus subdued, Italie returned to the obedience of the empyre, and was gouerned by the forenamed Narses, by the space of. 17. yeres, til after the death of the emperor Iustinian, Iustine the secounde of that name succeeded, whose wyfe Sophia, thorough instigaciō of some gentilmē of the court (that envied the vertue & glozy of Narses) handled his husband the emperor so much, that he reuoked Narses from the rule of Italy, with insuriously wordes of the emperesse, that had boasted, she would set hym amongest his women to spinne and to make cloth, whiche

Rome destroyed, iiii. tymes.

che the sayde was meeter for hym than to rule suche a countrey. But the noble hert of Narles conceiued so greate an unkindnesse of this, that (after he had answered hie) he woulde spinne suche a clothe, as nether the noz hie wile housbande should be hable to weare out, he secretly set into Pannonia to Alboinus king of the Longobardi, now called Lumbardes, exhortinge him to come into Italie: howe be it, ere he came, Narles repented hym, and did what he could to haue letted it: but as he traualled therein (being come to Rome) with John the thyzde bisshop of the same, hauyng now delayed the Lumbardes coming a few yeres, he died, had his body caried to Constantinople, & there was honorably buried.

This Narles with Bellisarius befoze named, were two of the noblest capitaines that euer serued the Romaneyne Emperours.

Incontinently after the death of Narles, the forenamed Alboinus, with an infynite number of men women and childern, entred into Italy, & occupied all the countrey betwene the Alpes & the Appenine hylles, namyng it after theyz name Lumbardy. And notwithstanding that the emperours for the space of .80. yeres made continuall warres agaynst theym by theyz generalles, whom thei called Exarkes, yet could they neuer so abate and banquish the gloze of those Lumbardes, but that sometimes they wolde right wel be reuenged, so that in effecte they reigned ouer Lumbardy aboue .200. yeres, tyl the coming of Charlemaine, who in fauour of the Romaneyne bishops, warred agaynst Desiderius last kyng of the sayde Lumbardes, toke and ledde him prisoner into Fraunce.

Abbrigement of the

CIn all whych tyme of the Lumbardes prosperitee, there reigned amongst them, 23. kynges, whose names hereafter folowe.

1 **A**lboinus, slaine by procurement of his wife Ro-
samunda.

2 **D**apho, slayne of hys owne people for hys ty-
rannie. After whose death the Lumbardes wolde haue
no kyng, but in maner of a common wealth elected, 30
Dukes, who occupied all Italie, Rome and Naples ex-
cepted, and so contynued the space of. xlii. yeares, till the
Lumbardes, being weery of theyr gouernaunce, retur-
ned againe to the election of a kyng.

3 **C**antharis surnamed Flavius, toke to wife Theodos-
linda, the kynges daughter of Bauarie, a woman that
by persuation of Gregoꝝpe the firste, bishop of Rome,
secretly embraced the chꝛistian faith, and after conuer-
ted hir nexte housband to the same.

4 **A**gslolphus Duke of Turine, married Theodolinda
after the death of hir other housbande, and so beyng
made kyng, thꝛough his wifes procurement, he became
a Chꝛistian.

5 **A**doaldus, sonne of Agslolphus, beyng very young,
reigned about. x. yeares, vnder the gouernaunce of hys
mother Theodolinda, and after hir death, was bzauen
oute of his realme.

6 **A**riolous, of whom I fynde nothing notable.

7 **R**otharius, a valiaunt warriour, and so wel learned
wisshal, that he prescribed lawes vnto the Lumbardes,
who from theyr coming into Italy tyl that time (whych
he was about. 70. yeres) had no wꝛitten law.

8 **R**odolous sonne of Rotharius was slaine by one that
founde

founde hym in adoultise with his wife.

Arithpertus, through feigned flight obteyned a notable victorie against the frenchemen. 9

Gundibertus, sonne vnto Arithpertus, contended so long with his brother for the dominion, that at last they were bothe chaled awaye. 10

Grimoaldus, toke the estate from the children of Arithpert, and held long warre wpyth the emperor Constantine the thyrde, & so overcame Theodorus the Exarke, that the emperor in a great rage came hym selfe with a myghtye armie into Italie, and after he had ouerranne the countrey of Puglia, and taken the citee of Luceria, which he put to fyre and sworde, at last he besieged Beneuento, where hapned one notable thing worthy the reherſal. 11

Romoaldus sonne to the king Grimoaldus was then within Beneuento, and valiantly defended the citee against the Greekes, sending worde by a foster father of his named Gensualdus, vnto hys father, that vntlesse he wolde shortly sende succours, the citee must needes be taken. Gensualde did his message, and retournyng wpyth answere was taken of the enemies, and brought befoze the emperor. Where beyng straightly examyned, he confessed, that Grimoalde withal the power of Lombardy was departed from Pavia, & came to reſſe the ſiege: and that he hym selfe was the messenger of hys commyng. Wherefoze the emperor hoping incontinently to haue the towne, and so to departe befoze the comyng of Grimoalde, partely with chrestenynge, and partly with fayze offers, perswaded Gensualde, that beyng brought befoze the towne, he should shewe Romo-

Abbrigement of the

alde, how his father through other businesse of impoꝛ-
taunce coulde not than succoure hym. Gensualde
promysinge so to dooe, was brought to the walles, and
called for Romualde, who forthwyth appeared. Ro-
moalde (sayd he) thy father is here at hand, with a pu-
issant armye to succour the. I lefte hym passenge the
riuer of Sanguine: be good to my wyfe and chyldzen,
for I am but dead, and so it pꝛoued, for hys head was
stricken of, and for despite with an engine thzowen into
the towne. Wherbyan Constantine with his armie re-
tyred to Naples, and from thense to Rome, where he
was moste honourable receyued of Byshop Vitellian,
with all the clergy and nobilitie. But he in recompence
of that honour, fell to robbing and spolyng of all the
goodlye thynges that he founde there, as well marble,
brasse and peynture, as other richesse, insomuch that he
toke the rille of brasse, wherewith the temple of Panthe-
on was couered, and shipped all that he gotte. So that
Rome in a maner suffered moze hurt and spoyle in, vs-
dages that he remaigned there, than it did by any ouer-
throw from the fyrst comyng of the Lumbardes. And
yet he enioyed not, for retourning towarde Greece he
was slaine by hys owne men in the citee of Syracuse;
and all those precouse thynges taken afterwarde by
the Saracines, and caried to Alexandria in Aegypt,
where manye of theim maye be seen at this daye. But
to retourne vnto my purpose. Grimoaldus dyed of
so muche streignyng his armie after he had been letten
bloude.

12 ¶ Garmaldus, sonne of Grimoaldus, reigned. iii. mo-
nethes onely and dyed.

Partha

¶ Bartharus, sonne of Arithpert before named, that from his pouche had been in continuall exile, returned 13
home, and was restored to the kyngdome.

¶ Iunipertus or Compertus, sonne of Bartharus succeeded after the death of his father. 14

¶ Raimpertus, or Luitpertus, sonne of Iunipertus, beinge a childe, had not reigned vnder the tuition of Asprandus full ye, viii. monethes, but that Raimpertus Duke of Turine rebelled, and in plaine battayle overcame Asprandus, and so usurped the kyngdome. 15
16

¶ Raimpertus reigned not fully a yere. 17

¶ Arithpertus, son of Raimpertus, was much distressed by the forenamed Luitpertus, but at last he slew him in plaine battaile, & in maner destroyed the whole house of Asprandus. Nevertheless in the. xi. yere of his reigne Asprandus, with helpe of the kyng of Bavaria, returned potissantly into Italy, fought with Arithpert, and so discomfited him, that in his flight passinge the river of Tesino, he was drowned, by reason he had overladen him selfe with golde. 18

Asprandus reigned but, iiii. monethes and dyed. 19

¶ Luitprandus, son of Asprandus, was a great warrior, insomuch that after he had gotten Rauenna, and many other citées from the emperours Exarke, at last he besieged Rome. Nevertheless at the intercession of his gossippe the frenche kyng, he leaues his siege, and restored to the Romans those castels and townes that he before had taken from them.

¶ Aldeprandus, nephew of Luitprandus, lyued not fully. v. monethes, and dyed without issue. 20

¶ Rachis or Lachis, as some cal him, Duke of Turine was 21

Abbrigement of the

was next kynge, who after manye gyftes made to the church of Rome, whan he had reigned. vi. yeaeres, leste his crowne, and became amonke.

22 Aistolphus, brother to Raxis, contrarie to his brothers maners, made so sharpe warre to the Church of Rome, that Stephen then byshop, called Pepine the French king twisse into Italy against him, & constreynged him to obey the Romayne See, and at last beyng on a day a huntynge, he died sodenelye of an appoplexi.

23 Desiderius laste kynge of the Lumbardes, prospered longe tyme in hys warres, and specyally agaynst the church of Rome, which he so constreigned, that Adrian the first than bishop there, was faine to cal king Charlemaigne of Fraunce into Italie to succoure hym: who

779 at his comyng not onelie restozed vnto the church all those citees that were taken away, but also led Desiderius, his wyfe and Childzen prysoners wyth hym into Fraunce, furnyshinge the whole regyon of Lumbardy with officers and rulers of his owne nacion.

The ende of
the Lumbardes
des reigne. Thus ended the reigne of the Lumbardes, which had continued moze than. 200. yeres.

It is nowe to be vnderstanded, that shortly vpon the comyng of Alboinus into Italy, diuers citees and prouinces of the same (as they strengthe & tyme did serue them) vbled theyr owne libertees, and leauyng the imperial lawes, made newe orders and officers amongst them selves. Wherefoze the emperour Iustinus sent a general of his into Italie, named Longinus, ordainyng him to be called Exarke, whiche should be chiefe ouer all other officers.

This Exarke passing by Rome, came to Rauenna, and there

there kept his estate, appoynting the gouernance of Rome to a Duke: so that many yeres after there were no mo Consulles made: whereby office together with the most parte of all the other Romayne magistrates, kept theyr auncient forme vnto that tyme, notwithstanding that the emperours had taken from theym al maner of auctoritee, except the onely gouernance of the citee.

¶ From Longinus vnto the comyng of kyng Pepine into Italie, the emperours helde in maner conynuall warre with the kinges of Lubarde by theyr Exarkes: but after Pepine had ouercome the kinge Aristolphe (who befoze had subdued the Exarke of Rauenna) he gaue the lands of that Exarcate to the church: A great part wherof the bishoppe of Rome holdeth to this day.

¶ And because that from the tyme of Honorius hitherwardes I cannot finde that any emperoure had quyet dominion ouer Italy, or was at any tyme residēt there, I therfoze omitte to reherse the emperours names that haue reigned syns, and woull conclude, how by Charlemaines tyme, the empire that befoze had none other title than of Rome. (wherof it toke originall) was bitterlye deuided in two: Oriental and Occidental, the occasion wherof was this.

¶ Leo the. iiii. successour vnto Adrian byshop of Rome, was chased away by the Romaines, and fledde to kyng Charlemaine for succour, who not onely restored hym to his bishopricke, but also for a moze terroure to the Romaines, with a greate power came to Rome in hys owne person: where on Christmas day, for a reward of 801 his trauaile, the bishoppe and clergie proclaymed him Emperour.

The description

Some wryte, that Charlemayne was very loth to take it vpon him, til he had practised first with Hirenna, thā Emperesse of Conſtātinople, and after with Niceforus nortē emperour folowynge, and obteyned bothe theyr consentes.

In effect Charlemayne was crowned, toke on him the empire; and his son Pepine was entituled king of Italye. And after they had attempted to chase the greckes cleane out of the same, they accorded with Niceforus to diuide the east empyre from the west, limitinge the Duchie of Beneuento to be as a confine or bound betwene them both.

Election of
the Empe-
rour.

And thus, sens Charlemaigne, the occidentall empire continued vnder the frenche dominion, till Gregoꝝ the .v. bishop of Rome, transported the election of the emperour vnto the pꝛinces of Germanie, whiche to this day endureth. Like as on the other

side the Orientall empire continued in

Constantinople in the handes of

Chꝛystians, till Macho

met the seconde of

that name em-

perour of

the

Turkes, toke the citee by force, slew the em

perour Sigismonde, and consequently

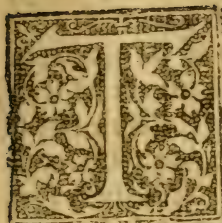
enioyed the whole Greekiſh em-

pyre, as his successours

dōe vnto this

daye.

The

The description of
Rome.

Thynkyng to fynde a greate contentacion in the syght of Rome, because that amōgest all the citces of the woꝛld none haib bene moꝛe famous then it, I disposed my selfe to go thither. But whan I came there and beheld the wonderfull maiestie of buildinges that the onely rootes thereof do yet represent, the huge temples, the infinite great palaces, the vnmearable pillars, moſte parte of one peece, fine marble, and well wrought, the goodly arches of triumphe, the baynes, the conductes of water, the Images as well of brasse as of marble, the Obeliſkes, and a nūmber of other lyke thinges, not to be founde agayne thꝛoughoute an whole woꝛld: imagininge wythall, what maiestie the citce might be of, whan all these chynges flourished, Than diide it greene me to see the onely ſewel, myrrour, mayſtees, and beautye of this woꝛld, that neuer had her lyke, noꝛ (as I thinke) neuer ſhall, lye ſo deſolate and diſfigured, that there is no lamentable caſe to be heard, or lotheſome thinge to be ſene, that maye be compared to a ſmall parte of it.

Peruerſe-
leſſe, when I remembꝛed agayne the occasions, wherof theſe glorious thinges haue growen, what nūmbers of warres the Romaynes haue maynteyned, with infinite bloodſhedding, deſtructions of whole countreys, rauſhmentes of chaſt womē, ſacke, ſpoyle, tributes, op-

The description

pression of common welthes, and a thousande other tyrannies, without the which the Romaines could neuer haue achieved the perfection of so manye wonders as mine eye byd there beholde: Than perceiued I, howe iust the iudgement of god is, that hath made those antiquities to remayne as a soule spoyle of the Romayne pryde, and for a witnessse to the worldes ende of their tyranny. So that I wote not whether of these two is greater, either the glozy of that fame, that the Romaines purchased wth theyr wonderfull conquestes: or their presente myserable estate, with the desolutes of theyr antiquities.

Of the ryuer of Tyber.

THe river of Tyber, whiche renneth throughe Rome, deuideth Tuscane and Champaigne so that Translyberim, and the Vaticane, wherin standeth S. Peters churche, with the bishops palaice and castel Saint Angelo, are in Tuscane; and the rest on the other syde of the water, which is very Rome in deede, is in Champaigne.

The distance betwene the citee and the sea called Mare Tirrhenum, is, .xv. myles. And all be it, the ryuer be greate, deepe, and large enoughe for an haven, from the sea to Rome, yet most commonly the ships can come no neerer than Ostia, which is, .xii. myles from Rome: partly by reason of the streame that renneth very swifte and partelye by reason of the wonderfull quantitee of mudd, that being brought downe with the swift course of the water, lieth commonly at the mouth of the haven.

So

So that all the merchandise, vittalls, and other thinges that come by shippe, are dyscharged at Ostia into certayne smal vessels, and so brought to Rome, either drawn by corde, or rowed by by force of oyes.

The head or first spring of Tyber is in the Appenine The heade of Tyber. hilles, somewhat higher than the heade of the riuer Arno, that renneth through Florence; and er euer it come at Rome, it receiueth. 42. other riuers: So that it is no meruaile, though it be depe, speciall ye in Rome and to the seawardes, where it appeareth, that the naturall bredth of it is restrained: & by force of stronge bankes made much narrower than his auncient course hath ben.

Of the Bydges.

Vpon this ryuer of Tyber in Rome be. iiii. bydges, the first and fairest is it that passeth from the citee vnto castel, S. Angelo, vnder the which the Ponte di S. Angelo riuer comyng from the North towardes the south, entereth into the citee. And is commonly called Ponte di Ponte del Castello Sant'Angelo, or del Castello.

The second is Ponte Sisto other wyse called Ponte Ponte Sisto rotto, a very goodly bydge, that leadeth from the strete Ponte rotto, now called Iulia, vnto the foote of the hylle aunciently called Janiculus in Translyberim.

The thirde is called Ponte del l'isola, Ponte di San Ponte de l'isola Bartholomeo, or Ponte di quatuor Capora, which Ponte di S. Bartholomeo passeth from the herte of the citee through the Glannde Ponte di quatuor Capora Tyberina into Translyberim.

The fourth next to the goyng forth of the ryuer out of the citee at the South is called Ponte di Santa Maria Ponte di S. Maria

The description

¶ But to satisfie them that be learned, I thinke meete to rehearse here the names of the. viii. brydges Sublicius, Palatinus, Fabricius, Cestius Ianuclensis, Vaticanus, Elius, & Miluius: & to declare where they stode.

Sublicius.

¶ First Sublicius, whiche Horatius alone defended in the warres of Porfena, was at the foote of the hill Auentine, where nowe is no brydge at all, & first it was made of timber, afterwarde of stone by Emilius Lepidus, for the whiche he was surnamed Lapideus, but finally it was made of marble by Antonius Pius, and nowe decayed to the foundations: wherof parte are yet to be seene.

Palatinus
Fabricius
Cestius

The second palatinus, is now called di santa maria.

¶ The thirde and fourth, fabricius, nexte the citie side, and Cestius, on the side of Trans tyberim, are the two brydges that passe through the lande Tyberina.

¶ The. v. Ianuclensis, is nowe called ponte fisto.

Ianuclensis
Vaticanus.

¶ The. vi. Vaticanus, is decated to the foundation, part wherof is seene against the hospitall di san spirito.

Elius
Miluius

¶ The. vii. Elius, is now called del Castello.

¶ The. viii. Miluius, is. ii. mille northwardes oute at the gate called del popolo, in the way to Tuscanie: and is called at this daye ponte molle.

¶ Of the walles.

¶ The circuite of y^e citie about by the walles, as Plinie wyrteth, was in his time, xx. miles: and flauius Vopiscus sayeth, that the emperour Aurelius. 200. yeres before the coming of the Gothes, enlarged the circuite of Rome to. 50. miles: whether these

authours

authorours included the suburbs I can not tel: but ones there can be seene no signe or token of any walles, that shuld containe so much compasse: nor yet of the walles that Liuius mentioneth, shoud be made of square stone For the walles now about Rome are of bricke, & in my iudgement passe not. xliii. miles in compasse. For

I can not perceiue, either by mine owne eye, or by writing of authorours, or yet by reporte, that euer the walles were of greater circuite then they be at this present.

It is euident, that manye partes of the same wall haue been thowen to the earth by diuers enemies, & repayred agayne. For notwithstandinge it be builded of bricke, yet dooeth it shewe such an antike maiestie (hauinge. 365. towres agreeable with the numbze of dayes in the yere) that he who seeth it, must needes confesse, it could neuer be buylded but in time of the Romanes glory. Perchaunce some will meruaile, howe bricke shoulde so longe continue: but they? bricke, whether it be longe of good makynge, or of the heate of the sonne that dryeth muche better than wyth vs, is wonderfull durable. For there be manye buyldinges in Rome of bricke, that haue continued these. 1000. yeres and moze and yet to this houre are nothing woone or decayed.

In deede manye gates of the citee are of square stone, wrought after the moste antike facion: so that it is not incredible, as Liuius writteth, that y walles haue bene of square stone, but it shoud not seme so, because that in making of a newe wall in the same place, it is to be supposed, the builders would haue vsed the olde square stone, rather than bricke.

The description Of the gates.

Perlinse writeth, that in his time were. xxx. gates open, and. vii. closed, but because he hath not written they names, I woul not traualle to trie what they were. For I can finde but. xvi. that are bled: Of whiche. iiii. are in the Vaticane, that many yeares after Plinie, was walled by Leo the. iiii. byshop of Rome, for defence of hys owne palatce and of Sainct Peters church.

Porta de
popolo. flu-
mentana.
Flaminia.
P. Pincia-
na.
Collatina.
P. Sala-
ria. Quir-
nalis.
Aegonalis.
P. di sant'
Agnese.
Viminalis
Figulensis
Numentana.
P. di San
Lorenzo
Tiburtina
Esquilina
P. Maggi-
ore. Nuova
Labicana
Prenestina
P. di. San
Giovanni
Celimonta-
na.
Afinaria
P. Latina

First nexte vnto the comyng downe of Tyber on the northsyde, is the gate called Porta del popolo, whych auncientlye hath had diuers names, as Flumentana & Flaminia of the way Flaminia that wet out therat.

Then coming about towarde the East, the next gate is called Pinciana, sometime Collatina.

The. iiii. Salaria, aunciently called Quirinalis, or Aegonalis.

The. iiii. Porta di Sant' Agnese, sometime Viminalis, figulensis and Numentana.

The. v. Porta di San Lorenzo, sometyme called Tybertina after some authours, and after other Exquilina, though Andreas Fuluius affirmeth playnely Exquilina to be betwene this and the nexte gate.

The. vi. Porta maggiore was sometyme called Neuia, Labicana and Prenestina.

The. vii. Porta di San Giovanni hath ben called Celimontana, and Afinaria, by reason it lyeth towarde the realme of Naples, that breedeth many asses.

The. viii. Porta Latina hath not chaunged name, or if it be chaunged, the aunciente name cannot be knowne now.

The

The. ix. Porta di San Sebastiano, was sometime called Appia and Capena, and after most opinions was also called Triumphalis.

The. x. Porta di San Paolo, was sometime called Trigemina. All whiche. x. gates are on the Champaigne side of the riuer.

The. xi. Porta portese, or Porta di Ripa.

The. xii. Porta di San Pancratio, sometime called Aurelia.

The. xiii. Porta del Torrione.

The. xiiii. Porta portusa, on the toppe of the hill beyonde saint Peters.

The. xv. hath diuers names, as Porta di Belvedere, di San Piero, del Giardino, or di Santo Peregrino and is hard vnder the bishops palatce.

The. xvi. porta del Castello, sometime Posterula, lieth vnder Castell Sant' Angelo, and serueth to go into the medowes. As for those auncient names, Carmentalis, Padana, Mugonia, Queruetulana, lauernalis, Rudusculana, Rhuttumena, Carthularia, and diuers others, which as I suppose were old gates, that lost they places as the wall were enlarged: I could neuer learne where they should be, and therefore doe beleue they haue bene conuerted to the vse of other buildynges.

These gates and walles about Rome are not stronge, nor yet fortified with rampters of earth or otherwise to defende shotte of artillerie, and in manye places are so decayed, that to assaulte there needeth not muche batterye. Many of the gates haue ben exceedynge fayre, but like as mooste notable thynges there be decayed: so are these rather a figure of they antiquitee, thanne anye

P. di S.
sebastiano
Appia.
Capena
Trium=
phalis.
P. di San
Paolo
Trigemina.
P. Portese
di Ripa
P. di S.
Pancratio
Aurelia
P. del Tor
rione
P. Portusa.
P. di Bel
vedere
di San
Piero.
del Giar
dino.
di S. Pe
regrino
P. del
Castello
Posterula

The description

thynges elles.

Of the .vii. hilles.

The .vii. hilles, wher on rome standeth, are but of a smal height, standing a rewe vpon the riuer side.

Auentinus.

The greatest of theim Eastwardes is called Auentinus, wherin was the caue of Cacus the giant that Hercules slewe : and the fountaine, where the Goddes Picus & Faunus were taken by the policie of Puma, who geuyng theim wine in steede of water, made theim drunke, and so toke theim a slepe. And albest, that on this hill haue ben many goodly edifices, as the temples of Marita, Diana, Minerua, Lucina, Liberta, wyth diuers others, yet at this daye there is nothyng to be seen, not so much as a token of Claudius notable conducte, that Frontinus & Cassiodorus trease so muche vpon. For there is now none other buildyng, but the monasteries of Santa Sabina, and Sant Aleſso, with a fewe other litle churches. The reste is either couered with rubbet, or occupied with vines.

Capitolinus.

The next hille, fyrst called Tarpeius, after Capitoline, and now Campidoglio, was the pꝛincipall place of the citee, such as for example the yelde haul is in london. For thither came all they that happened to be receyued with triumphe : and amongst all the buildynges of the world Capitolum was compted the goodlyest. For Cassiodorus sayeth, It is a greates wonder to behold the market place of Traiane : But to clymbe vp into the capitol, & there is the excellencie of all buynges maye wytes to be regarded. Cicero calleth it in many

many places the habitation of the goddess: and Virgile the golden Capitoline. Wherof at this day remayneth no more but an olde house called the Senate, & the churche of Araceli. They say, that the temple of Iupiter optimus maximus was there, where the churche of San Saluator in malsiani is now: and the temple of Ianus custos, where the pylons be now called La Cancellaria. But of theyr antiquities appeareth at this daye not so much as the bare foundations.

Pert vnto Campidoglio is the hil Palatinus, on the Palatinus. whiche the emperours, kings, consuls, and other chiefe officers had theyr palaces, besides many famous temples that haue been built ther, wherof remaineth none other now but the olde ruines, and a churche of sainte Nicolas not yet finished.

There is to be noted, that these .iii. hilles Quentinus, Capitolinus, and Palatinus were onely closed wth walles by Romulus: so that Rome was nothinge so great in circuite at the fyrste as it is now. But as the people multiplied, so the other hilles were taken in: as he that readeth Lipse shall well perceiue. In effecte, settinge the rubbel and olde monstrous foundations aparte, Rome (as touchyng these .iii. hilles) is returned deserte, pasture, and vineyardes, as it was before the fyrst foundations.

Pert is the hil Celius, wherin is seen vnto this daye a part of the ancient Romayne maiestee, by the meruailous buildynges that yet remaine, not whole, but so that the magnificence thereof maye be comprehended: as the Amphitheatrum, now called Coliseo, the conduites and baines, the great palace, and a number of

Celius.

The description

sayre churches, translated from olde temples.

Exquilus

E Pert vnto this Exquilus, which as Varro sayeth, are two hylls, but they seme not so to me. In this part are Therme Dioclesiani, the piller of Adrian the toure de i Conti, Trofei de Caio Mario, the gardesne and toure of Pecenates so muche renoumed, wyth diuers other thynges, and is well inhabited.

**Viminalis
Quirinalis**

Finally the hylls, Viminalis and Quirinalis, lye so together, that I coulde not deuide theim: But by effymacion and report they begin at the gate of S. Agnes, and stretche downe by Monte Cavallo vnto Tyber, in which are fewe notable thynges to be seene, excepte Monte Cavallo, Therme Constantiniane, Torre delle militie, and a fewe others.

Transyberin

Now that parte of the citee that is called Transyberin, is diuided in two, that is to wete the Vaticane and Ianiculum.

Vaticane

**Porta Septimiana.
Subtus Ianiculum.
Fontinalis**

The Vaticane was walled aboute by Leo the. iiii. byshop, and called Citta Leonia after hys owne name, and is wel knowe from Ianiculum, because that going from the one to the other, it behoueth to passe throughe the gate called Septimiana, sometymes called Subtus Ianu, or Fontinalis: wherby it is euident, that the Vaticane or Borgo San Piero (as they now cal it) was neuer any part of Rome vntill Leos tyme. But Ianiculum in Transyberin was ingned vnto Rome by Ancus Martius, iiii. kyng of the Romaynes, and is affirmed to be the same citee, that the god Ianus builded and dwelled in, like as many wyte Saturnia, that Saturne builded, was againste it on the other side of the water, in the place that we call nowe Campidoglio: thoughe

some

some holde opinion it shoulde be at Sutri.

Of the conduites of water.

FRONTINUS writeth, that for the space of 441. yeres after the edificacion of Rome, the Romaines bled none other but the water of Tyber, of such welles and springes as were founde within the citee. But from the tyme of Appius Claudius they haue had so much water brought by conduites vpon arches, through the mountaines, and some vnder ground, that no citee of all the worlde coulde be better serued. And the maner was this. When they had taken a spring, and had brought the water of it to the citee, than was there a place made to receiue it, closed about with walles like a castel: from the whiche, pypes were lated to serue as well the common people in the open stretes, as also the nobility, and such as were hable to haue water in their owne houses. And so (as Strabo writeth) it seemed that riuers ranne haboundantly through the citee, and almost euery house had chanelles and conduites with cisternes to preserve the water. For Marcus Agrippa in one yere caused. 700. pondes. 105. fountaignes, and 130. castels to be made, besides a number of other goodly edifices for the maintenance of these fresh waters: amongst which I shal recite the principallest.

First the water called Appia was conueyghed by *Aqua Appia* vpon high arches of stone out of the Lucullane territorye, the space of. viii. milles, and brought in betwene the hill Auentine and the hill Celius: but now there remaineth nothing of the same that can be seen.

The description

Aqua Martia.
Anfeta.
Traiana

Claudia.

Pli H. 36
nat. histor.

Auiena.

Cristiana,
Virginia

An other, Aqua Martia, sometime called Anfeta, last
ly Traiana, came out of y^e lake Fucinus, & serued prin-
cipally to drinke, where most part of the rest serued for
other best: and this was brought by mine through the
mountaines and by arches aboue ground. xliii. miles.
Aqua Claudia was brought, 35. miles from .ii. foun-
taines Ceruleus, and Curtius, part of the waye vpon
wonderful arches of square stone, whiche are yet to be
seene bothe within and many miles without the citee.
Plinie saith, that the conueighaunce of this water did
cost. 555. thousande Sextertia, whiche make aboue, lx.
thousand talentes, and rekenyng euery talent at. 130. li.
sterlyng (whiche I thinke was the least) the summe a-
mounteth to. vii. millions and. viii. hundred thousande
poundes of oure money: whiche as it seemeth a summe
impossible to be gathered together, and more incredible
to be spent in one worke, so is the maiestee of that build-
dyng wonderful, that in maner I am abashed to write
the trowth thereof, for I woulde not haue beleued it my
selfe, if I had not seene it. And Frontinus writeth, that
these arches in some places were. 109. foote high.
Then was there the olde and the new Auiena, the one
wherof was broughte. xlii. miles of, and at lengthe ioy-
neth with the water Claudia, and is receiued bypan
those arches before mencioned.
¶ Divers other waters there were, so long here to rec-
ken, because of all these waters that were wont to come
to Rome, can be found no moe at this day but one, cal-
led Trusiana, and aunciently named Virginia, which
runneth vnder the ground by the gate Pinciana, & pour-
geth vnder y^e hill called Monte degli hortuli: fro whence
it is

it is cōseighed abroad to serue al parties of the citee, because in rome ther is none other good water to drinke.

Of the decay not onely of these conduites, but also of the other antiquitees be dyuers opinions. Some ascriue, that the Gothes, the Vandales, and the other barbarouse nacions, that so often destrōed Rome, were causers and doers of it. Some other ascribe the faulte to tyme, mother and consumer of all thynges. Other saye, that nother the barbarouse nacions, nor yet tyme ought to be blamed for it, but rather the greedy beastynesse of theim, that bothe within the citee and without, regarded not to spoyle those noble antiquitees, to garnishe and beautifie therewith theyr priuate buildinges.

Of the Thermes.

You shall vnderstande, that the Romaynes bled oftentimes to baie theim selves, wherfoze at the first, priuate men made them stewes or hotchoults of theyr owne. But afterwarde (as a thyng necessarye for the common wealthe) The Emperours gaue them selves to the makinge of these Therme. Of whiche Blondus rekeneth. xii. & Fuluius saith. xlviii. namyng them Agrippine, Neroniane, Alexandrine, Titiane Dioclesiane, and the reste. These were not onelye common baines for washing, but also sumptuous houses, goodly chaumbers, faire walkyng places, & euerye other gallaunt busidng, that mighte serue for the commoditee of theym that thither resorted. The pauesmentes were of fyne marbre wrought in colours, the vaultes suffrained on etche pillers of porfirie and finest mar-

The description

marble of one peece, A number of hotehouses in euery Therme, some seuerall, & some common, with lodging^s acco^rdyng, and offices assigned for the seruice of theim that would eate there, besides all other pleasures that were to be imagined. Insomuche that the emperours them selves many tymes woulde come thither openly, and be washed in the common houses. For it is written that the emperour Adrian entred on a day into one of the baynes, and findyng an olde souldiour there rubbinge hym selfe againste the marble stones, asked hym why he dyd so: The souldioure aunswere, because he had no seruauant. This aunswere so much pleased the Emperoare, that streight waye he not onely gaue thys souldiour a seruauante, but also honestly wherewith to mainteigne hym. Whoughe the same wherof the nexte day whan the emperour came to the same batne, diuers olde men were gotten in besoye, and were likewise rubbinge theim selves: who beyng demaunded why they did so, aunswere, because they had no seruantes. But Adrian perceiuyng they^r entent, called theym to hym, and shewed them howe they mighte well enoughe one rubbe an other.

Of all these goodlie Thermes, there remaineth none other but the broken walles, and the olde monstrous outnes, speciall^y of those two that were the greateste, Antoniane, and Dioclesiane, whose hugenes may be reckened as a wonder amongest the buildynges of the worlde.

adrian's
curtise,
and wyse-
dome.

Of the

Of the Naumachie.

There were certayne poudes of water called Naumachie, made of purpose so large, that smal shippes myghte mete in them. For lyke as the Romaynes were diligent in byngyng by theyr yowthe in feates of cheualrie. So also they exercised them in practise of the water, to make them no lesse experte by sea than by lande. For the which these Naumachie were made, speciallie for the triumphyng dayes, whan they vled to fight ship with ship, and whan also on the lande the horsemen shoulde be prouynge of theyr strengthes. So that in one spectacle you shoulde behold the feates of armes both by sea and lande, as most commonlye in Circulo maximo it was wont to be. But at this daye there scarcelye appeareth anye signe or token of those poudes, saue that euery man there can tell where some of them haue ben: as that befoze the fronte of Palazzo maggiore, an other vnder Monte degli hortuli, and one of Neros in the Mariscane. For now thorough lacke of water, sens the decate of the conduites, they are become drye ground, and conuerted into gardenas, pastures, and other vles.

Of the arches of triumphe.

The Romaynes vled to edifie certayne arches, and to dedicate theim vnto the names and memory of suche as had conquered straunge countreys, or returned victoriously from daungerous batailles.

The description

For the whiche they were receiued triumphantly into the citie, sitting on a riche chariotte, drawn with, iiii. white steedes, and their notable prisoners and spoile before them, with goodly representations of the gotten citie, towne, countreys and other things: and so passing through the citie, shoulde ride vnto the temple of Iupiter in Capitolio.

¶ There haue been many of these arches, but at this date, iiii. onely are to be knowen, that is to wete of Constantine, of Titus, of Severus, and of Domitian.

Arlus Constantini.

The first of Constantine standeth on the corner of the hill Palatinus, a litle besides Coliseo, and is yet meagrely sayre to beholde, were it not that the fine carued figures on both sides wrought in the harde marble, are battered, and almost defaced by the weather.

Arcus Titi.

The next of Titus and Vespasianus, is in the middle of the way called Sacra, wherein maye be seene the representation of the chariotte of triumphe, with the, xii. sergeauntes on the one syde, & on the other the spoyles of Ierusalem, that is to wete the golden candelsticke of seven braunches, the two tables of Moyses, the golden table and vessel of the Temple, with dyuers other thynges: whiche as Ioseph writeth, were lased by in the temple of peace.

Arcus Severi.

The arche of Septimius Severus standeth in the olde market place, nowe called Piazza Romana, at the foote of Campidoglio: and this is the fayrest of all the other, having finely grauen on both sides the representations of his battailes and victories, aswell by sea, as by lande, with the tytle in sayre Romayne letters, to whom it was dedicated.

Finally

Finally in the waye Flaminia, harde by the church of
 sainte Laurence in Lucina, is the arche of Domitian. Arcus Do-
 as they saye: and is now called *Arco di Tripoli*, no- milian.
 thyng of beautie comparable to any of the rest.

These arches are as it were gatehouses to passe thro-
 rough, but the finesse of the marble, & cutt out worke,
 manshipp the weth wel, that they were exceeding sum-
 tuouse, and moze beautifull than anye other kynde of
 buldyinge.

Of Theatres.

Like as the Romaines in theyr warres, triumphes
 and buldyinges exceeded all other nations of the
 world, even so did they in their feastes and spec-
 tacles: that is to wete in their playes and sightes deuysed
 for pleasure and recreation.

One while they recited comedies, an other while they
 vbled blurs soundes of instrument, to the Pandemonio,
 who was one that wth signes woulde counterfayte all
 maner of men, and declare his conceits as euidently, as
 if he shoulde haue spoken. Sometyme they had a num-
 ber of wilde beastes brought in, as Elephanes, Lions
 Tygres, and other like, against whome, men that were
 either condemned to death, taken in the warr, or fool-
 hardie felowes therunto hyred, shoulde be put to fight:
 and toren to peeces, vnlesse their chance were won-
 derful. Sometyme againe the maisters of fence wpth
 theyr scholars, and many tymes the souldiours, woulde
 enter wth theyr sharpe swoordes, and there kyl one an
 other, to trie thein selves valyaunt. Sometyme they

The description

waslled, sometime they iustled, & sometime they fought
as it were in playne battayle, aswell by water as by
lande, with other lyke pastymes to longe here to re-
herse.

To beholde these thinges, at the begynnyng euerye
man toke suche place as he could get, but in proceſſe of
yeres whan theyr common wealth flourished, than they
deuided certaine skaffolds of boorde, with grices or ſtep-
pes one aboue another, and fastened theim on greate
beames made after the forme of an halfe circle, for the
commoditee of the moze number of people to sit vpon.

Whereof Plinie ſaith thus: Beholde the people Con-
querour of other countreys, and lord of all the worlde,
they that ouerthrowe realmes and nations, geue lawe
to ſtraungers, and be as it were a certaine diuine thing
amongest the humayne generacyon, stand here neuer-
thelesse dangerouſſie on an engine, reioysynge whyle
they be in peryll.

Theatrum

This engine of tymber was called Theatre, and the
first that euer made any in Rome was Marcus Scau-
rus, whose Theatre receiued fourescore thousand per-
sons, & serued for 30. daies only. But to ease the greate
charges that the buildinge of suche Theatres required
from time to time, Pompeius buylded one of square
stone, sufficient for 80. thousand persons: which Thea-
tre Nero at the receiuing of Tridates kinge of Arme-
nie, caused to be gilted cleane ouer in a daie.

Many of these Theatres haue ben in Rome, but the
most notable were these sit. of Pompeius, of Marcellus
and of Cornelius Balbus: of which there remaineth
so litle memozye at this day, that almost no man can tel

where

where they stode.

Finally the Amphitheatre, now called Coliseo, is yet ^{Amphitha-} standing, one of the perfectest to be seen amongst all ^{atrum.} Coliseo, the antiquities of Rome, and may in deede be accounted one of the wonders of the worlde. For though parte of it be already fallen downe, and the reste decayne daily, yet is it not so defaced, but that you may see perfectlie, what it hath been, aswell for the meruaylouse height, greate circuite, and sayze done; as also for the excellent workmanship and proportion. It is rounde bothe without and within, from the ground within bys wardes, it riseth vniformely one steppe above an other steeperwise to a very great height: so that to beholde the thewe in the bottome, whiche I thinke is aboue .300. yardes in compasse, there might sitte an hundred thousande persons at theyr ease. And because they vsed to grauel the grounde, whan any greate pastime shoulde be, therefore in the latine tongue some aucthours haue called it Arena: notwithstanding they haue knowen ^{arena.} the name to be Amphitheatrum, which signifieth two Theatres ioyned together, and after most opinions this Amphitheatre was builded by Vespasian and bys sonne Titus.

There is also an other Amphitheatre yet to be seen, edified by Statilius Taurus; but it is so decayed, that it scarcely deserueth to be spoken of.

Of the Circles.

AS for the cercles, whiche serued to lyke purposes ^{Circuli.} of spectacles, because there is none of them at
 H. III. r his

The description

this day, that hath any similitude of theyr auncient beynge: I can saye nothing to them.

Of the Porches.

Of the solemne and sumptuous porches or vaultes, that many auctours write, were made thorough al the principal stretes of Rome to couer the people from sonne & raine, there be none nowe any thinge lyke, neither for the pillers, nor yet for the proportion. Where is the porche of Nero, that Tranquillus writeth, extended forthe ryght, .iii. thousande paces: where be the porches of Liua, of Octavius, and of his syster Octauia, of Pompeius, of Severus, and of many others: Amongest all of that sort there is but one remaignynge, whiche standeth before the dore of the temple Pantheon, situate on .xvi. wonderfull sayre pillers set in .iii. rowes.

Of Temples.

Pantheon.

The temple of Pantheon is the perfectes of al the antiquitees, and standeth whole vnto this daye. It is round, and hath but one gate to enter in at: the doores wherof are of brasie, very great and antique. The circuite with in forth is very large, and the height proportionable. The rooffe is all vaulted like the halfe of an egge, of so greate compasse, that it is a wonder to behold: and in the vpper toppe is a greate rounde hole, through whiche the temple receiveth light. For other wyndow it hath none, and yet is the light so much, that it all

if all the sides were made in wyndowes, it could geue no more: vnder the which in the middelt of the floore is such holow prouision made, that the raine passeth alway wythout offendynge the eye or the place. Finallye the walles are furnished round aboute with faire marble, and a number of goodly pillars; so that the temple being old, is yet thought goodlier than any new building that can be found, and is now called Santa Maria Rotonda.

S. Maria
Rotonda.

Many other temples haue ben in Rome, that for the most part are likewise conuerted into churches, which to describe shoulde be an endlesse worke. But because of the alteration and ruyns that tyme hath wroughte, they trewe antiquitee cannot be declared: Wherefore I wyl shew where some stode, and into what churches some other haue ben conuerted.

The auncient temple of Romulus is now called San Cosmoe Damiano, not much vnlke the buildinge of Pantheon, with the porch before, and the gates lykewise of brasse.

Templum
Romuli.

The ruine of the Temple of peace, whiche was the T. Pacis, beautifullest and richest of al the world, is yet to be seen betwene Palazzo and Exquise.

The temple of Ianus, whiche was neuer open but in time of warre, was nere vnto the church now called San Georgio in Velabro.

T. Iani

The temple of Isis is now called, Santa Maria in Aquiro.

T. Isis

The Temple of Minerua is now a house of friers called Santa Maria Sopra la Minerua.

T. Min-
erac.

And the temple of Pallas was in the place before the

T. Palla-
dis.

The description

porche of Faustina, now called Pallara.

As for the temples of Fortune and Concorde, which were many, besides a number of temples dedicated to the other Goddes and Goddessees, there is none nowe worthe to be seen.

Of the Pyllers.

It shalbe necessary to declare, that there be, *iiii.* kinde of pyllers, rounde, square, and striped.

These are allwaies of one peece, and the chapter of the piller called in latine Epistylum, is the stone that standeth on the toppe of the pyller, like as the base called Basis in latine, is the stone that the piller standeth on.

Of whiche bases there be. *iiii.* sundry facions, Ionici, Dorici, Italici, & Corinthij, or Tusculani, as Vitruuius writeth. These kyndes of pyllers were so common amongst the Romaines, that almost he was no man, that had not a number of pyllers in his house, of white, red, or diuers coloured marble, or of porphyrie, or other like riche stone: for the gray is not accounted marble in Italie, but gray stone. So that to consider the infinite number of these pyllers that were in Rome, and that yet amongst the old ruines are to bee scene, it seemeth a wonder where they should be had, and what a treasure they coste. For I haue scene dyuers almost two fathome aboute, and about. 40. foote hyghe. And nothyng more earnestly desired I, than to see some of those wonderfull temples or edifices vppon pyllers in theyr olde facion, with the presence of some of those ancient Romaines, that with their naked maiestee durst passe

pasſe through the power of theyꝛ victorions enemies, as Liuiꝛ wꝛiteth, that Caius Fabius dyd, when the frenchemen had gotten Rome, and beſieged the Capitoll. But to my purpose.

¶ Besides theſe pillers of one ſtone theyꝛ uſed in Rome **Structiles** certayne pillers called **Structiles**, that were made of diuers ſtones. Theſe were dedicated to the perpetual memorie of the twoꝛthie emperours, as the two that yet ſtand doe wel witneſſe.

The one is called the piller of Traiane, whyche is 123. foote hyghe, and haſe a ſtaier of. 185. ſteppes wyth 123. ſteppes, whereby I haue gone to the toppe. It hath 45. little wyndowes that geue light inwarde, and is all of white marble, ſo well and ſinelye grauen, wyth the ſtoꝛies of all Traians warres & victoꝛies, that it ſhould ſeeme impoſſible to peſiecte a thying better.

The other piller dedicate vnto Antonius Pius, muche after the ſame ſoꝛte, hath his warres and dooynges ſet ſooꝛthe in figures grauen, and is. 63. foote hyghe, but muche moꝛe decated than Traianes piller: ſoꝛ it is cleſte almoſte from the toppe to the baſe, ſo that if it be not looked vnto the ſooner (as I thynke it ſhall not) it muſt needes fall.

There was ſuche an other piller made all of porphyꝛie, which Conſtantine toke downe, and carted to Conſtantinople. Beſydes diuers other pillers, as one of Ceſar, an other called **Milliarium aureum** **Mœnia**, and **Lactaria**, and many moꝛe, wherof no parte remaineth now that can be knowne,

The description

Of Obeliskes.

Obeliscus is a stone, that beyng broad and square at the foote, ascendeih proportionallye to a sharpe pointe . Of which sorte of stones, there be but viii. now to be seene in Rome : notwithstandinge that Fuluius asseymeth, there haue ben. xl. great & 42. small
These Obeliskes were fyrst inuented by the Aegyptians, and dedicated to the son, not onely because it hath the likenesse of the sonne beame, but also because they bled by the shadow therof to trie diuers conclusions of Astronomie, and speciallye the houres of the day: as by diuers caraces and figures that are yet seene in some of them, it doth evidently appeare.

And a wonder it is to thinke, what an vreasonable enterpryse it was to digge one of them out of the mountaine, seeing it could not be had but by cuttyng awaye all the grounde and rocke aboue it.

In effecte there is but one of thesm standyng, whych is in the Vaticane, on the southsyde of saincte Peters church, called La Guglia, beinge .72. foote highe of the very stone it selfe, besides the base and. iiii. great Lions of marble that it is set vpon : and hath on the toppe a great ball of brasse gilt, with the ashes of Caesar in it, as some holde opinion.

Octauia August brought two very great ones from Heliopoli in Aegypt, the one wherof beyng. 122. foote hygh, brake in two peces, as they woulde haue erected it, and the other of. 110. foote lieth in Campo Martio. Where lieth one in Girulo, that sometyme was Salustus gardene, and two other lie besides the church of saincte

La Guglia

saincte Roke, the one of theſe in the high waye.

The other two are but ſmal, and ſeeme rather peeces than whole ſtones, the one is in the garden of Ara: celi in the Capitoll: and the other is the ſtreete of San Macutio.

Of Pyramides.

There is no more Pyramides in Rome but one, which the commo people take to be the ſepulchre of Remus, but the letters graven therein witneſſe it to be the ſepulchre of Caius Ceſtius, one of the beſt men that was ordeyned ouer the ſeaſſes of the ſolemne ſacrifices. And where as Liuius writeth, that Remus was buried in the hill Auentine, wherof it was named Remuria, it is manifeſt, that this Pyramides was not his ſepulchre, for it ſtandeth in the playne, and in the very wall of the citie, betwene the gate of San Paolo, and the hill Teſtaccio. The ſhaper of it is lyke vnto a pointed pyramant, and is made of ſquare ſtone, ſo great at the foote, that aſcendyng vniſormely to the top, it is higher than any towre of the wall.

In the high wayes without the citie ſpecially ſtamlia, Salaria, & Appia be many like ſeene of muche leſſe quantitie: But for the moſt part they are either decayed or decayng. Like as the Cimiteri, which were vaultes vnder earth, that ſerued of later tyme for Chriſtian ſepulchres, whiche with other like kind of buildynges, by proceſſe of yeres are wozen and come to naught.

The description

¶ Of Colosses and images.

Colossus signifieth an unreasonable great image such as that of Apollo, that was brought out of Apollonia in Ponto, & set in the Capitol, whose height was. xxx. cubites, & that of Iupiter in Campo Martio, commonly called Pompeianus. But aboue all that euer were, the Colosse at Rhodes exceded. For it was. 70. cubites highe, and so proportionate to that heighte, that lyng on the earthe (after it was shaken downe by an earthquake) fewe men could embrace one of the fingers, and manye of the holowe places in the iointes, seemed valeis or deepe bottomes: so that it is written, the Sarasines after they had gotten Rhodes, laded aboue. 900. Camelles with the brasse that they pyked out of that Colosse,

¶ Nero caused one to be made of, 120. foote high to his owne likenesse, and sette it in the porche of hys golden house, whiche afterwarde was remoued thence vnto the Amphitheatre, and therof it is thought it toke the name of Coliseo.

Finally I can find no moze of these Colossi whole at this day, but one head, one hand, and a foote, that lie before the dozes of the Conseruatori in the Capitol.

It is true that in manye places of Rome are seen wonderful peeces of marble, that should seeme to haue been membez of those Colossi; but they are in maner cleane defaced.

¶ Likewise of the excellent images, bothe of brasse and marble, as well of men as of horse, many peeces yet remaine: though scarcelye woozth the name of good Images,

images, as they appeare nowe.

Fulvius writeth, that there were in Rome. 24. horses of brasse gylte, and. 114. of Iron, besydes a number of mens images on horsebacke and on foote of marble and other mattier. But of all these there are nowe none to be seene, saving one of brasse on horsebacke at Saint Iohn Lateranes, whiche some ascribe vnto Marcus Aurelius Antoninus, some to Lucius Verus, & some to Seuerus; and another there is in the Capitoll called, Il gran Villano.

In deede there be diuers bodyes without heades, I thinke because some straunger desiringe in those antiquities, haue broken of the heades to carie them away. Amongest all other Constantins, sonne of Constantine, being come out of Greece to see Rome; and arryuyng in the strete called Forum Traiani, rested all amazed to beholde the wonderfull beautie thereof; and despayryng with him selfe to be hable to bring to passe any of those thynges that were before his eyes, said, he woulde see, whether he could make such an other horse of brasse as was there vnder Traiane in the midst of the markette place. Wherevnto one of his skilfull men present, named Ormisda, answered, that he were best fytt to make suche an other stable to put his horse in. And if emperours thein selves haue meruailed at these thynges, why shoulde not other men wonder at thein?

Of the hill Testaschio.

If the common repozte be true, this hill is one of the notablest thynges amongeste the antiquities of

The description

Rome: because (as they say) the Romaines ordeyned, that all tributes, which were brought yere to Rome, should be laied in pottes made of the earth of the countreys from whens it came, whiche pottes after the money was paid, should be brought to the place where this hill lieth, there to be broken and remaigne on an heape for a perpetuall memory of the Romaine empyre. And beyng well considered, it shall appeare, that there can be no deuise lyke vnto this, to haue a thyng endure for euer. For if the hill had been made of any matter worth the carying away, it should haue been spoyled longe ere this tyme: but because there is nothyng to be gotten, saving potshardes, therfore it remaigneth whole as none other antiquitee dooeth. And although learned men allow not this vulgare opinion, thinking it hath growen rather of the broken pottes, that haue ben throwen out of the. vii. colledge of potters, founded by Numa Pompilius, yet beholdynge aduisedlye the place, whereon it standeth, beyng the fayrest plaine within the walles of Rome, me semeth it halfe incredible, that the Romains would suffer so fayre a ground to be occupied with potshardes: vnlesse there were some further purpose in it, than I can imagine. For the hill is little lacke of halfe a mile compasse, hygher a great deale than any toun in the towne wall, and so easie to get by on euery side, that I haue ridden by at the one end, and downe at the other and yet is the earthe of it so thynne, that diggyng. iiii. ynches deepe, you shal finde potshardes.

De Hippodromo.

Betwene this Testacchio and the hyl Auētime is a faire grene aūciēty called Hippodromus, where some yeres at throstide, the Romaines vse to thys date, to tourney on horsbacke, & among other pastimes, they tie two bulles to the tayle of a carte, and so dzyue the carte from the toppe of Testacchio downe into the playne, and he that fyrst can take the carte and bulles, shall haue theim: But if the bulles bzeake lose, as many tymes they dose, they make soule woꝝke amongeste the people er they be taken, so that sometimes they are faine to kyl theim. Some holde opynion, that this playe was fyrste deuised by Tarquiniur Priscus, to be celebrated in Februarye in honour of the infernal gods.

Of Graners and Arsenales.

On the other side betwene Testacchio & Tyber haue ben. 140. graners for cozne, lōg and large, as by some of the olde foundacions it doeth yet appeare. And somewhat nerer the foote of the hyl Auentine, were the sellers and vaultes for saulte, and al manner of merchaundise: with the Arsenales, where their shippes and galleys were made: of whiche at this daye is scarce any signe to be perceiued.

Essentially it were to tediousse a matter for me to speake of euery notable thyng in Rome. For if Blondus, noꝝ yet Fuluius Italians boꝝne, dwellyng in Rome, & wel learned men, haue trauayled therin, and wolde not yet vndertake fully to descriue those antiquitees, should I

The description

Sepulchre
of Bacchi.

a straunger, that taried there but a smal time, enterpryse
to do it: And yet amongst all other I had almoste forgotten
the sepulchre of Bacchus, that lieth in a litle old
temple besides the church of Saint Agnes without the
walles, moze notable for the value of the stone than for
the woorkemanship . For it is of fine redde porphire,
plaine and square lyke a chesse, and so greate, that the
onely couer woull requyre a great force to lifte it vp: so
that my guide saied mereli, if I had company suffi-
cient to raise by this stone, I woulde one night see what
were within: meanyng that the god Bacchus could not
be buried there without some treasure.

¶ And to the intent that generally men may the better
vnderstande the sortes of marble, and maners of build-
dyng, wherwith the citee hath been aunclently beauti-
fied, I shal here rehearse one sayng of Fuluius.

The say-
inge of
Fuluius.

The aunclient greate buildynges, aswell publyke as
pryuate, for the moste parte were founded vpon greate
square stones, to the end that the waight and substance
of the buyldyng should be the moze stedfast, euery stone
so ioyned to other with yron claspes, that they needed
no morter. And than the wal from the foundacyon vpr-
wardes was made of stones, that weighed not passe a
pounde weight a peece, layed together proportionallye
chekerwyse. The fronte of the buyldyng was moste
commonly wrought after the maner of a net, or perget-
ted either with a faire white mixture, or elles with tesse,
and some couered finely with thin marble, or with cer-
taine plates of latine gylte. The vaultes and
roofof the chaambres were trymmed eyther wyth
glasse, with leade, with tesse, or els with very fine pei-
nynges.

things; and the floozes vnder foote made some of glasse
and some of the finest marble, or other pleasaunt deuys-
es of diuers makynge.

¶ They had many kyndes of straunge marble, as white
marble of the Ile of Paro and of Carrara, and that
whiche cometh from Laconia the pleasauntest of all.
The redde marble not vnlike the masard, with certayne
white spottes, whych they call porphirite. The bloud-
die marble that groweth in Troade. The blacke mar-
ble called Luculleus. The spotted marble called
Serpentine. The Onichite brought out of Arabia.
The alabaster, and some marble transparente, that is
to be seene through, as the Fengite, with diuers others

Hyndes of
Marbles.

¶ Of the present astate. of Rome.

¶ If the ground conteigned within the wall, scar-
cely the thirde parte is now inhabited, and that
not where the beaury of Rome hath been, but for
the most part on the plaine to the water side, and in the
Flatteane: because that sens the bisshoppes beganne to
reigne, euery man hath coneted to buld as nere the
courte as myght be. Neuerthelesse those streetes and
buldynges that are there at this time are so sayre, that
I thinke no citie dooth excell it, by reason they haue
had the beautifullest thynges of the antiquities befoze
reherced to garnyshe theyr houses withall. Especially
the bisshop, his Cardinales, prelates & other members
of his churche, who haue all at theyr commaundement.
For, though the Romains haue in theyr herts vnto this

The description

dare a certayne memozy of theyr auncient libertes, whiche they haue attempted manye tymes to recouer: yet both the bishop kepe the in such subiectio, that they dare not ones stirre for their lyues, but speake they maye what thei list, so it be no treason: and therfoze many times you shal here theim ralle on the bishop and his officers that it is a wonder. In effect the present astate of Rome in comparisn of the auncient astate deserueth not to be spoken of, & yet I beleue, that in the Romaynes most glozie, there was neuer halfe so much pompe vsed as nowe. What a wo:ld it is to see the pryde and abhominacion, that the Churchemen there maintaigne: what is a kyng: what is an emperoure in hys maiestee? Any thynge lyke to the Romaine bishop? No surely, no: I would not wishe theim so to be. And so the entent you maye the better perceiue it, you shall vnderstand, that on Christmas day, the yere of our lord 1547. Paule the thyrde beyng bishop, I noted his coming to church, because it was a principal feast celebrated in Pontificalibus. Therfoze early in the morning I resorted to the palaice, and there waited the cominge of the Cardinales, that for the most parte lie in the citie, & to come to saint Peters, muste passe Ponte Sant Angelo, where is an old order, that whan so euer any Cardinall passeth the brdge, there is a peece of ordynance shotte of in the castell: for an honoure that the bishop is bounde to obserue towards his byetherne. I had not ben longe in the palaice, but I harde two peeces shotte of at ones, wherby I knew that two Cardinales were compng, and therfoze resorted to the gate to see theim and their traine.

From Cattel Sant' Angelo to Saint Peters staires. there is an exceedinge faire strete, & freight & leuel more than a quarter of a myle long, called Borgo San Pietro, in the further ende wherof I sawe these Cardinales come, and therewith out of the bishops palaice came his garde of Suizzers al in white harness, and there alongest befoze the gate made a lane halfe on one syde and halfe on the other, with their. ii. drummes & a tyke befoze them. And as sone as the Cardinales appoched, the drummes and tife began to playe, and so continued til the Cardynalles were well entred amongeste the gard. Than the trumpettes blew by an other wylye, til the Cardinales were almoste at the gate, and as they shoulde enter, the shalmes began to playe, and ceased not tyll they were alyghted, and mounted by the staires to the bishopps lodging.

The lyke cerimonies were vsed vnto all the Cardinales that came, whether one came alone or many together. And there tarped more than. ii. houres harknyng to this gunneshot and mery pipyng, and reked aboue. 40. Cardinales that came thus rydynge, sometime one alone, and sometime. iii. or. iiij. together.

There was no Cardinal that came without a greate traine of gentylme and prelates, wel horsed and appointed, some had. 40. some. 50. and some. 60. or more nexte befoze euery of theim rode. ii. henchemen, the one carryng a coushyn and a riche clothe, and the other a piller of syluer, and the Cardinales theim selves apapyled in robes of crimson chamlet, with redde hattes on their heades, robe on mayles.

When they were all come to the palaice, and had

The description

waited a while in the chamber of presence, the bishop him selfe with the.iii. crested mitre full of scabbellcs, in a veraye riche cope, with Hoors of crimson velvet, sette with pprecious stones, and in all his other pontifical apparaille, came forth, and at the chamber doze satc him downe in a chaier of crimson velvet, throughte the whiche renneeth two stauces covered with the same.

Thus beyng sette, the pzelates & clergy, with the other offycers passed on afoze hym . Whiche are suche a numbre, as were able to make the muster of a battaile, if they were wel ozdzed in the fielde, Dataries, Threasorers, Clerkes of the Chamber, Penitētiaries, Presbendaries, Notaries, Protonotaries & a thousand more, eche order of them, in his diners denisse of parlyament robes, al in skarlet, and for the most part finely surred. Than came the double crosse, the sword and the imperial harte, and after that the Cardinall by two & two, and betwene euery two a greate route of gentilmē.

Than came the ambassadours, & herre them the bishop him selfe blessing al the waye, and caried in his cheyze by. viii. men clothed in longe robes of skarlet: and on either side of hym went his garde makinge Rome, and cryng abasso abasso, for they that woul not willingly knele, shalbe made knele by force. And I thinke verily the foremost of this order was distant from the hindermost more than a quarter of a myle.

Thus whan he came into the middell of the church against the sacrament of the autler, he turned him selfe towarde it, and bowyng his heade a litle, seemed to make a certayne familiare reuerence.

Than was he caried into the chapel, brought behinde the

the autler (foz the autler standeth in the middest open e-
uery way) and there in a trone of wonderfull maiestee
was set vp as a god.

The Cardinales then bestowed them selves after their
auncientes in certaine stalle s, some what lower aboute
the queere. I han late the Ambassadors, and o-
ther pzelates at theyr seate. And so whan they were
set, the chapell beganne the offitorie of the masse, and
sange so sweetely, that me thought I neuer heard the
lyke. At the communion of the masse the Cardynall
that celebated, brake the host in .iii. peeces, wherof he
eate one hym selfe, and the other two he deliuered vpon
the paten to a Cardynall appoincted, that brought it to
the bishop, and in his pzesence (foz feare of popsonyng)
roke assaye of the seconde peece: and deliuered hym the
thyrde.

¶ Whan the masse was finished, the bishop gave hys
benediction, with many yeares of pardon, and than re-
turned to the palatce in lyke order as he came.

¶ As foz the pompe he vseth whan he rideth abroad, I
neede not to speake of it, considering what I haue sayd,
sayng that you shall vnderstand, how Corpus domi-
ni is alwayes caried in a tabernacle befoze hym on a
white hackeney, that is taught to kneele both at the set-
tyng vp, and also at the takyng downe of it.

¶ In dede the bishop foz his owne ordinarie kepeth no
great house, but his traine excedeth al that I haue seen.
Foz euery Cardinal & pzelate kepeth house accordinge
to his habilitie and some of theim are so precise, that if
one of theyr retinew be myssyng, whan they goe out of
theyr dozes, be it gentelman or other, he forfeiteth a cer-

The description

tain peece of money, which he is constrained forthwith to paye. And lyghtlye there is none of theym withoute iii. or. liii. payes trimmed like pange pynces, for what purpose I wolde be loth to tell.

¶ If I shoulde saye, that vnder theyr longe robes they hyde the greatestt pryde of the worlde, it might happen some men wolde beleue it, but that they are the basnest men of all other, theyr owne actes doe wel declare.

For theyr ordinarie pastime is to disguise them selves, to go laugh at the Courtisanes houses, and in the throyng time, to ride maskyng about with thesm, which is the occasion that Rome wanteth no folle dames, specially the strete called Iulia, whiche is moze than halfe a myle longe, saye buylded on both sydes, in maner inhabited with none other but Courtisanes, some worthe x. and some worthe. xx. thousand crownes moze or lesse as theyr reputacyon is. And many tymes you shal see a Courtisane ride into the countrey, with. x. or. xii. horse waityng on hir.

¶ Briefely by reporte, Rome is not without. 40000. harlottes mainteigned for the most part by the clergye and theyr folowers, so that the Romaines them selves suffer theyr wives to goe seldome abrode, either to church or other place, and some of thesm scarcelye to looke out at a lattise window, wherof theyr prouerbe sayeth, In Roma vale piu la putana, che la moglie Romana, that is to say, in Rome the harlot hath a better lyfe, than she that is a Romaines wyfe.

¶ In theyr apparalle they are as gorgeouse as may be, and haue in theyr goyng such a solemne pace, as I neuer sawe. In conclusion to liue in Rome is moze costly than

than in any other place, but he that hath the money maye haue there what hym lyketh. But now remaineth to speake of the new buldynges.

Of sainte Peters church.

The church of sainte Peter standeth somewhat alofte on the hill Vaticane, and hath before it a very faire and large roume, as it were a market place: in the middelt wherof is a goodly fountayne of marble, that gusheth out water of a great height.

From this place by to the church are aboute. 30. steps or grices of square stone, the sollemnest that I haue seene. For they are almoste. 30. paces longe. At the toppe of this staire, ouer the middelt of a goodly porch is a great image of saint Peter of fine marble. With in that is a large court paved with fine marble, in the middelt wherof is an antique pineapple of brasse of a wonderful biggenesse, and so many images, pillers and other riche stones, that haue been gathered out of the antiquities, and brought thither to furnishe the new buldynges withal, that it shoulde be an endlesse worke to descriue them. Oute of this court is the entrie into the church, which hath. iii. great gates of brasse, wherin the stories of the actes of Eugenie the. iiii. are synelye grauen.

This church within is nothinge faire to the exte, but it hath in it many beautiful and fine thynges, as the tabernacle of marble, where (they say) Christes bodye, and one of the. iii. nayles lieth, the goodly brasse sepulture of Sixtus the. iiii. the brasse images of saint Peter
and

The description

and Paule, a numbꝛe of goodlye pylers, and bñers oꝛ
ther thynges.

But aboue all the newe buildyng, if it were finished,
wolde be the goodliest thyng of this worlde, not onelye
foꝛ the anlike pylers that haue ben taken out of the an-
tiquitees, and bestowed there, but also foꝛ the greatnesse
and excellent good propozcion that it hath. . Fewer-
thelesse it hath been so many yeres adoyng, and is yet so
vñperfect, that most men stand in dout, whether euer it
shalbe finished oꝛ no.

In the middell of this newe buildyng is a pꝛeatye cha-
pell, toheretn the bishop, with all his Cardinallies and
clergie, vse to celebꝛate theyꝝ solemne ceremonies.

Of the bishops palatice with Beluedere.

The bishops palatice foloweth to the church, whych
to myne eye seemeth muche greater than goodly:
notwithstandyng the lodgynges withinfoꝛth are
falle, but I can moste commend the staire, that goeth
downe from the palatice to the church, almost a quarter
of a myle about, so sayre pauered and playne, that a man
may easily ride vp and downe.

About .iii. quarters of a myle from the palatice is the
bishops banquetting house, called Beluedere, one of the
finest buildynges that is to be seen, so riche, so plesante,
and of so goodly a pꝛospecte, that it seemeth almoste an
other paradyse. . The garden walled round about, is
ful of faire oringe trees, and hath in the middell a good-
lie fountaine with perfect plottes in molde of the riuer
of Nile

of Nile in Aegypt; of Tyber, that runneth through Rome. Besides the images of fine marble of Romulus and Remus playng with a woulfes teares, of Apollo with his bowe and arrowes, of Laocoonte, with his. ii. children wrapped aboute with serpentes, of Venus beholdinge little Cupido; of the sorrowfull Cleopatra, lyeinge by the ryuer syde; and of dyvers other to longe to reherse.

Of Castel Sant' Angelo.

This Castell is no lesse notable than some of the rest. It standeth on the banke of Tyber in maner cleane withoute the towne, and hath. iii. wardes, one within an other: excellently wel builded and strong, and after most mens opinions is impregnable, vnlesse it be by famine.

The two inner wardes stand vpon the sepulchre of the emperor Adrian, which is a certaine blackemasse of earth of a great height, compounded of certaine mixtures, whiche being dyed, is harder and moze durable than stone it selfe. Vpon this foundation Adrian made his tombe, and decked it with suche ornaments of marble and other sumptuous thynges, as made it seeme one of the rarest thyngs of the worlde. But after it came to the bishops hand, considering the force of the place and strong foundation, thei converted it to a foytresse, and haue edified many goodly lodgings vpon it, so that oftentymes the bishop hym selfe lieth in it, and kepeth his court there.

¶ Of buildinges in general.

Finally there be a number of as saye palatces in Rome as in any other place of the worlde whereof it should be to long here to make perticuler mention; but specially the palatce that Paule nowe bisshoppe there hath builded, by the place called Campodi fiore, where Pompeius house stode in the old time, deserueth not to be forgotten. For he hath rooted out of the ruines of the antiquitees suche goodly marble pillers and other fine stone, which he hath bestowed on that house, that if he finishe it, as it is begunne, it woulde be the gaurentee thyng olde or new, that shal be founde agayne in all Europe, and he hath called it after hys owne name Palazzo Farnese.

¶ Abbridgement of the lyues of the
Romayne Bysshoppes.



Because my pryncypall purpose tenderth to descriue the estatcs of Italy, I nede not to vse much circumstance, either in matters of relygyon, or yet in writinge all the liues of the Bysshops of Rome. Wherefore entenyng to begin at Siluester, the fyrst bisshop there that had any thing in perpetuities, I haue thought good to declare the diuers opinions of theyr original.

¶ Some auncient authours affirme, that Peter one of
Chri

Christes Apostles, after that he had sufficiently confesmed the church in Asia, & confuted the errour of those Christians that allowed circumcision, came to Rome the second yere of Claudius Emperre, and there was received of the congregation as bishop. In which office he ministered. 25. yeres, and at laste was crucified with the heade downewardes, the same daye that Paule the apostle was beheaded, the last yere of Neros reygne, and the. 37. yere after Christes death.

Contrariwise manye learned men at these daies are of opinion, that Peter never came in Rome, groundynge them selves vpon diuers reasons, as this. If Peter had comen thither, it could not haue ben written in the holy scriptures, either by Luke in the actes of the apostelles, or elles by Paule in some of his epistelles. Or if Peter were of that age, that it should seme he was at Christes death, and after continued in Antioche and other places so many yeres as is to be proued, it semeth impossible he should come to Rome, and there liue. 25. yeres. Wherefore they say, the ambitious bishops of Rome, to couer theyr usurped auctoritee, haue feygned this coming of Peter thither.

But this is clere, that from Peter to Siluester they reckon. 33. bishops whiche for the most parte were persecuted, and many of them martyred by the emperours officers. So that in manner they alwayes kepte themselves out of sight, preaching and ministring secretly without pompe affaies or solemne ceremonies. But from the tyme of Siluester hitherto, as they grewe in wealth, so encreased theyr worldly maiestie and ambition, as hereafter moze playnely appeareth.

As for the bishops names, the time of theyr reygne, and the date of our Lord, because that in a table I haue put them all together, I neede not perticularly to reherse enery one of them, but such as the occasion of my purpose shal necessarily require.

Siluester, 1.

Siluester the fyrst of that name, after he had been a certayne space in the hil Soratto, now called Mōte di San Siluestro, where for feare of persecucion, he hydde him selfe, hearynge of the good inclinacion that the emperour Constantine the fyrst was of, towarde Christian religion, came to Rome, and so discretely behaued him selfe that the Emperoure was conuerted to the right faith, and baptised.

Some wryte, that the occasion thereof proceeded of a myracle doen on Constantine, in reuocering his helth from the leprosie. But Platina thynketh that to be a fable, and in maner proueth it, thynkyng rather it proceeded of the signe of the crosse, that Constantine dyd see in the firmamente, vnder whiche he was promysed victorie, and so carryng a redde crosse in hys standarde befoze him, he overcame his enemy Maxētius, whereupon he gaue eare to Siluesters preaching & was conuerted. But whatsoeuer the occasion was, it is agreed, that Siluester baptised Cōstātine, who being christned turned many of the gentiles temples to christian churches: enduyng them with ornaments and possessions.

Not longe after, leauyng Rome to Siluester and his successours, as the clergie saie, Constantine wente to dwel at Bizantium, whiche he had than newly redified, calling it Constantinople after his owne name.

So that from thensfoorth the Christian faith began to flourish.

flourish over all the world: and therefore moste parte of all Christian churches sent to the byshops of Rome to learne of them the ceremonies and ordyes necessary to be vsed in the church, by reason wherof the emperours beyng residente elswhere, the Romaine bishops grewe in suche reputacion, that at length they became emperours theim selves.

And there is an auncient wrytyng in the Vaticane librarie, called the Donacion of Constantine, which is so vehement liberal, that it should seeme the emperour spoyled him selfe of all his glozy and honoure, and of a great part of his dominion, to geue them to the church of Rome; by auctoritee wherof the Romaine bishops haue taken vpon theim the imperial bestementes, ma-
testee, commaundementes and domynyon ouer some countreys.

In deede Laurentius Valla, an excellent learned man, and a Romaine bozne, hath wryten a boke to con-
found this Donation of Constantine, and proueth by so many reasons, that it hath been feigned by some by-
shop of later tyme than Siluester, that I am perswaded rather to beleue him than the Donation. In effect this Siluester was the first that prescribed a direct order of ministers in the church, and howe they shoulde be known in theyr degrees from the highest to the lowest: by whose tyme there spronge dyuers sectes amongst the Christians, as the Arrianes, Photines, Sabellianes, and others: for whose refozmacion the Nicene coun-
saile was called, but for al that those errours ceased not many yeres after.

Pert vnto Siluester Marke succeeded, who made his

L.iii.

clergie

The dona-
cion of
Constan-
tine.

Valla a-
gainst the
donacion.

Nicene
counsaile.

Marcus.

Of the liues of the

clergy like vnto a common wealth, exempting the same from all temporall iurisdiction, and further established a certaine order for the soleimne consecration of the Romaine bishops, that befoze vsed no pompe at all.

Felix.

¶ Felix the fyrste contented with the church of the Orient, partly for the Arian sect, but most of all for the supremacye of the church. For this Felix was the fyrst that claimed the inheritaunce of Peters keyes, for the which Constantius, the sonne of Constantine, banished hym out of Rome. But ere he had full ye been awaye. x. monethes the Emperoure dyed, and than retourned he from exile.

Liberius.

¶ Liberius the firste was bishop after him, who by the power of the Arrtanes, after the counsaile holden at Millaine, was banished, and Felix the second chosen in his place. But at length through the emperours displeasure, Felix was depased, and Liberius restored, who from that time forwarde fauoured the Arrtines, and ordeyned that euery bishop should be residence on hys benefice, and applie hym selfe to fede his flocke.

Felix. 2.

Damasus.

¶ Damasus succeeded Liberius, who contented with Ursicin^s, one of the decons of the church, that was likewise elected vnto the bishoprike. For the Romaines at that time were diuided into sectes, so that a number of either side were slaine, but finally Damasus preuailed, and Ursicinus was consigned to Paples.

This Damasus was afterwarde accused of adulterye: and therfore called 40. bishops together, and clerynge hym selfe of the crime, not onely punished his accusers, but also made a decree, Sub poena tallionis, that none of the clergy from thensforthe shuld be accused, whiche

Pœna

Pœna tallionis condemneth the accuser to the payne of the accusation, in case he prouet it not.

At this time lyued saint Hierome, that than hadde newly translated the bible out of Hebrue into the Latine tongue, and had set it forth to the edification of the church, which before had none other but the 70. interpreters.

Syrictus was the next bishop, in whose tyme, the sect Syritius of the Manichees encreased much: of al other most pestilent to our Christian religion. It beganne thorough one Maneph, a Persian bozne, who named hym selfe Christ, chose vnto him 12. apostles, reproued the old testament, folowed the new, and sayd, that Christ had but a fantasticall and a feigned bodye: and with wonders gate hym suche credite, that in maner all the east partes were corrupted with his heresses.

Finally Syritius, to reforme this & other like sectes, called a generall counsaile in Constantinople of. 1350. bishoppes, where these opinions were vniuersally condemned: though they could not be clerelye extinguished many yeres after.

But because it apperteyneth not to my purpose, to write of sectes and opinions, seying that til the tyme of Gregorie the seconde, about the yere of our lord. 720. the Romaine bishops trauailed most in matters of religion, beyng alwaies obedient and ruled by the emperours without peculier dominion: I woulde passe theym ouer for that space.

True it is, that in the tyme of Phoca the emperour, vpon controuerisie moued betwene the Patriarke of Constantinople and the bishop of Rome, for the super-

Supremacie of the
church.

made of the church, Bin face the.iii. obtained a priuilege of the Emperour, that he & his successours from thencefoorth should be taken for Primates and chiefe of all Christian bishops. By reason of whiche prefferment not lōg after the Romaine bishops, not onely to be on them, the direction of al other bishops, wyth graunting of Dispensacions, Iubilees, and Pardons, but also wold put forth the their feete to be kissed of princes, yea and of Emperours them selves, as appeareth by the example of the emperoure Iustinian, who kissed the feete of bishop Constantine the fyrst, as Platina affirmeth: like as other emperours sens haue accustomed to dooe. But for all that I fynde not, that any byshop openly contended with the Emperours yll the tyme of this Gregorie the seconde.

Gregorius.
us 2.

Images
put out of
churches

¶ Leo the.iii. emperour commaunded throughout his dominion, that all maner of images shoulde be cleane had out of the churches for anoydynge of Idolatrye, but the most part of the people disallowed this ordinaunce. Through comfort wherof this Gregorie so cōtended against it, that in most parts of Italy, the emperours officers executing their princē commandemēt in this behalf, were helpe to peces: as he erarke of Rauēna with his son, Marinus Spatarius duke of Rome wyth his son, & diuers other. Insomuch that Gregorie not onely sequestred from the emperours the customes and taxes due vnto him out of Rome and many other citees in Italye, but also called a counsaile, and excommunicated the emperour as an heretike, and leaunge the church in that affaie died. Blōdus saith, that the doer hereof was Stephen the seconde, who was bishop before this Gregorie:

gozie: but by agreement of most authours it should not seeme to be so.

¶ Than succeeded Gregozie the .iii. who folowynge the example of his predeceffour, called a counsaile in Rome of a. 1000. bishops, wherin the emperour was not only excommunicate againe, but also by decree depriued of his imperiall title and iurisdiction, and the Italion nation procured to rebel against him. Gregozie
us. 3

¶ By reason wherof whan Luitprandus kynge of the Lumbardes, had besieged the citee of Rome, the byshop could not for shame requyre succours of the emperour but was faine to sende to Charles Martel, than beyng chiefe ruler in Fraunce: by whose saye meane and entreatie, the Lumbarde withdrew his siege, the rather because Charles Martel had made hym his gossippe. Charles
Martel
And here beganne the fyrst amitie betwene the kinges of Fraunce and the Romaine church.

¶ Zacharie succeeded Gregozy, who to encrease the reputation of the Romaine church, at the intercession of Pepine, sonne vnto Charles Martel, than greate mayster of the Frenche kynges house, deposed Chilperike than being king, and made him a monke closed vp in a cloister, and afterwarde inuested Pepine kynge of Fraunce. For which acte the heyres of Pepine were euer after earnest frendes to the Romaine See. zacharias
Chilperike
deposed

¶ This Zacharie bypon occasion wente to Narnia to Luitprandus king of Lumbardes, & there partly with making a sermon, & partly with his humble behauiour, entred in such grace with the kinge, that he gaue to the church of Rome. iii. citees, Narnia, Ancona, & Humana, with a great baleyn in Sutri: whiche were the fyrste

notable possessions that the church of Rome obtained. For vntyl this time if the church had anye temporaltees, they were so smal, that they serued scarcely to the necessary finding of the ornaments and ministers. But after this they encreased so much, that they passed princely estates.

Stephanus.

24

After Zacharie folowed Stephen the secounde, in whose time Aristolfus or Aistolfus, kyng of Lombardes, troubled all the estates of Italie, by reason he had gotten Rauenna, with dyuers other cytees, and was like to haue subdned the rest. Wherefore the bishop that than had taken vppon him to rule the Romaines, sent for ayde vnto Constantine the. v. than emperor. From whom he receiued so smal comfort, that for his last refuge, he repayred to Pepine kyng of France, and procured him to come into Italie.

Pepine to gratifie the Romaine church, vsed all his power, & two seuerall times passed the Alpes againste Aristolfe. At the firste besieged Pavia, and there constrained Aristolfe to promise more than he performed in deede: and at the seconde tyme, for breach of that promise, to forgoe the exarchate of Rauenna, which he had before taken by force fro the emperours exarche there: so that Pepine at his lasteriage gaue vnto the Romaines, although the bishop vnder that name receiued it as his owne, all the territory of Pentapoli and Aemilia, from Placentia to Pesaro, lying betwene the Appenine hills, the Po, and the Adriatike sea: which are at the least. xi. or. xii. cities, with the countreis aboute them. Throughe the gifte wherof the Romaine bishoppe encreased no lesse in power than before time
it had

it had dooen in auctoritee.

True it is, that the emperoure sente his ambassadours unto Pepine, to claime this exarchate, whereof he & hys predecessours had ben in possessio. 170. yeres: but those ambassadours could not be heard.

Blondus saith, that these thynges happened in the time of bishop Gregoꝝ the. iiii.

Of this Paule I finde nothing notable, sauinge he Paulus. did his best to dissuade Constantine the. v. emperoure from the defacing and hurlyng of images oute of the christian churches: but Constantine, folowynge the example of his father Leo, not onely extirped the images, but also put diuers to death that wente aboute to Images. resist it.

After the death of Paule, Desiderius, king of the Constantinus. 2 Ambarbes made Constantine bishop by force, but with in a yere, the clergie of Rome deposed him, and elected Stephanus. 3 Stephen the. iiii. in hys place, in whose tyme happened no notable thing in the church, sauing that he with al the clergie immediatly after his election, in token of humilitie, wente barefoote in procession from the Laterane church to Saint Peters;

This Adrian was so haulte of courage, that whan Adrianus. Desiderius the king sent ambassadours to cōgratulate his election, and to enter in amitie with him, he answered theim, how may I trust him, that so ofte harhe broken his faith: wherewith Desiderius toke such displeasure, that he invaded the churches dominion, & toke by force Faenza Ferrara, Comacchio, Modelfetro Urbino, Senegalia, & was come as farre as Spoleti, sending to goe to Rome, had not. iiii. bishops mette him

¶ ii.

there

therewith an excommunicacion: for feare whereof he returned to Paulia without any more adoe. But because he held still in possession the foresaid citiees, the bishop of Rome procured Charlemaigne, than french king, to come into Italie, who with a mightye power besyged Paulia, toke Desiderius with his wife and childezen prisoners, restozed to the church all that his father Pepine had geuen, with more, and reserued vnto him selfe the dominion of Lumbardye.

In this bishops time Tyber rose so high, that Rome was in maner cleane drowned.

Leo. 3

After Adrian succeeded Leo the. iiii. who because the Romaines conspyred against him, fledde vnto Charlemaigne, & by him was restozed with great pompe into his estate, & for pacifying this romaine fury against the bishop, Charlemaigne him selfe with a great army came to Rome, where for the high seruice he had doen to holy church, the Romaine bishop annoiuted and proclaimed hym emperor August: and his sonne Pepine kyng of Italie. So that from this time forwarde the emperours of Constantinople were no more reputed Romaine emperours: but emperours of Greece. For Charlemaigne dyd so much, that at length the empires were deuided by confines, and the Greeke Emperours consented to suffer the Frenchemen in quyetie bothe with the name and dominion of the Occidental empire. After the death of Charlemaigne and of Pepine, this Leo remembryng the old conspyracie made against him, caused many of the chiefe Romaines his enemies to be put to death. For the whiche at laste he was fayne to withdrow him from rome, and lying at Blera, the Romaines

The empire
deuided

maynes in a todayne rage spoyled and rased to the erth
all the buildynges that he had made or procured to be
made in Rome . And because the byshop dyed shortly
therupon, Lewis the french kyng and emperour, sente
his cousin Bernarde as kynge into Italie, to be a staye
against the incōueniēces that of this fury might haue
folowed: whyche Bernarde with in few yeres after re-
belled, but at last he was constrained to yeld him selfe,
and so beyng brought into Fraunce, was beheaded.

This Stephen went into Fraunce, and there crowned
the fozenamed Lewis emperour, who for his great cur-
tesie and gentleness was called Lewis the meeke: and
at his retourne to rome, this bishop brought many Ro-
mans home with him, that his predecessour had exiled.

Stephanus. 4

¶ After Stephen succeeded Pascall, who crowned Lo-
tharius, sonne of Lewis the meeke, kyng of Italy, and
successour to his father in the empyre: and with saye
persuasions obtained of Lewis the election or confy-
macion of all bishops, which before that time depended
onely vpon the emperours pleasure. And further pro-
cured the confines and limites of the churches domini-
on to be made certayne, and that with the largest.

Pascalis

¶ But Gregory the. iiii. would not take vpon hym the
byshoprike, tyl he had receiued hys confyrmacion from
the emperour Lewis before named.

gregorius. 4

¶ In his time, the Sarasines in great nōumber landed
in Italie, besieged Rome, toke it, spoyled it, and all the
countrey about: but at lasse they were repulsed by the
Marques Guido of Lumbardy, with helpe of the fren-
chemen.

¶ Sergius the seconde, fyrste gaue p̄sidence to all hys

Sergius.

successours to change theyr names: by reason that bys owne name Bocca di porco that is to saye, Swynes mouth, was so vnseemely, that he thought it not agreeable to his dignitie. He repayred the walles of the Vaticane, and buylded Castel Sant' Angelo vpon the tombe of Adrian.

Johannes. 8

¶ Johan the. viii. was an englishe woman, that in his youth disguised in a boyes apparell was broughte to Athenes in Greece, where he profited so much in learning, that whan he returned to Rome, for his good behauiour and singler reputacion he was elected bishop: and so continued more than two yeres, til at last going in procession towardes saint John Lateranes, he fell in trauers of childe in the high way, and there dyed.

For why the cause the byshops to this daye doe forsake that way, and (as they say) whan any new byshop is elected, he is broughte to saint John Lateranes, & there set in a chayre with an hole, that the eldest Deacon of the Cardinallles may seele *utrum habet testiculos*.

Adrianus. 2.

¶ Adrian the seconde was elected and established byshop without the emperours consent, wherwith the emperours ambassadours, then resident in Rome, began somewhat to be moued: but at length the emperour him selfe was so contented withal, that from thenceforth the clergie in maner esteemed not the emperours.

Johannes. 9

¶ John the. ix. succeeded Adrian, and willing to crowne Lodowicus halbus frenche kynge emperour: the Romanes (that fauoured more Charles the. iii. kynge of Germany, who than was entred into Italye with an army) put the byshop in prison: but he was shortly conueighed out, and fled into Fraunce, where he annoynd
red the

ted the kyng emperour. Neuerthelesse within a whyle after the frenche kyng dyed, and than was the bishop reconsiled to the foresayd kyng Charles, whome he afterwarde crowned emperour.

Adrian the. 3. byshop made a lawe, that from thenceforth the emperours should haue naught to doe wpyth hys successours elections. Adrian. 5. 5.

Stephen the. vi. bearyng malice in his herte agaynst his predecessour Formosus, caused him to be taken out of his graue, to be spoyled of his pontyficall vestmentes, his fingers to be cut of, and his body to be throwen into Tyber, as an excommunicate and damned person. For which act there grewe heynous contencion amongst the Romains that ceased not many yeres after. Stephanus 6.

At this place Platina began to lament the tyrannye of the Romaine bishops, because from hence forth there reigned no moze humilitie, temperance, religio, truth nor charitie among theim: but in steede thereof ambition, disdeigne, auarice, falshood, and tyrannye. For shortly after Leo the. v. was by force deposed, and put in prison by Christofer the first, one of his owne bynggynge by: who continued scarcelye. vii. monethes, but was likewise serued by Sergius the. iiii.

Here, I haue thought good to make a lytle dygressyon, because of the notable chaunge of the empire.

About this time began the contencion betwene Lewis the frenche kyng, and Berengarius Duke of Friuli for the empire and dominion of Lumbardy.

The Italians wolde not, that the bishops of Rome shoulde crowne any other emperour than one of theyr owne nation, wherupon Berengarius toke on him the name

Of the liues of the

name of emperor and kyng of Italye, and in that quarrel fought twisse wyth Lewys . The firste battaile he lost, but the seconde he wan: in the whiche Lewys was taken prisoner, and one of his eyes put oute . And thus ended the empire Charlemaignes descent, for the whiche was no small contencion atwhyle betwene the .iii. nacions, Italian, frenche and Douche.

Change
of the
emprer.

¶ Fyfte this Berengarius reigned wyth the name of emperor. .liii. yeres, and had no smal warres, specially with the Conte Guido di Spoleti: who at the last was discomfited and slaine in the feld. And as some wyte, the byshop Lando gaue Berengarius the crowne.

Berengarius, 1

After him reigned Berengarius the seconde, .lii. yeres. who suffered the Hungaryens to passe into Italye, vpon condicion they should not offend his subiectes: but they kepte not theyr couenaunt wyth hym.

Berengarius, 2

And than came Raulfe Duke of Burgoyne and dyaue hym out of Italye: whych he ruled for the space of .lii. yeres, tyl Berengarius, with the helpe of the Hungaryens recovered it agayne.

Raulfe
Duke of
Burgoyne

¶ Than came Hugh, Conte d' Arli, and reigned after Berengarius. .x. yeres as kyng of Italye.

Hugo Conte
d' Arli

The last of the Italyans was Berengarius the, .iii. who reigned about .xi. yeres, and was expelled, as you shall here afterwardest.

Berengarius, 3

John the .xi. (a better warriour than churchman) with the helpe of Alberico Marques of Tuscanie, gathered an army, and fought with the Saracines, that than had ouerronne Puglia and Calabria, and were coming to Rome, & in effect so discomfited theim, that they fled to Monte Gargano, where they fortified them selves, and
did mu-

Johan-
nes, 11

did much hurte afterwardes in the realme of Naples. Finally he fel at variance with the forenamed Marques, who therfore called the Hungarians into Italie, and scourged the whole nation, aswel his owne subiectes as others: So that the Romaines to be auenged toke Alberico and beheaded hym, and the souldiours toke the bishop and strangled hym.

Agapet the seconde, seeing the puyssance of Berengarius the .iij. and fearyng to come vnder hys subiection, with consent of the romains procured Otho, than newly chosen emperour in Germany, with a greates armpe to come into Italie. Where he fought twyse with Berengarius, and at either tyme toke hym and hys sonne Albert prisoners. The fyrste tyme he restored hym to the estate of Lumbardye vppon conditions. But the seconde tyme he and hys sonne bothe were ledde away, and confined the one to Bamborough in Almaine, & the other to Constantinople: where they died miserably.

¶ John the .xiiij. not by free election, but by the power of his father Alberico than chiefe of the Romaines, was made byshop. For though the byshops had longe tyme continued like kynges, I meane for theyr estate & tempozall possession: yet for all that the Romaines created yerey certain Consules and other officers after theyr olde facion, and had belongyng to theyr common welch diuers towne nere vnto Tuscan, betwene Vrbeuentano, & Tudertino, and all that is betwene Naples, Marfi, Riete, and rome, so that the chiefe Romaines bare a great stroke in the byshops elections. This bishop crowned Otho beforenamed fyrste emperoure of the Germaines. For neither Henry Duke of

Maximie last Emperour before him, nor yet Conrade
successour to Lewys before named of Charlemaignes
descent, were euer crowned: though they both took by
upon theim the imperial auctoritee.

This John was a man of so ill liuynge, that two of
his Cardinallies complained on him to the emperour:
beseechynge him to see a reformation for an example to
the world. But the bishop hearynge of this, was soone
euen with them. For he cutte of the ones nose, and the
others handes: and afterwarde receiued the emperour
with so good a countenance, that he seemed nothinge
guilty till the clergy with one voice accused him, wher-
upon he fledde into the mountaines & hidde him selfe:
so that the emperour with consent of the clergy chose
Leo the. viii. But as soon as the emperour returned
home, John by force of his friendes expelled Leo, re-
couered his bishopricke, and so continued till he died.

Some write, that this was John the. xiii. For among
est the auctours is some confusion in the number of
these Johns, specially because some reckon the english
Johan for one, and some reckon him not: but how so e-
uer it be, this John succeeded Agapet the second: and
as some write, was taken in adoultterie and slayne by
the womans husband.

Johannes.
13.

This John the. xiii. elected by the clergy against the Ro-
maines will, was taken by Gessiole Côte di Campa-
nia & exiled, till this Gessiole & his sonne were slayne
by an other lord of Campania. Insomuche that the
emperour Ocho, hearyng of this bishops exile, made
an army, and came to rome, where after a solenne en-
trepy, he took all the senators and put theim in prison,
sense

sent the Consules prisoners into Almaine: and one Peter that had been chiefe of the conspiracie againste John, was drawen through the streets, whipped naked hanged by the heare of the head, and finallye in maner halfe dead sent prisoner into Germany, where he finished hys dayes. For which correctione this John crowned Otho the second (sonne of this fyrste Otho) emperour, by the fathers consent, and his wife Theophila empyresse.

¶ Benedict the. vi. was taken by Cinthio, a noble man of rome, and beinge layed in prison in Castell Sant' Angelo, was either strangled or famished to death. Benedictus, 6.

Boniface the. vii. beinge constrained to forsake rome, toke all the riches of S. Peters Church wth hym to Constantinople, and there sold it: and at length returned to Rome, where after he was wel receiued, he put out one of hys Cardinales eyes. Bonifatius, 7.

¶ Gregory the. v. by reason of a commocion in Rome, fled first into Tuscan, & afterwarde into Germany because he wolde not consent to crowne Crescentius, emperour: who beinge the noblest amongst the Romanes, was prouoked by the Italians to take the empire vpon him. So that whan Gregory was fled, they made one that had been bishop of Placentia bishop of Rome, and named him John the. 17. but Otho the. iii. than emperour, with a puissant army came to Rome, & wolde haue besieged it, had not the Romayns receiued him, so that Crescentius and the bishop John both fled into Castell Sant' Angelo, & there held the til they had so faire offers made on the emperours behalfe, that vpon trust therof they came forth and submitted theim sel-

les. But for all that they were both tormented, and at last put to death. Whereupon it folowed, that this Gregory, who was a Saxon bozne, transferred the election of emperours vnto. vii. princis of his owne nation, that is to wete. The king of Boeme, cupbearer, the Marques of Brandenburg chamberlaine, the Conte Palatine sewer, & the Duke of Saxonie swordbearer, with. iiii. Archbishops of Mentis, Treuere, & Colepn. And ordeyned further, that from the Emperours election to his coronacion, he shuld be called none other but Cæsar and kyng of Romaines, & after that the bishop of Rome had crowned him, he should be called Emperour and August, which order by consente of the forenamed Otho, was established about. 200. yeares after Charlemaignes coronacion.

Electours
of the
empire.

Cæsar,

Augustus

Benedictus. 8

¶ Benedicte the. viii. crowned Henry the seconde, emperour: who was the fyrst that accordynge to the order of Gregorie the. v. was elected by the princis of Germany. Some call hym Henry the fyrste, because Henry Duke of Saxonie, that succeeded Conrade, neuer came to Rome to be crowned.

Benedictus. 9

¶ Benedict the. ix. for his naughtye behaviour was expelled, and Siluester the. iiii. placed in his roume, who helde it. 40. daies and than was Benedict restored.

Shiftyng
and possyng
of
Romayne
bishops.

¶ Neuerthelesse Benedic mistrustynge that he coulde not kepe it longe, solde his iurisdiction vnto Gregorie the. vi. but the emperour. Henry the. iiii. came to Rome deposited these. iiii. bishops, and created Clement the seconde, who liued not fully. x. monethes, by reason that his next successour Damasus the second found means to poison him, beyng after so serued hym selfe the. 23. daye nexte folow

solowynge bys election.

Leo the. ix. beyng sent as bishop to Rome, at the Ro- Leo, 9.
maines request, that desired the emperour to send them
a good man, mette with. ii. moles by the way, who per-
swaded hym so muche, that he put of his pontificall ha-
bite, and priuately came to rome, sayng that he repen-
ted hym to haue taken of the emperour, that which ap-
pertained to the clergies free election. For whiche hu-
militie the clergies embraced hym, and neuerthelesse
made hym their bishop.

He made an armie against the Normans, than resig-
nyng in the Realme of Naples, to recouer Beneuento
that they had wonne from the church, where his army
was discouraged, and he with diuers of his Cardina-
les taken prisoners. But the Normans freely de-
liuered him, and honourably sent hym home.

In his time was the counsaile of Vercelli called a-
gainst the opinion of Berengarius for the sacrament of
communion.

Stephen the. ix. broughte the church of Apallayne Stepha-
nus. 9
to the obedience of the church of Rome, which for 200
yeres befoze would neuer knowlage Rome for bys su-
perior.

Nicolas the. ii. after the clergie had deposed Bene- Nicola-
us. 2
dict the. r. was elected, who made a decree, that from
thencefoze the Cardynalles onely shoulde choose the
byschoppe.

He created Robert Guiscard duke of Calabria and
Puglia, and made hym lieutenant of the Church, by
whose power he subdued to the churches dominion the
Prenestini, Tusculani, & Numentani: with diuers o-

Of the liues of the

ther territories aboute Rome.

Alexander. 2.

Alexander the. ii. in the beginning of his astate was disturbed by Gadolo bishop of Parma: for the whiche they fought two battailes, but finallye Alexander prevailed, by reason that at a counsaile holden in Mantua, where the emperour was present, the whole clergy agreed vpon Alexander, and exempted from all emperours the authorites of confirmacion of the Romaine bishops: whiche afterwarde was occasion of many inconveniencies.

Gregorius. 7

Gregorie the. vii. incontinentlye vpon his election beganne to proue maiesties with the emperour Henry the. iii. For he would not be confirmed of the emperour, and afterwarde, where the emperoure before tyme hath bled to geue bishoprikes, Gregorie would geue them him selfe. So that whan a bishop dyed, the emperour would name one, and Gregorie an other.

Wherof folowed excommunicacions as thicke as haile, so that at last the emperoure hym selfe was not onelye excommunicate, but also by the ecclesiasticall power deposed of the empyre. And yet had religion so muche power in hym, that whan he was come into Italye, and had besieged his enemy Gregorie within the towne of Canosso, the emperour hym selfe went barefooted to the towne gates in the hard frost and snow, to aske forgiveness of the bishop: who for all that stode styfe. iii. or. liii. dayes ere he would assyle hym. At lengthe they agreed vpon condiction, that the emperoure should obey the bishops commaundementes.

But the bishop not yet contented, within a whyle after so offended the emperoure againe, that he came to

Rome,

Rome, and was there receiued of the Romaines.
 Wherefore Gregoꝝ fled into Castel Angelo, and there
 kepte hym, til he was rescued by Robert Guiscard, for
 feare of whose coming the emperour retyred into Ger-
 manye. Where by the bishops procurement the pꝛinces
 had elected Radulphus de Sueuia emperour betwene
 whom and Henry were many blonddy batailles fough-
 ten, & not only Radulphus hym selfe slaine at lengthe,
 but also the emperours owne sonne so suborned, that he
 warred against his natural father, and besieged hym in
 the towne of Mentz. Neuerthelesse (much agaynst
 the bishops will) nature and friendes wrought a peace
 betwene theim at last.

And though Guiscard deliuered this bishop oute of
 the emperours hand, yet he was so hated of the Romain-
 nes, that he durste not abide in Rome, but wente wyth
 Guiscard into the realme of Naples, and there dyed.

Some write, that this Gregoꝝ was the fyrste that
 prohibited matrimony vnto pꝛiestes.

pꝛiestes
matriage.

Victoꝝ the. iiii. was paysoned by the Emperours pro-
 curement, as some write, but some holde that he died of
 a natural infirmitee.

Victoꝝ. 3

Pascall the. ii. fell at varyaunce wth the familie of
 Colonna in rome, by reason wherof, whiles he was at
 the getting of Beneuento (which by the helpe of roger
 duke of Puglia he obtained) the Colonels by force toke
 the towne of Caua apperteynyng to the church. But
 the bishop at his retourne both recovered Caua, & also
 toke from them Zagarolo, & Colonna their owne en-
 herstaunce. Whereupon folowed so muche busynesse,
 that almoste no man coulde passe in quyet anye where

Pascaliz.

through

through Campania.

This Pascal went into France to reforme the disordinate life of the clergie there.

After his retourne into Italie, he condemned the doynages of Henrye the. iiii. Emperoure, so that whan the emperor him selfe was come as far as Sutri, wyth a great army, the bishop forbade hym the commynge to Rome, til he had promysed not to medle with the church matters: and further to cause those bishops that he had made, to renounce their Bishoppikes.

But whan the emperor had kyssed the bishops foote at the heade of S. Peters Waters, & was receyued wyth solenne procession into the churche, than he requyzed Pascal to confirme his bishops, who refusyng so to do, he with diuers of his cardynals & prelats, were taken, spoyled of their myters and copes, and so ledde into the armie that lay without the citee, and from thense into a stronge holde, till the bishop so consented to the Emperours wyl, that he not onely crowned him there, but also confyrmed his bishops. Howe be it, shortly after the emperours retourne into Germanie, Pascall called a counsaile in Laterano, and reuoked all his doynages to the emperor, because they had ben doen through compulsion and not of free wyl. Wherefore the emperoure with a puissant army returned to Rome, and finding that Pascal was withdrawen into Puglia, for feare of displeasure, he caused him selfe to be crowned a new by the archebishop of Barcare, of whom he also toke auce to free to dispose the bishoppikes at his pleasure.

Matilda

Aboute this tyme died the Countesse Matilda, that gaue vnto the church of Rome all the territoire from
the

the riuer Pissea and San Quirico vppon the Senese, vnto Ceperano betwene the Appenine & the sea, wyth the feodariſhip of Ferrara.

¶ And in this biſhops tyme was the great biage made ^{ayage} of the Chriſtians into the holy lande, where Hieruſa^{into the} lem was wonne, and Godfrey of Boloigne crowned kynge. ^{holy land}

¶ Gelasius the. ii. ſucceeded Paſcall by the clergyes election, but the family of Frangipani in Rome, which ^{gelasius, 2} were of the imperiſhall faction, toke hym by force: and put hym the ſyſt nyght in priſon, but there was ſuch a commocion of the people the nexte mornynge, that the chiefe of his enemies was faine to kyſſe his feete, and to let hym goe. ¶ Wherefoze ſhortly after the emperoure came ſo ſoddeynly to Rome, that no man knew therof, til he was in ſaint Peters church, ſo that the biſhop incontinently fledde, and by boote eſcaped downe Tyber vnto Oſtia, and ſo into Fraunce, where he dyed. After whoſe departure, the emperoure created the aboue named biſhoppe of Bracare in his place, callinge hym Clement: and ſo committynge hym to the protection of the Frangipani, retourned into Almaigne.

Calixt the ſecond, befoze archebiſhop of Vienna, was ^{Calixtus, 2} elected ſucceſſour vnto Gelasius by the Cardinall: that than were reſident in Fraunce: how be it, he wold not take the dignitie vppon hym: till he had wooorde from Rome, that the clergie there were contented wythall. Upon good aduerſement wherof he repayred thither: and findinge the imperiſhall biſhop to be fledde, ſetled hym aſtate there: ſendynge to the emperour ſor peace and fauour, which he caſilie obtayned.

¶ And hearynge that the imperiall bishop was gone to Sutri, and there had fortified, he made an armie, wente thither, besieged Sutri, toke hys aduersarye, brought hym to rome, made hym ride about the stretes on a camel, with the taylor in his hande: and at last closed hym vp in an abbey. He traualled much for William duke of Puglia in the defence of his countrey against Roger Erle of Sicilie, but it auailed not.

Innocent
liiij. 2

¶ Innocent the second immediately after hys coronacion, suddenly raised an armie, & went against the forenamed Roger that than wrote him selfe king of Sicilie: whom he founde so vnprouided, that he made hym flee to Castell Galuzzo, and there besieged him: til his son William with a greate power came to hys rescue, fought with the bishops armie, and toke the bishop withall hys Cardinallles prisoners. Neuerthelesse they were afterwarde courteously let goe, and accompanied toward Rome, where in the meane season was a new bishoppe made, named Anacleto. And this new bishoppe dyng the felowes of sainte Peters as his owne, made so many friends, that Innocent was faine to flee from thence to Pisa, from Pisa to Genoa, and so into fraunce. Finally he went unto Lotharius the. iiii. than elected Cesar, and by his meanes was restored to his bishoppe the agayne. For the which he rewarded Lotharius with the imperiall crowne as the custome was, causynge hym afterwarde so to inuade the realme of Naples, that Roger, who than called hym selfe kyng therof, forsoke Italie cleane for a tyme.

The emperour was no sooner returned into Germanye, but the bishop, thinkynge him selfe in peace, fell at
baris

varsaunce with the Romaines for chosyng of senators because somewhat before that tyme the other byshops his predecessours, had taken all temporall power clerely from the cistens, & bled it privately as theyr owne. In the heate of which contention Innocence dyed.

Eugenius the .iii. incontinently upon his election forsoke Rome, because the Romaines were resolutely determined to mainteigne theyr Senators; and he to the contrary, vnyng his uttermostte power, constrained them to crye him merce, and to committe the order of all magistrates vnto him. Nevertheless after hys resurrection, the people (that coulde not brooke the losse of theyr libertees) so rebelled agaynst hym, that he was faine to flee, and went into Fraunce: where declaring his case vnto Lewys the kynge, he obtayned suche succours, that in maner by force he returned to Rome, and had his owne wyl.

Eugenius . 3

Adrian the .iiii. an englishman borne, constrained the Consules and Senators of Rome to depose theym selves, and to committe all theyr rule vnto the church. He crowned Fredericke Barbarossa emperour, though afterwarde he did excommunicate hym. He also graunted the title of kynge to William the thirde, descended of the Romaine blood, beyng than lord of Sicily, and of the realme of Naples. He increased not a lytle the Churches territory, but he was muche hated of the Romaines for takyng away of their libertees.

Adrianus . 4

Finally before his death he repented the excommunication of the emperour, sayng, that there could be none so miserable an estate, as the Romaine bishoppe gotten wyth bloudde,

Alexander 3. 22. Alexander the. iiii. had vnto his election the voyce of
22. Cardinallcs, and Octavian had but. iiii. as moſte
authours agree. Neuertheleſſe betwene theſe two
grew ſo great a Schiſme, that the emperour Frederike
was faine to call diuers counſayles for the matter:
citiyng both the parties there to appeare, that the mat-
ter might be rightiouſlye iudged. Octavian came at
the emperours calling, but Alexander wolde neuer ap-
peare. Wherefore the emperour became ſo much his e-
nemy, that he was faine to flee from rome into ſi-
aunce and other regions, to procure helpe of other princes.
So that there happened much blood, fyre, and deſtruc-
tion for this matter many yeres together.

Some write, that Alexander was ſo purſued of the
emperour, that in a cookes apparayle he was fayne to
flee vnknotwen, from place to place, til at laſte he came
to Venice, and there in a monaſtery toke a gardeners
wages, and ſerued in the kitchin. Where he was dyſ-
conered by a pilgrime, and therupon apparayled, and
brought in Pontificalibus with proceſſion to S. Markes
church, remaignyng there honorably enterteyned, til
after ſore feight by ſea, betwene the emperour and the
Veneciāns, Otho the emperours ſon was take priſoner,
by whole meanes a peace was made betwene Alexan-
der & the emperour. Some writers make no mencyon of
this hiſtory: but ſay, that by appointmente Alexander
came honorably to Venice. to mete the emperour for a
treaty of peace, wherby the other hiſtory of the cookiſh
apparayle ſhould ſeeme vntrewe. In effecte howe ſo
euer it were there they mette, and the emperour in pre-
ſence of al the people kneled downe to kiſſe the biſhops
foote,

foote. At which kissinge, some asseyne, that the byshop
 vsed these woordes: Super aspidem et Basiliscum am-
 bulabis et cōculcabis leonem et draconem; And the
 emperour answered, Non tibi sed Petro. whereunto
 the bishop replied: et petro et mihi. Neuerthelesse there
 they concluded such a peace, that the bishop returned
 to Rome and enjoyed his place. Immediately where-
 vpon he called a counsaile in Laterano, in the whiche
 .liii. bishops (that sens his fyrste election had been crea-
 ted by the emperour) were condemned bodye and soule.

In his tyme Thomas Beckette, bishop of Caunter- Thomas
Beckette
 burge, was slaine. And the kyng of Englande (as
 some wyte) sent ambassadours to this Alexander, pro-
 testyng the same to be doen unknowyng to hym. But
 the bishoppe not credityng the ambassadours, sent two
 Cardinales into England to examine the trouthe: who
 compelled the kyng to sweare, that he was not gilty of
 Beckettes death: and neuerthelesse they enioyned hym
 in penaunce, to send .200. souldiours to serue an whole
 yere in Hierusalem: and wichein the terme of .iii. yeres
 to goe against the infidelles him selfe, to mainreine all
 the libertees of the church, and to permitte matters to
 be appealed to the court of Rome.

Lucie the .iii. would haue depriued the Romaine Con-
 sules of theyr dignitee, but the people so respyed, that Lucius. 3
 he was faine to flee, and as many as were taken of his
 partye, had theyr eyes put out. Wherefore the bishop
 went to Verona, called a counsaile, and there died.

Celestine the .iii. enuiyng the succession of Tancredi, Celestinus. 3
 bastard sonne of Roger, brother to the good kyng Wyl-
 liam of Sicile, called into Italye Henrye the .vi. than
 D. iii. elected

Of the liues of the

elected Caesar. And after he had crowned him emperor in Rome, toke Constantine a sonne oute of her cloyster: and because of the Roymanes royal blond, married him to this emperor, and dowryng him and his both with the titles of the realmes of Naples and Sicile: and so transferred the Papolitan estate from the Roymans succession to the Germans, wherof there folowed great bloudshedding.

Innocentius. 3

Innoce[n]ce the.iii. because Philip Duke of Sueuia, sonne unto Barbarossa, was chosen emperor against his wil, not onely recommunicated him, but also caused Otho the.iii. to be elected, and crowned hym in Rome. Thys bishop contendyng with the forenamed Philip was wont to saye, either that Philip take from me my myter, or I from hym his crowne.

Otho had not longe enjoyed the crowne, but the bishop with his exco[m]municacions made his princes to forsake him, and he the emperoure him selfe to forsake Italie: because he had moued warres against the church, and gotten Montefiascone & Radicofano, intending also to inuade the realme of Naples, than belongyng to young Frederike sonne of Henry the. vi. who by his parentes was committed to the bishops protection.

Finally he deposed Otho, and named this Frederike emperoure. Wherof there folowed so sharpe warres, that at length, when Frederike had afterwarde receiued the crowne of Honorius the. iii. the Romayne bishop persecuted Frederike, and he them.

This Innocence beeyng of the familie of Conti in Rome, buylded a notable fayre toure of bishpe there, whych yet is to be seen, called La torre d' i Conti.

Hones

Honozius the. iiii. crowned Frederike the. ii. Empe-
roure, and after excommunicated hym, for what cause
I cannot tel. Honozius, 2.

Gregory the. ix. did likewise excommunicate the empe-
roure, because he wold not at his appointment go into
Asia agaynst the infidelles. Afterwardes he assayed
him vpon his humble submission at Anagnia, for. 120
thousand ounces of golde payed by the emperour. gregorius, 9.

Than fell he in contention with the Romaynes for
the tribute of the territories about the cite, whiche the
Romayns alledged that the bishops vsurped vpo they
common wealtb. And because Frederike fauoured the
Romains cause, the bishop did excommunicate hym a-
gaine, wherof folowed cruel warres betwene the em-
perour and the confederate citees of Lombardy, wyth
the battaille besydes Corte noua, where the Applanese
and Lombardes were so miserably slaine, and they
Caroccio taken.

Than began also the civile sedition of the two par-
ties in Italie, Guelfi and Chibellini, that caused so
much myschiese.

The Romayns after they had ben ones by force sub-
dued of this bishop, began to rebel againe: For the pa-
cifying wherof the byshop carped about sainte Peters
and Paules heades in procession, and so quyeted the
people.

Finally beyng hardly handled by the emperour Fre-
derike, who had taken diuers legates, cardinales, and
prelates prisoners, in theyr comyng to Rome, he dyed
for sorowe.

Innocence the. iiii. besoze he was elected byshop was
berg Innocen-
tius, 4.

Of the liues of the

berye friende to the emperoure Frederike, but after he became so mortall enemy vnto him, that they ceased not the one to persecute the other as long as they liued: not withstandinge that principallye for respecte of hys olde amities with the emperour, Innocente was elected byshop. And the emperour against this election set at libertie diuers cardinales, that he had taken prisoners in the warres, betwene hym and Gregoꝝy the. ix.

This Innocence was occasion of the great discomfiture that Frederike had befoze Parma, and yet was the auctozitie of the Romaines so great in his later daies, that he durst not come in Rome.

Cardinal
hattes

He first ordeined the Cardinales to ryde with redde hartes: and went to the citie of Naples, intendinge to haue conquered the realme, where trauallyng to sette foꝛthe an army he died.

Urbanus. 4

Manfredo 4

Urban the. iiii. seynge the armie prepared of Innocence, discomfited by Manfredo, than gouernoure of the realme of Naples, & him selfe vnhable to resist both Mansfredos power and the Romaines also, that newly had recouered theyꝝ libertie, practised with the French kyng, that Charles duke of Angiowe might come to conquere Naples and Sicile, but he died ere his purpose coulde take effecte.

Clement. 4

Clement the. iiii. folowing the practise of Urbane, rescued the fozenamed duke Charles, that came with 30 galeys from Marsiles to Rome, and there created him Senatour. Whych office he exercised foꝛ a tyme.

Afterwardes he inuested hym kyng of Naples and of Sicile, vpon condiction, he should holde it of the church in fee, payng tribute yerely. 40000. ducketes: and by this

this meane brought the Frenchmen to warre against Manfredo. In which warres Charles preuayled, and the Germaine blood ceased: not onely by the death of Manfredo slayne in the fiede, but also by the death of Corradino the ryghte heyre, who beinge taken prisoner, through this bishops counsaile was beheaded.

After long contencion amongst the Cardinales, and ^{Gregorius 10} two yeres vacacion of the see, gregory the .x. was elected bishop. He incontinently pacified the warres betwene the Venetians and Genowases, and called a counsaile in Lions, vnto the which the emperour of Greece came with a noble compaigne: and amongst other certayne infidel Tartares, who there receiued baptisme.

He confyrm'd Radulphus Erle of Holsatia emperor, though he came not to rome to receiue hys crowne.

Nicolas the .iii. depriued Charles kynge of Naples of the viscarage of the Emppire, that Clemente the .iiii. had geuen hym in Tuscanie, & toke from him also the Senatourship of rome, taking the vse of that office into his owne handes: and made a lawe, that no pryncce from thensforth shoulde be Senatour of Rome. He repulsd the Venetian ambassadours with foule wordes, because of the siege that they had laied to the citee of Ancona. He toke many citees in flaminia by force and practise, and broughte them from obedyence of the emperor to the churches subiection. He went aboute to make two of his owne kinne of the house of Vrsina in Rome kinges, the one in Tuscanie, and the other in Lumbardy: but he could not bring it to passe.

Finally he procured Peter kynge of Aragon, to challenge the realmes of Naples and Sicile, as the inhery-

Of the liues of the

raunce of his wyfe Constantia, daughter to the kynge Manfredo. Wherof there folowed sharpe warres.

Martine the. llii. a frencheman bozne, after long contencion amongst the Cardinalles was elected bishop, who incontinently ressozed vnto Charles than king of Naples, the office of Senatour of rome, against the romaines wyl. For the which there hapned much bloudsheddyng: But at last the frenchemen so preuailed, that Richard Hannibal, chiefe of the romaines, was faine to come with a halter aboute his necke to aske pardon at the byshops feete. Wherupon the bishop made two new Senatours, and so ruled Rome at hys wyl. He excommunicated king Peter of Aragon, and cried the crosse against him, because he had preuailed in winnyng of the realme of Sicile againste kynge charles of Naples; and the excommunication was suche, that all men myght lawfully take his lands and goodes, where oꝝ how so euer they could come by theim. But this letted not kynge Peter of his purpose.

Honorius the. iiii. confyrmmed the excommunication of Martine against king Peter: enttelyng the french king to the realme of Aragon, and the Erle of Arras, the french kynges sonne, to the realme of Sicile. Whiche both with seuerall powers enforced theim selves to occuppe both those realmes, accorดยng to the bishoppes gyfte: but in effect they preuayled not.

Celestinus the. v. After longe contencion, at length the cardinals chose Celestine the. v. beyng an hermyte, who was so simple a man, continayng stil the olde maner of his abstinent life, that the cardinalles could not wel suppozte hym.

Wherfoze the cardynall Benedicte Gaietane began
a new

a newe practise, and fell at composition wyth hys brethren, if he could make Celestine resigne, they shuld electe him. So he made one with a cane thorough a walcrie to Celestine in the night, as he lay in his bed: that God commanded hym to resygne hys byshoprike vnto Benedict. Whereupon this simple man, beleuyng the voyce to come from heauen, gaue ouer hys dignytee, and caused Benedict to be chosen in his place, naming hym Boniface the. viii. who for rewarde, fearyng least Celestines life myght be a trouble to his glorie, caused the poore man to be taken by the waye as he retourned towards his heremitage, and laied in prison in Castel Fumone, where shortly after he was famished to death.

Boniface the. viii. cleauynge earnestlye to the Guelse part, persecuted cruelly two cardinales of the house of Colonna, that thā were chiefe of the Ghibellines; and dyd so much hurt to that family, that after he had rased theyr townes and houses to the earthe, none of theym durst appeare. For Sarra Colōna, chiefe of that house fled so muche the persecucion of this bishop, that after he had liued a certaine space in the woodd, pozely amongest the sheepeherdes, at last he was taken of Pirates vpon the sea coastes, and made a slaue to the oze in the galeys.

Bonifacius.

8

This bishop giuing ashes on asheswednesday to Porchetto archebishop of Genoa, sayd to him in latine, remember man that thou art a Ghibelline, and with the Ghibellines shalt retourne into ashes, and therewithal thew the ashes in hys eyes.

He also was the firste that ordeyned the yeare of Jubiley amongest the chyzistians, which caused wonderful

yeare of Jubilee.

relozte from all parties to Rome.

He excommunicated Phillip the french kynge, because he wolde not go into the holy land at his appointment, and deposed him of his crowne, entitling Albert duke of Austriche to the same. To the entente the Almaynes might auenge his quarel agaynst the Frenchemen. But at lengthe Sarra Colonna happened to arrive in the porte of Marsieles in Fraunce, where disclosynge hym selfe, he was take out of the galey, had to the frēch court, and finally sent so strongly into Italy with. 200 men of armes, that he came sodeynlye on a nyghte to Anagnia, toke the bishop in his bed, & led him to rome prisoner: where within lesse than. 24. daies he dyed for sorowe. So that there folowed a sayinge of hym: he entred lyke a fore, reigned like a wolfe, and dyed as a dogge.

Benedictus. **B**enedict the xi. assayed the frenche kynge, recon-
11. led the two Cardinales of the house of Colonna, and condemnynge the actes of his predecesseur, did neuer- thelesse excommunicate the authours of his death.

Clemens. **C**lement the. v. a Gascoygne bozne, and byshoppe of Burdeux, was after. xii. monethes contencion amongest the Cardinales elected bishop of Rome: who for affection to his countrey, transferred the see of Rome to Lyons in France: and called all the Cardinals thither to his consecracion. Therat the french kyng, with many other princes was present: & the Duke of Britaine, and diuers other slaine, with the falling of a wall. For feare wherof Clement fell from his horse, and lost a carbuncle of hys myter: esteemed to be woorth. vi. thousand duckates.

¶ Than incontinently he made .xii. frenche Cardinals, thre of the which he sent to Rome, with senatours auctoritee, to rule the citee and all Italye. He oppressed the sect called Fraticelli: that were than newly risled in Lumbardie, who woulde haue had all thynges in common, without magistrates or rulers.

¶ He interdicted the Venetians, because they succoured the house of Este against the church.

The Cardinal Orsino, than legate in Tuscan, excommunicated the citees of Florence & Luke, because they would not be ordered by hym, but the Florentines procured a speedy remedye. For they laied suche taxes on the spirituall men, that the bishoppe, for hys members sake, was glad to assoyle theim.

¶ The frenche kynge practised with the byshop, to reduce the imperiall astate vnto hym: but at lengthe they agreed so ill, that Clemente caused the Germaines to elect emperour Henry the. vii. of Luxemburgh, who by the bishops procuremēt passed into Italy with a mighty armie, & reigned soze the Italians, was crowned of the Cardinallles in Rome, and finally wared so greate, that the bishop, mistrusting his power, threathned to excommunicate him, if he departed not the rather out of Italye. Wherefore the emperoure fortified hym selfe and his army in the Theatres and Thermes of rome, resistyng the bishops fauters, and specially theim of the house of Orsino: but at lengthe for lacke of victualles, he was faine to forsake rome, & to retyze into Tuscan whers being at Arezzo, he somoned Roberte kynge of Naples, to appeare before hym, and for lacke of apparance deposed him of his Realme by imperiall sen-

tence, whych was by Clemente disannulled.

Finally the emperour by meanes of the bishoppes legate was poysoned in receiuing the sacrament of communion, in the towne of Bonconuento. After whose death the bishop hym selfe lyued not longe.

Johannes
22.

When John the. xxiij. had receiued the mytter in Lyons, he wence streight to Auignon and there created thirtie Cardinales of the whiche two onely were Italians.

Shortly after he degraded a frenche bishop, and put hym cruelly to death for a conspiracie that he was accused of.

In this tyme the electours of Germanye, not agreying together, chose two emperours, Lewis of Bawarie, and Frederike of Austrie: each of theim haunging his voices: but the bishop allowyng Frederike, dyd excommunicate Lewis. Wherefore Lewis after he had fought and taken Frederike prisoner, went wyth a power into Italye, and receiued in Rome the imperiall crowne at the handes of the Cardinal Colonna, bothe by assent of all the clergie there, and of the Romaynes: who than had recovered to theim selves a maner of libertye, to chose theyr owne officers, and vsed perelye to take for theyr rulers two presidentes of theyr owne nobilitie, namyng theim vicars of the empyre. And because the emperour had dyuers waies sought to the bishop for his absolucion, and could not obtayne it, the reasone immediately after his coronacion he created a new bishop in Rome, namyng him Nicolas the. 7. who toke it vpon hym, gaue bishoprykes, & graunted dispensacions, tyl after the emperours departure oute of Italye,
he was

he was taken by the Conte Bonifacio of Pisa, & sente prisoner to the bishop John in Aughton, where he was layed in a stinkyng prison, and miserably dyed.

¶ This John condemned them as heretikes, that wold haue had the churchemen liue pozely, as Chisses discyples dyd, and burned dyuers of the.iii. order of saynete Fraunces, that than folowed this profession.

¶ Finally he died in Aughton, leauyng to his friends muche more treasure, than euer anye of his predecesours had dooen.

¶ Benedict the.xii. confyrmmed the excommunicacion agaynst the emperour Lewis of banary, not of his owne wyl (as some wryte) but in maner by constraint of the kynges of Fraunce and Paples. And the better to mainteine hys quarel, he assoyled all the astatcs of Italye of theyr feauitte to the empyre, confyrmynge theim free prynces in the same as bicars of the church. So that euer sens, the Dukes of Mylaine, with the houses of Este, of Gonzaga, and the common wealthes, of Florence, Lucca, and others esteemed themperours lesse than they did befoze.

¶ Besydes this he made the Senatours of Rome confesse theim selves subiectes to the church onely, and not to anye other power. And by his tyme Frauncis Petrarke, as a Laureate poste was crowned with Lanrel in the Capitol of Rome, by Orlo Orle of Anguillara than Senatour there.

¶ Finally this bishop died very ryche in Aughton, and lefte his gooddes to the church.

¶ Clement the.vi. chaunged the Jubiley, that was fyrste ordeined to be but ones euery hundreth yeres to be kepte euery

Benedictus.
12.

Frauncis
Petrarke.

Clemens, 6.

Jubiley,

euery. so. yere, and to hold the aſſates of Italy in am-
ree with him, he conſyrmmed eche Lorde as bicare of the
church in his owne aſſate, Viſconti in Mylaine, Ma-
lateſta in Rimino, Peſaro, & Fano, Feltrano in Vra-
bino, and a noumber of other.

In his tyme the Romains reconered theyr lyberties
agaïne, and created theyr officers without the byſhops
coſent: ſo that one Nicolas Renzo, a Romaine, being
entred into a wonderful fauoure and credite with the
people, toke vpon him the name and aucthoritie of em-
perour, wrytynge him ſelfe Nicolaus Severus et Cle-
mens, Tribunus libertatis pacis et iuſtitie, et libera-
tor illuſtris ſacre reiſpublice Romanæ. At whoſe be-
gynning al Italy was in ſuch admiraction, that euerye
pynce ſet to ſalute him as emperour: thinking he ſhuld
reſtoze the Romaine empyre to his auncient aſſate.

But his owne ſolp deſtroied him. For he toke part with
one of the factions that were than in Rome: ſo that
where befoze he had no man againſt him, now had he a
great noumber, which brought him at laſt into ſuche a
feare, that ſodenlye he diſguiſed hym ſelfe, and fledde
from Rome to Charles the. iiii. than emperoure in Al-
maine, who toke hym as a lewde perſon, and ſoz a yee-
ſent ſent hym to biſhoppe Clement to Aignton: and he
caſt him in priſon, ſendynge certayne Cardinallz to rome
to ſettel the aſſate there: whiche by meanes afozeſayde
had been a certayne ſpace diſobedyent.

In this biſhops tyme fell the yere of Bubbeley, why-
che cauſed great noambres of people from al countreys
to reſoꝛt to Rome, by reaſon wherof there fell ſuche a
plague of peſtilence, as the like hath not been heard of

Bubbeley.

Plague of
peſtilence.

For (as some aucthours asseyne) it endured continually the space of thre yeres throughout all Italy, and in most partes of the whole world, so vehemently, that of euery hundred there remayned not .x. persons aloue: and in many countreys not .x. of a thousande. Some write, that this plague began in the east parts of Asia

¶ Finally this Clement procured the restitution of the realme of Naples to Queene Johan the syxte. For the whiche, and for his other good practises at his being with hym in Auignon, he solde the citee of Auignon with the dominion apperteynyng to the same, to the church: and was contented to accept for paymente therof, the arrerages of such tributes, as the byshoppe pretended, that he and his predecessours did owe vnto the church, for the realme of Naples: wherof they claimed to be lordes in chiefe.

¶ Innocence the. vi. was more geuen to religion than diuers of his predecessours. For he reformed the courtly pompe that the Cardinals and prelates before tyme vsed, and commanded spiritual men to be resident vpon theyr benefices, with diuers other good ordres, whiche toke little effecte.

Innocentius, 6

The Romaines in his tyme toke on them theyr libertie: creatyng a Senatour of theyr owne: so that the byshop, to recouer his estat, deliuered Nicolas Renzo out of pryson, and sent hym to Rome, where on the byshops behalfe he preuailed. But through partakynge he was againe constrained to flee disguised, and being mette, was knowen and slaine.

¶ This Innocence traualled muche to haue appeased our king Edward the. iiii. with the frenche kynge John

The liues of the

in the tyme of the sharpe warres betwene thelm, trust-
ing alwayes to haue brought thelm to some good ende:
till he hearde that hyng John was taken and ledde pris-
soner into Englande.

¶ He caused Charles the. iiii. to be crowned emperoure
in Rome, and would haue quieted the Christian prince
and powers, and vnitid them in an enterpryse agaynst
the Turkes: but his purpose could not take place.

Urbanus. 5. ¶ Urbane the. v. sent Giles a Spaniarde, as his legate
into Italie, whiche Giles, with helpe of the other Ita-
lian princes, so sore oppressed the house of Visconti,
that it was lyke to haue ben destroyed, had not the kin-
ges of Englande, Fraunce, and Cypres by theyr am-
bassadors procured a peace.

¶ This Urbane withal his court went to Rome, where
after longe serche (as they walte) he founde the heades
of saincte Peter and Paule.

¶ Finally returning into Fraunce, he died by the waye,
of popson as some thinke.

Gregorius xi. ¶ Gregoꝝpe the. xi. remoued the seate of his byshoppe
from Auignion to Rome, after it hadde been holden in
Fraunce. 70. yeres. Some saye he did it because of the
cruel warres that were among the princes and lordes
of Italie: whych was ascribed to the byshop of Romes
absence: so: they residence there staled the Italian na-
cion in peace.

¶ Some saye he did it vpon a checke gotten him by a bi-
shop, that was his familiare: whome he asked why he
was not residence vppon his bishoppe, as the Canon
lawes commaunded: wherunto the bishop answered:
And why holy father are not you resident vpon yours?

But

But whatsoeuer the occasion was, he conueighed hym selfe with all his court from Auignon to Rome: where of the Romaines and clergy, he was receiued with Iubilate.

¶ After whan he had pacified most part of the Italian prince, because the Florentines would neither be intreated, nor reformed by excommunicacion, he made warre against them: and duryng the same dyed of the stone.

¶ In his tyme John Acton, with .v. or .vi. thousande Sir John Acton. englishe horsemen, sought the aduenture of the warres in Italye, and fyrst serued the ciuities of Pisa agaynst the Florentines, than the Visconti agaynst the church in whiche seruice he was taken prisoner, but afterwarde the bishop of Rome made hym his general, whilest the byshop laye in France. And than dyd John Acton gette the townes of Faenza & Bagnacavallo, wherof he solde one to the Marques of Este for 20000 crownes, and the other he kept to hym selfe. But whan the byshop was come to Rome, & had not so rewarded hym as he deserued, he forsoke the bishop, and was made generall of the Florentines. Under whome he serued verye honourable, with suche a number of oure nation, both horsemen and footemen, that all Italye feared hym: and glad was that prince that might retesgne hym. For in all his enterprises he behaued hym selfe so worthily, that the Florentines after his death buried hym honourable in theyr cathedra church, as a singuler defender of theyr common wealth.

¶ Urbane the .vi. was elected by .xviii. Cardynalles, Urbanus 6. whereof .xiii. were frenchemen, that would fayne haue chosen a byshop of theyr owne nation. But for feare

of the people that cried a Romaine or an Italian, they consented to this election, and did honour Urbane the space of. llii. monethes and moze.

¶ The season than waxynge hate, they despyzed lycence to goe abroade into the realme of Paples : where by maintenaunce of Queene Johan. viii. of the frenche Cardinales elected a new bishop of their owne naciō, namyng him Clement the. vii. wherof folowed a greate Schisme, For Germanie, Italie, and Hungarpe, helde with Urbane, and the other realmes with Clemente. So that Urbane, beyng of nature a cruel man, to make his party the stronger, called Charles Durace oute of Hungarie to conquere Paples from Queene Johan.

This Clement vpon displeasure depriued Charles, & gaue the title of the realme of Paples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, who with a puissant armie of frenchemen entred into Italie, purposyng not onely to expel Charles, but also to take Peters mantell from Urbane, but he prospered not. For after he had made warre in Puglia about. xlii. monethes, at last he was slaine in battaile. Wherof Urbane wared so proud, that because Charles kyng of Paples wold not consent to make his nephew prince of Campania, he did excommunicate him, and if his power had been equal to his wil, had deposed him of hys crowne. But Charles handled the byshop so strictly, that he was faine to flee to Genoa: In whiche journey he sacked. v. of his Cardinales, and threwe theim into the sea, and caused two other to be baken to powder, carryng theyr ashes in sakes vpon moles before him for a terrour to the rest.

¶ After this Charles death, he returned to rome, and
did a.

Cardinals
sacked and
baked.

old as much as in him lay to destroy Charles childzen. wherin he prevailed not, but rather procured hym selfe a great daunger, if he had not prevented bys myschiefe with creating of. xxix. Cardinales, wherof. xxi. were Papostanes. And finally by most opynions he was paysoned and died in Rome, to the peoples greate contentacion, that for his crueltie much abhorred hym.

¶ Boniface the. ix. of. xxx. yeares of age succeeded hym, Bonifati-
whiche had not ben seen befoze. And because he woulde us. 9
byde the Romaines from the libertie that the people had vsed many yeres in chosing of theyr officers, he absented hym selfe with his court from Rome, and lay at A scisa: so that whan the yere of Jubiley came, the Romaines could by no meane get hym to come, til they had promysed to renounce theyr libertees vnto hym, which sens that time they could neuer recover. For incōtinē-
tly as he was entred into the citee, he made Castel Sā-
Angelo so strong, that it hath ben & shalbe a cōtinuall
byde to the people: and a great stay against emperours

¶ This bishop ordeyned the Annates, that all spirituall Annates
promociōns should pay to the church of Rome, halfe
a yeres value at every chaunge: which decre toke place
in all realmes, saynge in Englande. For the kynge
and his barons woulde suffer none other but bishops to
be bound to this Annates.

¶ In his tyme the yere befoze the Jubiley, a certayne
priest passed the mountaines into Italy clothed in lyn-
nen, who drew a world of people after hym, called the
white company, persuadyng them, that a certayne crus-
cise, which he caried befoze them, dyd manye tymes
weepe. All the day longe they should traunyle on

theyr iourney, and at nyght like beaſt liſt them doſtome,
wheras the daie lighte ſayled them. But the biſhop fear-
ring this multitude, as they were commyng towardeſ
Rome, ſent men of warre againſt theim, diſperſed the
company, and brought the prieſt to rome: where for his
abulſion he was burned.

After whole death partly
through this ſonde aſſemblye, and partlye through the
great reſorte of people to Rome for the Jubiley, there
ſolowed a wonderful great peſtilence ouer all Italy.

About this time Criſolora a Conſtantinopolitane,
reuiued the Greeke letters in Italye, where they had
not been bleſ. 500. yeres beſore.

And like as this Boniface ſucceded Urbane in Rome,
euen ſo did one Peter Luna ſuccede Clement in Aug-
nion, and was called Benedicte the. xlii.

Innocen-
tius, 71

Innocence gouerned the Romaines with ſo muche ty-
ranny, that they openly murmured againſt him, and at
length ſente. xi. of theyr chiefe citelins to requyre theyr
libertee, with ſix fortrefſes that he held, as Campidoglio
Caſtel Sant' Angelo, & Pöte Molle, but al in vaine.
For he handled with yre thozenghe the meſſage, cauſed
thoſe. xi. citelins to be put to death, and thzowen oute at
the wyndowes of his nephewes houſe. So that the ro-
maines aſſembled, and not only cauſed the biſhop to flee
to Viterbo, but alſo ſacked and ſpoyled the houſes and
richesſes of all hys prelates and Courtiſanes, and the
Capitol with Ponte Molle, and woulde haue gotten
Caſtel Sant' Angelo, had it not been impregnable.

Then called they Ladislaus kyng of Naples to ayde
them, but Paulo Orſino, with the biſhops power, dyſ-
counſelled Ladislaus, & ſo conſtreigned the Romaines
to aſke

to aske mercy, to receiue theyr bishoppe home againe,
and to obey him as he would. Whereupon the byshoppe
made his nephew Lewis Marques of Ancona, and
prince of Fermo, and so dyed.

Gregory the. xii. was than chosen vppon condiction, gregorius 12.
that if Bennet the. xiii. than resident in Aisgnton, for
the vntion of the church, would consent to be deposed,
he also shoulde depose hym selfe. Whereupon a coun-
saile was called at Pisa, in the whiche they two were
deposed, and Alexander the. v. elected. But for all that
the Schisme ceased not tyl the counsaile of Constance.

Whylest this Gregory was absent Ladislaus kynge
of Naples came to Rome, and there was receiued of
the Romains as their soueraigne lord. But he enjoyed
it not longe. For Paolo Orsino foughte wyth hym to
so muche aduantage, that Ladislaus was fayne to re-
tyre into his owne realme: and diuers of the pyncipal
Romaines were for this cause beheaded.

Alexander the. v. gaue the title of the realme of Na- alexander. 5.
ples to Lewys Duke of Angiowe, and by his ecclesia-
stical aucthoritee deposed Ladislaus, and dyd what he
could in helpyng Lewys to subdue hym: but it preua-
iled not.

John the. xxi. succeeded Alexander, moze by force than Johannes 23
by free election, by reason that he, beyng legate in Bo-
nonia, where Alexander died, and hauyng the men of
warre at his commaundement, threathened so the Car-
dinalles, that they durst chose none other.

He in deede resembled moze a man of warre than a
prelate.

He moued warre against the kynge Ladislaus, but at
length

The liues of the

lengthe he was repulled ; and constrained to forsake Rome. And beyng by the whole consente of the states of chrystendome called to the counsaile of constance, where diuers crimes were laied vnto hym, he fledde a waye thence: was taken, laied in prison: and finallye he wyth Gregoꝛe the. xii. and Benedicte the. xiii. all thre than liuyng, deposed of theyꝝ pontiffcaltee, and Martine the. v. elected in theyꝝ place.

Martinus. 5

Martine the. v. reigned. xii. monethes after hys election at the counsaile of constance, the better to establissh his owne auctoritee, and than went into Italy, where he pacified the warres betwene the Duke of Maylayne and the Venetians. By force he constrained Braccio di Montone, a notable man of warre, to humble hym selfe at his feete: and to restore certayne towne that he before had taken from the church: and finallye so behaued hym selfe, that he was dner all quyetlye accepted for supreamer bishoppe : so that the Schismes, that had so longe continued ceased. And comyng to Rome, which was greatly decayed, he so disposed hym selfe to the repayyng of it, that in shorte tyme it became indifferent sayre and pleasaunt.

Eugenius. 4

Eugenie the. iiii. had so great pzease of people at hys consecracion, that the bishop of Senegalia was first led to death. And shortly after, beyng perswaded, that hys predecessour Martine, had lefte a great treasure hidde, he caused Oddo Poccio, that had bene Martines vice chamberlaine, to be set for, by his capitain Stephē Colonna: who onely of the house of Colonnese saoured the byshop. And because the seruauntes of this Stephen sacked Oddos goodes, and broughte hym lyke a theefe

theefe to the bishop, wheras he commaunded no violence to be vsed: therefore the bishop fell oute with Stephen, so that Stephen fledde to p̄reneste to the p̄ince Colonna, enformpng him, that Eugenie purposed the destruction of theyr whole name and familie. Wherupon the Colonnelli made an army, came to rome, entered in at the gate called Appia, and goynge forth as farre as saint Markes without hurt doyng, mette there with the bishops power: and foughte a soze battaile: so that at length, contrary to all mens expectacion the romaines toke the bishops parte, & constrained the Colonnelli to withdraue. In whyche retyringe they toke p̄sioners and p̄sies as in open warre: and after that vsed such practises for poysonyng of the bishop, and betraynge of Castel Sant' Angelo, wyth other lyke feates, that Eugenie was glad to entreate theim for peace, whych he easily obtayned.

Then came Edmonde the sonne of Charles the. 4. emperor to Rome, and there with great solemnitee and pompe receiued the imperyal crowne of Eugenie, and returned into his countrey without attempting anye thing of importaunce.

Not longe after the Duke of Mylasne made warre against the bishop, & sent Nicolas Fortebraccio with a great number of chosen men to Rome: who arrived there wyth so much diligence, that he passed Ponte Molle, and came to the gate Flaminia, ere euer the bishop was ware of hym.

This Nicolas Fortebraccio had serued the bishop before in a certayne enterpryse that was made at Vetrasla and Ciuita Vecchia: & because he had gotten there

Of the liues of the

many faire booties, therfoze at his retourne the bishop refused to paye him his wages, sayeng, that his sayze gayne ought to suffice him. For the whych Nicolas departed; and nolwe retourning vnder the duke of Apulaine, with helpe of the Colonnelli, encouraged the romaines so to chalenge their libertie, that Eugenie was faine to disguise him selfe in a monkes habite, and to take his hore toward Ostia. And yet erz he were farre onwarde on his way, the people hearyng of his departure folowed him downe the riuer, with hurling of stones, and shotte of arrowes: & than created newe magistrates after their owne maner, deposing & chasing away all such as had ought to do in the bishops name; and layed siege vnto castel sant angelo, which was all theyr vndoing: For the capitayne thereof wrought this pollicy, he sent his mē forth daply to skie misse, and ordeyned certayne of the to suffer the selues to be taken: who for theyr libertie and money withall, woulo promise to slea theyr capitayne, and to betraye the castell. It came to passe as it was deuysed, so that after theyr retourne to the castell, they shewed out a dead mans head, and requiring theyr money offered to deliuer vp the castell. Therupon certayne of the principall Romaynes entred, and so being taken, were occasion that within the space of .v. monethes after the Romaynes returned to theyr former obedience: the bishop than being at Florence.

This meane while the princes & prelates of all christendome began to assemble for keping of the general counsaile at Basyle: and by one agreement cited thre times Eugenie to come thither, with his cardinalles.

And

A Wittpe
pollicy,

And because he came not, they threatened to depose him
 Therefore he sent his apostolicall bulles thither wth
 certayne Cardinales to conſpyrne al thinges there de-
 termined.

Then sent he the Patriarke Vitelesco, to Rome who
 there bled many cruel tourmentes, & deathes againſt
 the enemies of Eugene: & after went into the realme
 of Naples: pretending title thereunto in the churches
 ryght, In whyche quarell he foughte wth the prynce
 of Taranto, and toke him prifoner wth two thouſand
 hoſe: and miſſed little of taking the king Alfonſe vnder
 colour of trueſe.

In his retourne to Rome he bitterlye deſtroyed Bene-
 ſte, the chiefe towne belonging to the houſe of Colona:
 but at laſt his chaunce was to be betrayed & ſlaine
 him ſelfe.

¶ After this Eugene called a counſaile in Ferrara,
 whereunto Iohn Paleologo emperour of Conſtanti-
 nople, wth the principall of the greeke church came, &
 diſputed certayne articles of religion, whyche were a-
 greed vpon in the counſaile folowing at Florence.

¶ And albeit, that Eugene had great aſſemblies at both
 theſe counſayles, yet were there a numbze of biſhops
 that ſate ſtil at Baſile, alwaies ſommoning Eugene to
 repayze thither: & at laſt for lacke of apparaunce (part-
 ly through inſtaunce of Philip duke of Milayne, than
 enemye to Eugene) the counſaile of Baſile deposed him
 and created in his place one Amideus, than beinge an
 heremite, that befoze had bene duke of Savoye: na-
 ming him Felix. By reaſon whereof Chriſtendome
 was deuided into, iiii. partes. Two helde wth theſe. ii.

R. ii.

byshops

Of the liues of the

bishops, and the.iii. with nother of bothe.

Then retourned Eugenie vnto Rome, where he was topfullye receiued of the people, and lodged the fyrste night at the gate flaminia; but the seconde daye, as he went in Pontificalibus toward sainct Peters, because the custome of the citie was reysed double, the people began to crie, downe with the customes, and with the inuentours of theim: so that the bishoppe was fayne to promysse theim it should be no moze leued.

Shortly after he made warre in the Marke of Ancona, and recouered it oute of the handes of francesco Sforza; and finallye prouoked Charles than Dolphin of Fraunce, by plaine force to dysue alwaye the bishops that helde the counsaile at Basile; and so remayned in hys estate tyl he dyed.

Nicolaus. 5.
Amideus.

Nicolaus the. v. succeeded Eugenie, vnto whom Amideus renounced his title by compulsion of the Emperour Frederike. For which renunciatio Nicolaus created hym cardinal and legate in Germany. He crowned the same Frederike and hys wyfe with the imperypall crownes in Rome, and trauailed much, partly by fayre meanes, & partly by threathinges to appease the warre betwene the princes and states of Italye: but hys excommunications could not rule theim.

Calixtus. 3.

Calixt the. iii. incontinently after his election prepared an armie against the Turkes, armed. xvi. galeis of his owne, and vnder the leading of the patriarche of Aquilegia sent theim into the Leuant seas, & ceased not to perswade all Christian princes, as muche as in hym laye, to that expedition.

Alfonse

Amongest whome Alfonse kyng of Naples, and Lewis Duke of Burgoyne, toke
ones

ones the crosse on theim towarde that wage: but thorough some occasions they chaunged purpose.

Not longe after the kyng Alfonse dyed. Wherevpon Calixt, vnder pretence of the title to the realme of Naples, made great preparacion of warre agaynst Ferdinando sonne to Alfonse: but being preuented by death bothe the rumour and feare therof ceased.

¶ When he died, he lefte. 150. thousand dukates in hys coffers, which he sayde he had prepared for the warres against the Turke.

¶ Pius the secound, shortlye after his election called a counsaile in Mantua: Unto the which came ambassadours from all Christen prynces. And all be it, that through the bishops perswasion, who was hym selfe an excellent Oratoure, it was there concluded, that to the expediton agaynst the Turkes, at the bishops deuyse, euery prynce and estate should be contributour, as wel for sendyng of men and munition, as also for mayntenance with money, yet when it came to the point there was nothyng dooen.

Pius. 2.

Durynge this counsaile, many rumours were reysed in Tuscanie, yea & in Rome, that one Tiburtio, sonne of Angelo Malsiano with certaine companions, had taken the temple of Pantheon, and there fortifyng hym, disturbed the whole citee.

¶ The partye called Auerfana, enemies to the bishop had also taken Viterbo: whych the bishoppe at his retourne recovered.

¶ All which thynges, with a number of commocions in the Marke of Ancona, in Vmbria, and in the confines there, at length the bishop appyled eether by policye or by force.

He caused Helwes the frenche kynge to renounce cer-
taine exactions, graunted him of the church in y^e coun-
saile at Basile: & defended Ferdinando kynge of Pa-
ples agaynst John sonne to Raynold duke of Anglow
Finally disposing him selfe altogether to the enter-
pryse agaynst the Turkes, & being arrived in Ancona
to meete with the Venetian galeyes and capitayne, na-
med Christofer Moro, for the same purpose, he dyed
of a continuall feuer.

And leauing behynd him. 4.000. dukates, wyth cer-
taine ships & galeys prepared for that biage: the Car-
dinalles deliuered both the one & the other to the Vene-
tian capitaine. The money to be sente to the kynge of
Hungarie, to relieue his neede, and the shippes to serue
on the seas with the Venetian army.

Paulus. 2.

Paulus the seconde so muche abhorred learned men,
that he accompted al the that were of Platos Aca-
demie to be heretikes: and depriued a nymbre of be-
tuous and learned men of suche offyces and promoci-
ons as his predeceffours had called them to: amongest
whom was Platina. And beyng entreated to be moze
gracious vnto them, considering they were olde men
had folowed the court all theyr dayes, and manye also
had bought theyr liuinges deare, so that nether by law
nor yet by reason, he ought to depriue them: he an-
swered, that forasmuch as the lawe and reason rested
in his brest, to allow or disallow what he thought good:
his will being so, it is both sufficient, law and reason.

Then picked he a quarell to the familie of Auerla,
and with helpe of certayne men of warre, sent to him
by Ferdinando king of Puples, he assaulted them, and

toke

take, nine of theſe Caſtels. Of the which ſome were ſo ſtrong, that they ſeemed impoſſible to be wonne. And becauſe the biſhop, through the kinges helpe had attayned theſe fortrefſes & poſſeſſions, the king requyred certayne ſmall benefites at his handes; but the viſcounteſſe biſhop would graunt nothing; wherefore they ſquared a litle; and then agreed agayne.

After this the biſhop gaue him ſelfe to ſolennitie and playes, and in the ſpring time deuifed a number of games & prizes to be won, & diſtributed much money amongſt boyes, the better to mainteyne his paſſime. In the ende whereof hapned him ſuch a feare, that he wylt not what to do. For it was told him that certayne yong men had conſpired againſt him by the procurement of one Calimaco a ſimple man. And further, by one Luca Torio a baniſhed Romaine had ben ſcene with a number of baniſhed men in the wooddes there by.

Upon which enſormacions he cauſed diuers men of reputation to be taken, aſwel courtyers as other, and without any matter or good ground of ſuſpicion, put theym to ſuche terrible tormentes, that it would greene any gentle heart to heare it.

He attempted the winning of Tolſa, fyrſt by treaſon, than by ſiege, and laſtly, when he could not ſo geete it, he purchaſed it for 7000 dukates.

Like wyſe he aſſaulted the citie of Rimino, to haue taken it from the familie of Malateſta, but he fayled of that enterpryſe.

He vſed very great Symonye: and when any biſhop ſlike fel, he would tranſlate the biſhop from one ſee to another, for the gayne of the fyrſt fruytes: by reaſon where

wherof he gathered a great treasure, and delisted verye muche in Jewelles.

¶ Finally he perswaded all men to kepe their childzen; at schole till they could wryte and reade: and no longer: and dyed suddenly.

Sixtus. 4. Sixtus the first, was bothe learned and eloquente, and contrary to his predecessours nature delisted in learned men.

He dyd his best to succoure the pynces that were dytuen out of theyr countreys, by the turke, as the quene of Bosnia, the Paleologi, the Despoti, and others ocher. And yet did he vniustly bothe reisse warres hym selfe, and also cause other pynces to dooe the like.

First he beganne with the Florentines, because they had emprisoned his nephew a Cardinall, and had hanged the archebishoppe of Pisa, for killinge Iuliano di Medici.

He made warre to Ferdinando king of Naples, because he had not ayded the Duke of Ferrara agaynst the Venetians.

He made warre also to the Venetians, and gathered all the estates of Italye into a leage againt them: leauing them excommunicate when he dyed.

¶ He lented many dismes and subsidies of the clergye through all Christendome, and was very beneficial to his owne kinne and dependes.

¶ Finally by his kinsne Macomet the ii. emperor, of the Turkes had taken Otronto in Puglia: and prepared him selfe to the conquest of Italye.

Wherefore the bishop made him readie to flee into Fraunce, & had shodde in deede, if God by pzenenting of that enterpryse had not

had not set a staye to the Turkythe surpe wth Mahometes death.

Innocence the. iiii. assayed the Venetians, and tra- Innocen-
tius, 4
uayled much to agree the christian princes together.

Nevertheless because his last predecesour had releas-
ed to the king of Naples certayne pretended duties of
the church: therfore, procuring firste certayne assates
of the realme to rebell, he moued warrre agaynst Fer-
dinando, and at lengthe constreygned him to agree at
his owne appoyntment.

He pacified also a great contention betwene the fa-
milies of Colonna and Orsina, whose variaunce had
bene cause of no small fyre, bloudde, and spoyle. He
had a sonne and a daughter, whom he lefts very ryche:
and was nevertheless reputed both liberall & pitifull.
Alexander the. vi. was a Spaniarde borne, and a great
philosophier. He entred in leage with Alonse kinge alexander. 6.
of Naples agaynst Charles the. viii. frenche kynge,
who then prepared him selfe to come into Italy.

Nevertheless Charles power was suche, that the by-
shop not only gaue him passage, but also receyued him
in Rome honourablie. And yet mistrustinge the
french kinges high courage, seinge he feared but little
the ecclesiastical power, the bishop withdrew hym selfe
into Castel sanct' angelo, though by sayre entreaty he
came out agayne, and yelded all his dominion at the
kinges will: and besides that deliuered him Zizimo,
brother to the great Turke, that before was the by-
shops prysoner.

But ere euer Charles returned out of the realme of
Naples, which was within lesse then halfe a yere after

the biſhop had wrought a newe league agaynſt him, wherein the emperour Maximilian, the kynge of Ara gone, the Venetians, and the Duke of Mylaine were his colleg. So that Charles in hys retourne towardeſ France was fought wiſthal, and ſore handled.

Finally Charles beyng thus departed, this biſhop beganne to ware hygh, and imaginyng how to extol his owne name, he created his ſonne Valentino Borgia duke, cauſing him fyrſt to renounce his cardinal harte, whiche at his fathers creacion was geuen him, & than made he hym capitaine of an armie ſent into Romagna: where fyrſt he warred againſt Katherine ladye of Imola & Furli, and not onely toke hir laſt poſſeſſions from hir, but alſo ſent hir priſoner to Rome: and than proceeded further againſt the other lordes theraboutes. So that hauyng chaſed away the familieſ of Maufredi, Ordelaſſi, Malateſte, Feltrani, Veranei, & diuers other, in maner of no leſſe aſtate than princes, he gatte into his poſſeſſion the countreieſ of Romagna, and Marca d' Ancona, with the dukedomes of Urbino, Camerino, and Spoleti. Of all the whiche his father entituled him duke, & entred into ſo greate a pride with hys ſonnes proſperitee, that he would ſaye to hym, eyther a Cæſar or nothyng.

Through coumfort wherof, beyng geuen to ouermuche couetouſeneſſe, in hope of empyre, he poiſoned diuers riche Cardinalles to haue theyr goodes, & amongſt his other practiſes he appointed poiſoned counteſſes for a cardinal that dined with his father, but the father hym ſelfe was ſerued of the wyngs bore and dyed. And the ſonne not long after ſlaine in the mid

deſt of

best of all his glorie: notwithstanding that by his fathers time he was coupled in marriage with the daughter of the Duke of Ferrara.

Pius the. iiii. died within a moneth, not without suspicion of venim. Pius, 3

Julye the. 2. beynge a man moze geuen to armes than to praise, moze like Iulius Caesar, than Symon Peter was wont to say, that Maximilian had been meete to be byshop, and he emperour. Julius, 2

Firste he procured such a league against the Venetians, that they had neuer a foote of ground lesse theyn on the maine lande, so that he had for his part Ravenna, with the other citees of Romagnio.

He destroyed the familie of Borgia: and queted muche the ciuile sedition, that had longe time reigned in the Romaine nobilitie.

He made warre against the Bentiuogli, that thā were lordes of Bononia, & haupnge chased theim away, entered into that citee with lyke triumph, as the auncient Romaine conquerours were wont to doe into Rome. Many tymes he would goe armed hym selfe, specially in the enterpryse againste Lodouicus Picus of Mirandula.

Finally fearyng the frenche kinges to much prosperitee, he entred in league with the Venetians, and the kyng of Spayne againste the French kyng, which was occasion of the notable battaille of Rauenna fought on Easter daye: where on both sides were slayne aboure 30000. men. For as I haue bene crediblye enformed, whā both battails were ioined, Spaniards on the one side, & frenchemen on the other, the Duke of Ferrara

S If.

that

The liues of the

that came on the franche part, shotte of his artillerie, amongst the thickest, and slewe a multitude aswell of his frendes as enemyes: but they were all strangers to him.

In conclusion the Frenchemen toke Rauenna, with diuers other citees of the bishops, whych they enjoyed not long. For the byshoppe immediately gatte into his league the emperour, the kyng of Englande, the Germanaynes, and the Suisers. So that the Franche kyngs being bered on all sides, was easely constrained to forgoe his conquestes and dominions in Italie: specially through force of the Suisers, that vnder the leading of theyr Cardinall Sedunese, came in great numbres to the bishops seruice: who rewarded them with the title of defendours of the church, & gaue them a gilt sword and an haire of maintenaunce.

Somewhat befoze his death he established his cousin Francesco Maria Duke of Urbine.

Lco. 10.

Leo the x. of the house of Medici, a florentine borne, was a pleasaunte man of nature, and gaue him selfe moze to humanitie and pleasures of this lyfe, than eyther to religion, or to encrease of dominion.

He encreased much the reputatton of his house, but because he expelled by force Francesco Maria, Duke of Urbine out of his state, & placed in the same, first hys brother Julian, and after his nephiewe Laurence, the world accused him of tyranye. For he attempted to doe the like vnto the Duke of Ferrare, but he preuailed not.

Some ill was suspected of him for his to muche delicateneſſe in bringynge vp of chyldzen, and for his opinion of

nson of immortallitee.

Adrian the. vii. by contention amongst the Cardinall^{adrian. 7.}les happened to be elected, reputed of theym for an ignoraunt man, though some other had a good opinion both of his vertue and learning. But because his lyfe was nothyng courtly or agreable to the Cardinall^{es}, either through gods visitacion, or (as most mē thinke) through theyr payson practyses, he was soone dyspatched.

Clement the. vii. brother unto Leo the. x. immediatly ^{Clemens. 7.} after his election, toke part wth the French kynge against the emperour. So that when the frenche kynge was taken before Pavia, the family of Colonna, which hath ben alwaies imperial, through helpe of Don Hugo Moncada, beganne to warre with the bishop: and after diuers subtil practises and perswasions, so handled the matter, that they entred into Rome, and missed but a litle to haue taken the bishop: who hearynge the rumour, sodainly fled to Castel sant'angelo. Wherefore after the bishop had drawen Don Hugo moncada to his parte, the Colonnese endured cruell warre to theyr great damage.

Then came the duke of Burbone, who was slayne with the shotte of an handgun fro the walles of Rome but the emperours armie, whereof he was capitayne toke the citee by assault, sacked, spoiled, & burned it: and for the space of. xv. dayes vsed suche triumphe, that for theyr passetime they would make such cardinall^{es} and prelates as were theyr prysoners, ride scoznsully about the towne vpon asses, wth theyr faces to the taylor: and so strictly besieged Clemēt, that he was faine to gene

them. 400000. dukates for his ransome, and to yelde the castel into the emperours handes.

¶ But wythin lesse than. 3. yerres after, the Emperoure came him selfe into Italye, and hauinge made peace with the bishop, receiued of hym the imperiall crowne in Bononia, wyth so greate triumphe and pompe, that the like hath not ben heard of in our daies. During the whych there came ambassadours to Clement wyth letters from Pzeter John of great commendacions, desyre of amitie, and vnion of religyon.

¶ Before theyr departure from Bononia, the emperor graunted the bishop his army against the florentines, and concluded the maryage of his bastard daughter to Clementes nephiew, Alexander di Medici, that afterwardes was duke of florence. But ere the florentines would lose theyr liberties, they susteyned a notable warre for the space of. xii. monethes.

¶ And like as by force he oppressed the florentines, so by treason he subdned Ancona. For vnder pretence of amitie and counsaile, perswading the that the Turkes armie by sea, was coming agaynst them, he sent a capitayne of his, called Bernardin, who with certaine men of warre was receyued into the citee, and so blurped the dominion for the church.

¶ In this bishops time happened such a sodayne rage of water in Rome, that the high toures were drowned and a great numbze of people, with infinite riches lost so that the bishop hym selfe had muche a doe to escape it: which may wel be thought a plague of god, sente for the abhominacion that reigned there.

¶ Finally Clement mette with the frenche kynge at

Parfeilles in Prouaunce, and there concluded the marriage that folowed betwene Katherine Clementes neece, and Henry now french kyng, than but secourde sonne to the french kyng. Shortly after whose marriage Clemente dyed.

Paule the .3. that now is byshop, befoze the tyme of his election, helde hym selfe so indifferent betwene the factions imperyal and french, that no man could knowe to whether part he was most inclyned. Paulus. 3

In the beginnyng of his time he procured all Christian princes to warre againste the Turkes, so that the emperour, the Venetians, and he made an army by sea vnder the leadyng of Andrea Doria, who mette with Barbarossa besides Corfu, but they fought no battaile though the Christians were moze in number & better furnyshed than the Turkes; whether Andrea Doria were blame woorthy I can not tell. But ones the Venetians Galeon, a notable shyppe, was lefte alone in the middell of the Turkishe naule, that assaulted hir. 4. or .5. houres, and yet at lengthe came cleane awaye in despyte of them all.

This byshop went to Nisa in Prouaunce, where by his procurement the emperour and french king mette and concluded a peace, whiche dyed not longe.

Than died the Duke of Urbine. Incontinently vppon whose death, the bishop made warre to the yonge duke Guido Vbaldo for the state of Camerino, and constrained him for a litle summe of money to geue ouer the state. In the whiche the bishoppe establisshed bys owne sonne Pietro Aluigi Duke.

After this vpon a lighte occasion the bishoppe made warre

The liues of the

warre to Ascanio Colonna, chiefe of that famillie : and Peter Aluigi beyng generall of the byshoppes armie, handled Ascanio Colonna and his adherentes so cruellly, that they were faine to abandone theyr owne townes and castelles, and to liue in exyle as banished men, till by the emperours meanes they were restozed to the bishops fauour and absolucion.

This Paule to exalte his owne bloudde, by consent of his Cardinalles exchaunged the Duchye of Camerino, wyth the churche, for the cityes and territoryes of Placentia and Parma. Whereof he inuested his sozenamed son as Duke: whose behauiour was suche, that he continued not fully two yeares: for the nobilitie of the same, detesting his wycked life and tyrannye, conspyred agaynst him, and slewe him in his owne house in Placentia: yelding that citee the nexte daye into the emperours handes.

The byshoy sent a sayze armie both of horsemen and footemen, to succour the emperour in his enterpryse agaynst the Germanes: and made his sonnes sonne, called the Duke Ottauio generall.

¶ Finally he is a great astronomer, and so olde a man that (as they say) for the most part he is nourished with the sucke of a womans byeasttes: and to helpe his colde nature hath two ponge gyzles to lye by him in his bed a nightes.

33	1	Petrus.	25	7
70	2	Linus.	11	3
81	3	Cletus.	11	1
92	4	Clemens.	9	2
101	5	Anacle tus.	9	2
110	6	Caaristus.	9	10
119	7	Alexander	10	7
129	8	sirtus.	10	3
139	9	Chelelfozus.	11	
143	10	Iginus.	4	3
147	11	Pius.	12	
159	12	Anicetus.	9	4
168	13	sotherus.	9	3
177	14	Cleutherius.	21	6
198	15	Victor.	10	3
208	16	zeferinus.	9	2
217	17	Calixtus.	5	2
222	18	Urbanus.	8	2
230	19	Pontianus.	5	2
239	20	Antherus.	3	1
242	21	Fabianus.	14	
255	22	Cornelius.	3	2
258	23	Lucius.	3	2
261	24	Stephanus.	3	9
264	25	sirtus. 2.	2	
266	26	Dyonisius.	6	3
272	27	Phelix.	4	10
276	28	Eutitianus.	8	4
284	29	Laius.	11	4
295	30	Marcellinus.	9	6
304	31	Marcellus.	5	7
309	32	Eusebius.	2	7
311	33	Melchhiades.	4	
315	34	siluester.	21	8
336	35	Marcus.	2	4
338	36	Julius.	16	7
354	37	Liberius.	16	4
370	38	Phelix. 2.	1	2
371	39	Damasus.	18	11
389	40	siritius.	15	
404	41	Anastafius.	3	2
408	42	Innocentius.	15	8
424	43	zofimus.	1	
425	44	Bonifatius.	3	4

418		45	Celestinus.	8	
436		46	Dixtus. 3	8	
444		47	Leo	21	8
465		48	Vilartus.	6	3
471		49	Simplicius	15	1
486		50	Wheltr. 3.	8	11
494		51	Agelastus	4	8
498		52	Anastafius. 2.	1	10
499		53	Simacus	15	6
514		54	Porpifoa	9	
523		55	Johannes	2	8
525		56	Wheltr. 4.	4	2
529		57	Bonifacius. 2.	2	1
531		58	Johannes. 2.	2	4
533		59	Agapitus.	1	
534		60	Silverius	1	5
535		61	Vigilius	17	6
552		62	Delagius	11	
563		63	Johannes. 3.	13	
576		64	Benedictus.	4	1
580		65	Delagius. 2.	10	2
590		66	Gregorius.	13	6
603		67	Habinianus	1	
605		68	Bonifacius. 3.		8
606		69	Bonifacius. 4.	6	8
613		70	Deodatus	4	
617		71	Bonifacius. 5.	5	
622		72	Honorius.	12	11
634		73	Seuerinus	1	
635		74	Johannes. 4.	1	9
936		75	Theodorius	6	5
643		76	Martinus	6	1
650		77	Eugenius	3	
653		78	Aitellianus	14	6
667		79	adeodatus	4	7
672		80	Donus	1	2
673		81	Agatha	2	6
676		82	Leo. 2.		10
677		83	Benedictus. 2.		10
679		84	Johannes. 5.	1	11
682		85	Conon		
684		86	Sergius	14	8
698		87	Johannes. 6	3	3
703		88	Johannes. 7.	2	7

Anno do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	peres,	monethes
707	89	Sissinus.		20, daies
713	90	Constantinus.	7	
729	91	Gregorius. 2.	2	9
740	92	Gregory. 3.	10	8
752	93	Zacharias.	10	2
757	94	Stephanus. 2.	5	1
768	95	Paulus.	10	10
769	96	Constantinus. 2.	1	1
772	97	Stephanus. 3.	3	5
796	98	Adrianus.	23	10
817	99	Leo. 3.	20	5
820	100	Stephanus. 4.	3	7
827	101	Paschalis.	7	3
830	102	Eugenius. 2.	4	
831	103	Valentinus.		40, daies
846	104	Gregorius. 4. 16.	16	
848	105	Sergius. 2.	2	3
858	106	Leo. 4.	2	5
860	106	Johannes. fe. 7.	2	5
863	107	Benedictus. 3.	9	1
871	108	Nicolaus. 9.	5	9
877	109	Adrianus. 2.	10	
887	110	Johannes. 8.	1	5
888	111	Martinus. 2.	1	3
890	112	Adrianus. 3.	6	
896	113	Stephanus. 5.	5	6
901	114	Formosus.		15, daies
901	115	Bonifatius. 6.	1	3
902	116	Stephanus. 6.		3
902	117	Romanus.		20, daies
902	118	Theodorus. 2.	2	
904	119	Johannes. 9.	3	4
907	120	Benedictus. 4.		40, daies
907	121	Leo. 5.		7
907	122	Christopherus.		3
491	123	Sergius. 3.	7	2
916	124	Anastadius. 3.	2	6
917	125	Lando.		
930	126	Johannes. 10.	13	2
930	127	Leo. 6.		6
933	128	Stephanus. 7.	2	1
937	129	Johannes. 11.	4	10
941	130	Leo. 7.	3	6
	131	Stephanus. 8.	3	4

944	132	Martinius. 3.	3	6
948	133	Agapitus. 2.	9	7
958	134	Johannes. 12.	4	10
962	135	Benedictus. 5.		2
962	136	Leo. 8.	1	4
963	137	Johannes. 13.	6	11
969	138	Benedictus. 6.	1	6
971	139	Donus. 2.	1	6
971	140	Bonifatius. 7.		6
973	141	Benedictus. 7.	8	5
981	142	Johannes. 14.		8
982	143	Johannes. 15.		4
982	144	Johannes. 16.	10	6
992	145	Gregorius. 5.	2	5
994	146	Johannes. 17.		10
995	147	Silvester. 2.	4	1
997	148	Johannes. 18.		5
1000	149	Johannes. 19.	4	4
1004	150	Sergius. 4.	2	6
1006	151	Benedictus. 8.	11	15
1018	152	Johannes. 20.	9	
1027	153	Benedictus. 9.	10	4
1038	154	Silvester. 3.		2
1038	155	Gregorius. 6.	2	3
1040	156	Clemens. 2.		9
1040	157	Damasus. 2.		1
1040	158	Leo. 9.	13	2
1053	159	Victor. 3.	1	3
1058	160	Stephanns. 9.		4
1060	161	Benedictus. 10.		8
1661	162	Nicolaus. 2.	3	6
1063	163	Alexander. 2.	11	6
1073	164	Gregorius. 7.	12	1
1085	165	Victor. 3.	1	4
1086	166	Urbanus. 2.	12	4
1100	167	Valchalus. 1.	18	3
1118	168	Gelasius. 2.	1	5
1120	169	Calixtus. 2.	5	10
1126	170	Donozius. 2.	5	5
1131	171	Innocentius. 2.	14	5
1145	172	Celestinus. 2.		5
1146	173	Lucius. 2.		11
1147	174	Eugenius. 3.	8	7
1155	175	Anastatius. 4.	4	4

anno do.	numbre of by.	Names.	Yeres.	monethes
1158	176	Adrianus.	4	10
1161	177	Alexander. 3.	21	
1181	178	Lucius. 3.	4	2
1185	179	Urbanus. 3.	1	11
1186	180	Gregorius. 8.		2
1186	181	Clemens. 3.	2	
1188	182	Celestinus. 3.	6	7
1195	183	Innocentius. 3.	18	4
1214	184	Honorius. 3.	10	7
1225	185	Gregorius. 9.	14	3
1240	186	Celestinus. 4.		18. dayes
1242	187	Innocentius. 4.	11	6
1254	188	Alexander. 4.	6	6
1262	189	Urbanus. 4.	3	1
1265	190	Clemens. 4.	3	9
1271	191	Gregorius. 10.	1	2
1273	192	Innocentius. 5.		5
1273	193	Adrianus. 5.		40. dates
1273	194	Johannes. 11.		8
1273	195	Nicolaus. 3.	3	8
1276	196	Martinus. 4.	4	1
1280	197	Honorius. 4.	2	1
1284	198	Nicolaus. 4.	4	1
1286	199	Celestinus. 5.		5
1290	200	Bonifatius. 8.	8	9
1291	201	Benedictus. 11.		9
1300	202	Clemens. 5.	8	10
1302	203	Johannes. 12.	19	3
1317	204	Benedictus. 12.	7	3
1336	205	Clemens. 6.	10	8
1343	206	Innocentius. 6.	10	
1353	207	Urbanus. 5.	8	5
1362	208	Gregorius. 11.		8
1371	209	Urbanus. 6.	11	8
1379	210	Bonifatius. 9.	14	9
1380	211	Celestinus. 6.	15	
1390	212	Benedictus. 13.	21	
1399	213	Innocentius. 7.	2	
1404	214	Gregorius. 12.	2	7
1407	215	Alexander. 5.		8
1409	216	Johannes. 13.	4	10
1410	217	Martinus. 5.	14	3
1415	218	Eugenius. 4.	15	
1430	219	Philip. 5.	9	
1438				

Ynne do.	Numbre of by.	Names.	peres.	monethes
1447	220	Nicolaus. 5.	8	
1455	221	Calixtus. 3.	3	3
1458	222	Pius. 2.	5	12
1464	223	Paulus. 3.	6	
1471	224	Sixtus. 4.	13	
1484	225	Innocentius. 8.	5	12
1492	226	Alexander. 6.	11	
1503	227	Pius. 1.		1
1503	228	Julius. 2.	9	4
1513	229	Leo. 10.	9	3
1522	230	Adrianus. 6.	1	7
1523	231	Clemens. 7.	11	
1535	232	Paulus 3.	14	

Authoures do barpe some what in the tymes
 of these byshoppes, but I haue agreed the
 best together, and so haue set
 it foorth.









Because the maruaylous situa-
 cion of the citee of Venice, amongst
 other thinges seemeth vnto me most
 notable, I therefore haue thoughte
 good fyrst to treathe therof: and than
 consequently to procede vnto the de-
 claracpon of the Venetians astate, theyr customes and
 procedynges.

Of the meruailouse Site.

VWhen I consider what thinges necessitee causeth
 (haupng an earnest proufe for my parte therof) I
 nothyng meruayle, to see the wonders that it
 worketh. For he that beholdeth the place, where Venice
 standeth, and would imagine it to be without any build-
 dyng or habitacion, should saye it were the rudest, vn-
 meetest, and unhollsomest place to builde vpon or to en-
 habite, that were againe to be founde thoroughoute an
 whole worlde: It standeth open vppon the mayne sea,
 foure miles from the neereſt maine land, in such a mar-
 rishe, as at euery low water leaueſh the muddy ground
 vncouered, and at euery ful sea drowneſh it cleane.

And yet men (conſtreigned of neceſſitee) haue brought
 this marishe to ſuche a paſſe, that it is nowe not onely
 excedyng ful of people, and riſhe of treaſure and buyl-
 dynges: but ſo holeſome wythall (thoughe the muche
 haunte of people and the great number of continuall
 fyres) that I thynke none other citee habile to ſhewe ſo

¶

many

many olde men. But were it not, that as it seemeth nature hath of purpose made a banke two or thre miles of, betwene it & the sea, it were impossible to be inhabited: Because the citie standing equall with the water, the floudde by reason shold passe through the houses at euery full sea. But this banke, that beginneth at Chiozza, and stretcheth toward the citie of Concordia, 60. miles of lengthe, doeth so defende the water floudde, that within those marishes it hath nothing the like force as on the other sea costes. For it is a great matter whan the sea swelleth in Venice. iiii. or v. foote aboue the lowe water marke: Notwithstanding that the citie seemeth to be rather in a part of the sea, than in a marish. For euery chanel (as who would say euery streete) is full of water, and the chanelles are so many, that you may row through al partes of the citie, though there be wates also, to goe on lande if you list. Which streetes for the moste part are verie narrow, and the houses nothing so faire as on the water side. And in the marishes, betwene the citie and the maine lande, whan the water is low, the most part of the chanelles are so shalow, that the botes haue much a dooe to passe to and fro. For the mudde encreaseth dayly, by reason of the lande floudde, that a number of sluices fallnge into the same, doe carie with theim. And a wonderful treasure the Venetians spend in continuall digging and carying away of that mudde, to preserve the foresaied chanelles, and to defende, that they citie forgoe not to the maine lande.

The banke before rehearsed, is broken in. vii. places, though the whiche botes maie come in: but no shyppe can passe

can passe to Venice, sauing at the porte of Malomoco
 or at the two Castellles of Lio. The entrie whereof is
 so dangerous (by reason the sandes are mouable here
 & there) that when any shippe cometh in, she taketh first
 pilottes to sounde the waye: which in effectre is repated
 to be one of the greatestt suretyes, that the Venetians
 haue for defence of theyr citee, agaynst all enemies by
 sea: and than by land it is impossible to hurt or besiege
 it, unlesse the enemye were hable to occupie. 150. myle
 compasse with his army.

Of buildynges.

Nexte vnto the situacion, the maner of theyr build-
 ynge is most to be meruailed at. For almoste e-
 uery mā that buildeth an house, maketh his fou-
 dacion lower than the water: & er cuer he set in hande
 withal, is constrained to make sache a stronge pale of
 pyles and mudde betwene his buildyng and the water
 as shall be able to defende his woozke, whan (after he
 hath closed it well) the water and mudde that resteth
 wythin, is clenched and emptied oute. Than causeth
 he strong pyles of timber of a great length, to be dycted
 in, and therupon wyth stone and grauel beginneth his
 foundacyon. So that whan he hath brought it to the
 ful sea marke, he rekeneth to haue furnished one halfe
 of his buildyng: notwithstandinge that aboue water
 I thinke no place of all Europe, hable at this daye to
 compare with that citee for number of sumptuose
 houses, specially for theyr frontes. For he that woul
 rowe through the Canale grande, and marke wel the

The Venetian astate.

frontes of the houses on bothe sydes, shall see theim, moze lyke the doynges of prynces then pruate men.

And I haue been with good reason perswaded, that in Venice be aboue. 200. palatces able to lodge any king
¶ But now to the particuler of theyr notable buildinges: The new Castell, at the mouth of the hauen Ado, for strengthe and beautie is one of the rarest thynges dooen in these dayes.

¶ The church of S. Marke is a verve antique thyng, furnished with goodlye pillers of fine marble, to the nnumber of. 900. as they saye) besides the flooze vnder foote of smal marble stones, wrought in knottes of diuers colours, and foure faire brassen hozes ouer the fronte.

¶ The Dukes palaice is a very sumptuous building, and not yet finished.

¶ The strete called, La piazza di San Marco, is verie fayre and large, and the one syde is builte of harde stone, all vniformely with faire glasen wyndowes, and the strete by lato, paved ouer with bricke.

¶ Saint Markes steeple is a verate hyghe and fayre toure of bricke, so wel built, that withinfoz the an hozse maye be ledde by vnto the belfroy.

The Rialto is a goodly place in the hert of the citee, where the merchauntes, twyse a day assemble.

¶ The schooles of S. Roche and S. Marke, are two notable thynges: the frontes whereof are the fayrest and coeliest that euer I haue seen.

¶ Finally, the Arsenale in myne eye exceedeth all the rest: For there they haue well nere two hundred galleys in such an order, that vpon a very smal warning they

they may be furnyshed out vnto the sea. Besydes that for every daye in the yeare (whan they would goe to the cosse) they should be able to make a newe galey: hauinge such a staple of timber (whyche in the water wythin Th'arsenale hathe lyen a seasoninge, some, 20 yeare, some, 40. some an. 100. and some 3. Iwot not how longe) that it is a wonder to see it. And euerye of these galeys hath his couerpyng oꝝ house by hym selfe on the dyꝛe londe: so that the longe lyng vnoccupied can not hurte theim. Their mastes, cables, sailes, ankers, roo- ders, oꝛes, and euery other thyng are redy in houses of offices by theim selves, that vnseen it is almost incredible: with suche a quantetee of artillerie, bothe for Sea and lande, as made me to wonder, besides the harnesse and weapons, that suffice (as they saye) to arme an 100000 men. Finallye the nūmber of wooꝝkemen, waged for terme of life aboute those exercises, is wonderfull. For by all that I could learne, theyꝛ ordinarie is neuer lesse than, 600. working in the Arsenale, be it peace oꝝ warre. And because they haue suche a number of botemen, that continually liue by gaine vpon the water within the citee: they neede not to seeke further for mariners to furnishe their galeys wythall. For it was credible tolde me, that there are no lesse than 12000. botes dayly seruinge in those theyꝛ chanelles: and almost no bote rowed, but of a sufficient mariner. So that if the Venetians had ben men, as the romains were, geuen as wel vnto chynaltie by land, as vnto the exercise on the water: no doubt that might many yeres agoen haue subdued the woꝛlde. What fare theyꝛ power hath been moꝛe warrely gouerned, than boldly enlar-

The Venetian astate.

ged. For sens Constantinople was gotten by the turkes, theyr dominion hath decreased, both by reason (as the same goeth) they rather practise with money, to buye and sel countrieys, peace and warre: than to exercise deedes of armes: and for that moste Venetians are at these daies become better merchautes than men of warre.

And now me thinketh it convenient to speake in this place, of the armory that is in an hall of the dukes palatse, called La Sala del Consiglio d'i dieci, whiche surely is a very notable thing.

There be (as they reckon) a thousand cotes of plate, parte covered with clothe of gold and velvet, with gilt nayles so sayre, that princes myght weare them: besides diuers other sayre harnaises made of plate, whiche are bestowed in so sayre an order, with theyr diuers kyndes of weapons, furnished of the beste sorte, that a great while lookynge on, could not satisfie me. This hall is diuided into diuers seuerall porcyons, as the house doeth geue it, and euerye porcion hath his sorte by him selfe very handsomely.

Finally for prouision of freshe water it is a wonder to see theyr noumber of costly welles, made only to receiue the raine that falleth from the houses. I call them costly, because fyrt every well hath his bar come as low as the salt water, and must therefore be so surely walled and stopped with lande on the vtter syde, that it defend the salte water from solynge in. And on the inner side it muste haue his vent to receiue the water, that falleth from the houses, grauel with in to passe the rough, and last of all a sayre pauieng of bytche or stone
in the

in the bottome closed about lyke a cesserne, to preserve the purged water.

And though they haue a great noubmer of those welles, and plentie of raine, yet the pooze men, that dwell in the countrey, doe gaue verely aboue, 20000. crownes, by bringing theyr botes laden with freshe water from the riuers to Venice. Yet all this notwithstanding, you shal many times heare much lamentacion among the pooze folke for lacke of water.

Of the dominion.

Besides all those towne and habitacions that are in theyr marshes, & on that long banke betwene them and the sea, as Murano, Mazzorbo, Torcello Malamoco, Chiozze, and others, they haue on the maine land the countrey of Friuli, anciently called Forum Iulii, the citiees of Treviso, Padoa, Vicenza Verona, Bressa, Bergamo, and Crema, with theyr appurtenaunces.

The most part of the countrey of Istria, and vpon the costes of dalmatia (now called Schlauonia) they haue Zara and Zebenica: In the mouthe of the Adriatique sea the ile of Corfu, and in the Leuant seas, otherwyle called Mare Mediterraneum, the notable ilandes of Candia and Cyprus. So that if the ground that they be lordes of, were in one mans handes, he should be no lesse worthy to be called a kynge, than most kinges that are knowen at these dayes. For not long agoen Cyprus (a parte of this) hath had a kynge alone. And how and whan they gotte these thinges, this hystorie shal, hereafter folowing particularly declare it.

The Venetian astate.

Of reueneue.

AS I haue been crediblye enformed by some gentlmen Venetians, that haue had to doe therein, they leaue of theyr subiectes little lesse than .4. millions of golde by the yeare, whiche (after oure olde reckenyng) amounteth to the summe of tenne hundred thousande poundes sterlyng. A thing rather to be wondred at than beleued, considering they reyse it not vpon landes, but vpon customes after so extreme a sort, that it would make any honest herte sorrowfull to heare it. For there is not a graine of corne, a spoonefull of wine, a corne of salte, egge, byrde, beaste, soule, or fysh bought or solde, that payeth not a certaine custome. And in Venice specially the customers parte in many thinges, is moze than the owners. And if any thing be takē by the waye vncustomed, be it merchaundise or other, neuer so great or small, it is forfeited. For those customers kepe suche a sorte of prollers to serche al thinges as they come to and fro, that I thynke Cerberus was neuer so greedye at the gates of hell as they be in the chanelles about Venice. And though they in serchyng abote, finde no forfeiture, yet woul they not departe without drubkyng money. And manye times the meane labourer or craftesman throughout al their dominyon, payeth a rate for the Poll by the moneth. In so much that a Candiose my friende (one that had dwelled in Constantinople) sware to me by hys faith, the Christians liued a great deale better vnder the Turke, than vnder the Venetians. It is almoste incredyble what gaine the Venetians receiue by the vsury of the Jewes, both pryncatly and in common. For in euerye cities

elſe the Jewes kepe open ſhops of uſurie, taking gaſſes of ordinarie ſoz. x. in the hundred by the yere; and if at the yeres ende, the gaſſe be not redeemed, it is ſoſeſte, or at the leaſt dozen away to a great diſaduantage: by reaſon wherof the Jewes are out of meaſure wealthy in thoſe parties.

Of dignitees and offices.

They haue a duke called after theyr maner, doge, who onely (amongſt al the reſt of the nobilitie) hath his office immutable ſoz terme of life: with a certaine yerely prouiſſion of. 4000 duckates or therabouts. But that is ſo appointed vnto him ſoz certaine ordinarie feaſtes, & other lyke charges, that bys owne aduantage therof can be but ſmal. And though in apparaunce he ſeemeth of great aſtate, yet in veray dedde his power is but ſmall. He kepeth no houſe, lyueſtyll privately, & is in ſo muche ſeruitude, that I haue hearde ſome of the Venetians theim ſelfes cal him an honourable ſlaue: for he cannot goe a mile out of the towne without the counſaills licence, nor in the towne depart extraordinaryly out of the palatce, but privately and ſecretely: And in his apparaille he is preſcribed an ordze: ſo that in effect, he hath no maner of preeminence but the bare honour, the gift of a few ſmal offices, and the libertie, *Di mettere vna porta*, which is no more, but to propound vnto any of his counſailes his opinion, touching the ordze, reſormacion, or correction of anye thyng: and that opinion euery counſaile is bound to receiue into a trial of theyr ſentences by Ballot: (the manner of

The Venetian astate,

ner of the whych ballottting shal hereafter appeare, and this priuilege, to haue his onely opinton ballotted, no man hath but he. And wheras many haue reported, that the Duke in ballottting should haue two voices, it is nothinge so: for in geuyng his voice he hath but one ballot, as all others haue.

Next vnto the Duke are thre called the Signori Capi, or Cai, whych outwardly seeme inferioure to the Duke, and yet are of more auctoritee than he. For theyr power is so absolute, that if there happen cause why, they may arrest the Duke. And all suche proclamacions as concerne y^e maiestee of theyr comon welth goe forth alwaies vnder theyr name: Lyke as we vse so, saye in the kinges name, so saye they, Da parte dei Signori Cai. Two of which Cai, or one of them, with one of the Auogadori, haue power. Di metter vna parte, such as is before rehearsed of the Duke.

¶ Then haue they. vi. counsaillours of the mosse worthy amonge them, who are toggned with the Duke to sitte in the college for audience of ambassadours, and other matters of impoztaunce: and these speciallye are called La Signoria. For notwithstandinge there be diuers toggned in the same college with them, as, Glisfani della terra ferma, and other moe: yet those. vi. counsaillours are of most reputacion in that place: and accordyngly go alwaies apparailled in skarlet or crimisen sylkes.

An dede, La Signoria, is commonly vsed as the name of theyr whole maiestee, and principally it doth include the Duke, with the reste of the chiefe officers or senators (to the number of thre score) that accompaneth him,

him, whan in his solemnitie he cometh to church, or goeth vnto any of the ordinarie ceremonies abroade in the citee.

¶ Powe of suche as haue auctoritie to consulte vppon matters of importaunce (as we should say, the kinges maiesties priuie counsaile) they haue. xlii. persons appointed, called Il Consiglio di dieci: Of whiche the Duke, the three Cai, and the. vi. counsaillours are part.

¶ For matters of conclusion of peace, of warre, of astate, or of other lyke greatest importaunce, they haue a counsaile called, Pregadi, into the which entreib the Duke, with the Consigliode dieci, and of the other principal officers, to the number of. 200. or therabout.

¶ For matters of iustice, there be diuers other offices, as Il Consiglio di Quaranta, Il Consiglio di trenta gl' auogadori, i Signori di notte, gl' Auditori necchie nuoui, and many moe: whiche haue theyr degrees and orders so appointed, that not one of theim woulde meddel with an others office: beinge a thyng no lesse fearefull vnto theim than payson. For theyr pryncypall profession is libertie: and he that shoulde vsurpe vpon an other, shuld incontynently be reputed a stranne: whiche name of all thynges they cannot abyde. For whan a subiecte of theyr salety: sir, you are my lord, you are my maister, he taketh it for the greatest villany of the wo:ld.

The Signor della Sanita hath the charge to see the citee kepte cleane, and the sicke prouyded for. And as for other particuler officers, that haue the ouersight of all maner prouisions and assise of vitualles, it shal suffice to say, that there cometh nothinge vnto theyr citee,

The Venetian astate,

but it is viewed, and an ordinarie price appointed vnto the seller, to the intent the buyer be not deceived.

¶ Of the great counsaile.

NOwe it becometh me to saye somewhat of theyr great counsaile, whiche seemeth to be the whole stay of theyr common wealth.

There be about, 200. families of name, as Contarini, Morosini, Donati, Badoeri, Foscarini, and suche others: of whych families be welneete the number of 2500. gentilmen. And all they that are of the age of 25. and bpwardes, doe enter into the greate counsaile: the order of whose admission into the same is: When a gentilman is growen vnto, 20. yeare olde, bys father or friendes doe present him vnto the Auogadori, who taketh his name, & with other names of the same sorte, putteth it into a boxe, vntill the. iiii. of December: beinge the daye appointed, that all they of that age resort vnto the Duke, vnto whome (besides this boxe) there is brought an other boxe, with so many balles, as the names amount vnto: of whych euerie fiftie ball is golde, and all the rest syluer. Then taketh the Duke a bil out of one boxe, and a ball out of an other, and if the bil meete with a golden bal, chan is that gentilman allowed: and if he meete not, chan must he abide a better chaunce the next yere, or els the age of, 25.

¶ This foresayd greate counsaile maye be lykened to oure parliament. For vnto it many matters of importance are appealed, and that that it dooeth, is vnreresonable. By it all offices are geuen. And into it en-

stretch

treth the Duke, and all the other officers. And ſynallye there paſſe ſo many thinges throug that great counſaile (ſpecially offices) that ordinarily euery holy daye, and many times the workendates, the ſame ſitteth from dinner til nyght. The order being this.

¶ They haue an hall verſe ſayze and large, in the principall parte whereof, at the one ende, ſitteth the Duke with certayne counſailours. And ouer agaynſt hym at the other end the Cai: and on the ſides the Auogadori, with the other magiſtrates. Than in the body of the hall there be tenne longe benches from the one ende therof vnto the other, and ſo made, that the gentlemen maye ſitte by two rowes on a benche backe to backe.

And ſo euery man being ſet, in what place it ſhal pleaſe him to take his coming in, the doores are ſhut: and the chauncelloure ſtandeth by, & readeth the office that is voyde, with the names of theſe that deſyre it: and he that in the election hath moſt ballottes (ſo that they paſſe the halfe nnumber) is admitted officer. If there be none that hath moze than halfe the voices as of a 1000. to haue, 501: than is the election put ouer tyll an other daye. This maner of geuyng theyr voices by ballotte, is one of the laudableſt thinges bleſed amongeſt theſe. For there is no man can know what an other dooeth.

¶ The bores are made with an holow place at the top, that a man may put in his hand, and at the ende of that place hange. ii. oz. iii. bores, into whiche if he wyll, he may let fall his ballot, that no man can perceiue hym. If there be but two bores (as commonly it is in election) the one ſaſeth yea, and the other ſayerh naye: And

The Venetian astate.

It there be.iii.bores (whiche for the most parte hapneth in cases of iudgement) the one saith yea, thother sayth naye, and the thyrde saith nothyng: and they are all well enough knowen by theyr dyuers colours. By this order of ballottynge they procede in iudgement thorough al offices, vpon all maner of causes: beyng reputed a soueraigne preservation of iustice. For oftentimes the iudges may graunt theyr voices, and neuertheless (whan they come to the hearing of the matter) doe as theyr consciences shall leade theim: aunsweryng after wardes, that they did theyr beste, but they could not pvenale.

¶ Finally in the disposyng of theyr offices they vse this order: that all offices of preeminence, as of the Signoria, that are befoze rehersted, or the beeyng Potestate, Capitaine, or Gouernour of anye citee, castell, towne, or countrey, may be geuen to none other, but vnto gentilmen Venetians. All offices, that be vnder commandement, as chauncellour, secretaries, and suche others, are bestowed amongst theyr best knowen ciuelins. For though there be many of those offices of commandement verie profitable, yet can no gentylman haue the benefite thereof. Either because they woulde maynteine in theyr personages a certein maiestee, with theyr libertee, or els because they woulde aduolde the inconueniencies that maye growe of perpetuitee. For all maner of gentilmens offices, from the highest to the lowest (the Dukes dignitie onely excepted) ar remouable, some from yere to yere, some euery .ix. monethes, some moze, some lesse (for no gentylman may long enioy one office): So all offices, that appertayne vnto theyr ciuelins, are du-

rable for terme of life without any change.

¶ Amongest al other, this notable order they haue, that two gentilmen of one familie cannot be in one magystrate or hygh office together at ones. By reason wherof those gentilmen, that of one name are fewest in number, grow a great deale soner and oftner to authoritee, than they that be of the most: whiche is thoughte a wonderful helpe of their vnitee and concoorde. For if many of one name shoulde rule at ones, they myghte happen so to agree, that it should be an vndoing of their common wealthe.

¶ Of the proctours and treasure.

There be certeine pꝛincipall officers, which shoulde seeme exempted from theyꝝ common wealth and be neuertheless head of the same, that is to wete xii. of the pꝛincipallest called Procuratori di S^a Marco out of whiche number the Duke is alwaye chosen: and those haue theyꝝ offices for terme of life, with a certeine stipende of an hundred dukates a yere, or there about. Theyꝝ charge is, some to gouerne the reuenewes and treasure of the common wealthe, and some the rentes and treasure of saint Markes church.

¶ As for the treasure of theyꝝ common wealth I could neuer fynde the meane to see it: but I haue been crediblie enformed, that it is a great summe of ready money locked vp in chestes, (that no man may come at) which is sometime moze and sometime lesse, as theyꝝ wealth or charges encrease. And thoughe theyꝝ reuenewes be

very

The Venetian astate.

berle great, yet considering the often warres that they haue, the great wages that the senatours and officers receiue, the number of straunge capitaynes that they wage for terme of life, the number of castels and fortresses that they maintaine, fortified with watche and warde, they continually costly buildynges, and finally the vnrasonable charge of theyr Arsenale, & of theyr galeys abzade, I thinke they cannot laye by any great some at the peres ende.

The other treasure of saincte Markes church, I haue seen: the principal thing whereof is a table on the high altar, plated ouer with siluer, grauen and enameled, and set full of precious stones of all sortes. And than in a little stronge corner on the southside of the church are certaine plates of golde much like womens partes, lattes set full of riche stones, a goodly imperial crowne for theyr duke, two sayre vnicornes harnes, and diuers other thinges, the value wherof consisteth onely in the precious stones: For the golde that is aboute theim is but smal in quantitee, but the stones are many in number, excellent great and sayre, and almoste inestimable of pryce.

Finallye to recourne vnto the Proctours, theyr reputation is the greatest next the dukes, and there is none can climbe vnto that dignitee, but either he muste be so worthy, auncient and notable a man, as fewe lyke are to be found amongst theim: or els so riche, that in time of neede he hath before his election releued the common wealth with the lone of a notable summe of money. Whiche seconde sort of election is also common hyppes of late, sens money (as some say) hath entered in more reputacion than vertue.

Of lawes.

They? aduocates (as we shoulde saye oure men of law) study principally the ciuile lawes, and besydes that the statutes and customes of the citee, whiche are so many, that in maner they suffise of thein selves. But he that substantially considereth the manner of they? procedynges, shal plainly see, that al matters are determined by the iudges consciences, & not by the ciuile, nor yet by they? owne lawes. For in euery office there be dyuers iudges, and that parte that hath most ballottes, preuaileth euer: be it in matter of debt, of title of lande, vpon life and death, or otherwise. And in euery trial of thefte, murder, or suche other, the partye hym selfe is neuer suffred to speake. But there be certesine aduocates waged of the common reuenew, whiche with no lesse study pleade in their defence, than the Auogadori, in the contrarie. One daye the Auogador cometh into the court, and lateth against the felon that, that either by examinacion, by torture, or by witnesse hath been proued: And an other day cometh in the aduocate, and defendeth the felon with the best answer he can deuise: so that many times the prisoner taryeth, .2.3. and sometyme. iiii. yeares, er euer he come vnto his triall of life and death.

This order they obserue in Venice onely. For oute of Venice the gentilmā Venetian, that is Potestate of the citee, towne, or place, hath absolute power to iudge vpon all matters hym selfe alone: how be it euerye of thein, hath a counsaile of learned men, to aduise hym what the lawe commaundet. Besydes that, euerye .v.

peres there be certaine Inquissitours, called Sindici, set forth to reforme extorcion, and all other thinge that they fynde amisse, throughout theyr whole dominion.

¶ Finally there is a law in Venice, that no gentilman Venetian may speake wth any ambassadour, without licence of the Signoria, for feare of intellygence, or of dangerous practise. And because they feare, least ciuile sedicion might be the destruction of their common wealth, as of diuers other it hath been, therefore they haue prouided an order, that when any two gentilmien happen to fall out, either they doe so dissemble it, that theyr malice neuer appeareth to the world, or els they agree within theim selves. For if it come to the Signorias knowlage, it cannot be chosen, but he that is most faultie receiueth a great rebuke, and many tymes in those cases diuers are banished, or sharply punished. As for theyr other lawes, though I were sufficientely expert in them, yet partly for bysessenesse, and partly because they are not so much necessarye to my purpose, I passe theim ouer. But this is cleere, there can be no better order of Iustice in a common wealth than theirs if it were duely obserued. How be it corruption (by the aduocates meanes) is so crept in amongst the iudges, that poore men many times can waite no delates in the proccesse of theyr matters.

Of warre.

I fynde two sortes of warre, one by sea, an other by lande.

¶ By sea the Venetians theim selves gouerne the whole

whole, and by lande they are serued of straungers, both for generall, for capitaines, and for all other men of warre: because they lawe permitteth not any Venetian to be capitaine ouer an armie by lande. (Fearing A thynke Cæsars example) Neuerthelesse with they army by lande, they sende forth the dyuers of they gentylmen, some as legates, some as payemaysters. So that they generall, (what noble man soeuer he be) hath alwaies a counsaile of the Venetians about him: by whō in maner all thynges are dooen.

And by sea euery Galey hath one gentylman Venetian for capitaine, by the name of Sopracomito; and ouer a noubber of galeis one Legate (as it were an admyrall) that may haunge and punishhe at hys pleasure. Thys is ordinary both in peace and warre, for though the peace be neuer so sure & quyet, yet faile they not to send forth yerely certayne armed galeis to kepe the seas againste Corsales, & Pyrates: not onely because they merchaundise may passe saufely to and fro, but also for the honour that they claime in the dominion therof.

For yerely on the ascension day, the Duke, with the senate, in they best aray vse to go into the hauen at Lio, and there by thowpyng a ryng into the water, to take the sea as they spouse.

¶ Finallye whan they hadde to haue any daungerouse warre by sea or lande, they creat a Proueditore, who (out of Venice) is of no lesse authozitee, thā the Dictator was wont to be in Rome: specially by sea. And lightly they neuer make a Proueditore, but either they be in great feare, or perill. And throughout all they dominion, within any citee or walled towne, no man may

The Venetian astate.

carie weapon without a speciall licence.

Of common prouision and charitable deedes.

They diligent vse in prouision for graine is notable . For be it deare or good cheape they com-
mon graner (whiche is a myghtie greate house)
is in maner alwayes furnished . So that lyghtly in
the citee can be no great dearth, because many times of
their owne common purse, they are contented to lose
for the pooze peoples reliefe (though another time they
pay theim selves the double).

They haue also certaine schooles or felowships ga-
thered together for deuotion, as one of saincte Marke,
an other of sainct Rooke, one of this sainct, an other of
that; which (beyng for the most part substantiall men)
doe releue a noubmer of the pooze after this sorte.

Pooze people. They geue theim ones a yere a course livery, with a
certaine smal stipende, for the which the pooze man is
bound to carie a taper at one of the betherne or sisters
burial, and besides that to attend certeine holidays at
the schoole, where the p[ri]ncipal betherne assemble, to
dispose vnto the mariage of pooze younge women and
in other good woorkes, that parte of money that they
rate for the time dooeth allow: and afterwarde (with
they p[re]sttes and clerkes) goe a proce[ss]ion a certayne
circuite, in the which the poze men lykelwyse cary their
tapers before theim.

Hospitals.

Furthermore there are certaine hospitalles, some for
the sicke and diseased, and some for pooze orphanes, in
whiche

which they are nourished by till they come vnto yeres of seruice: and than is the man childe put vnto a craft: and the maidens kepte till they be married. If the be fayre, she is soone had, and little money geuen with hir: if she be foule, they auance hir with a better porcion of money.

Foz the plague, there is an house of many lodgings, two miles from Venice, called the Lazaretta, vnto the whiche all they of that house, wher in one hath been infected of the plague, are incontinently sent, and a lodging ying sufficiente appoynted foz theim till the infection ceasse, that they may retourne.

¶ Finally foz prisoners they haue this order: Twise a yere, at Christmas, and Easter, the Auditori dooe visite all the prisonnes in Venice, and there geue audience vnto all creaditours that haue anye debtour in prison foz the summe of .50. duckates and vnder. If the partye be hable to pase, daies are geuen, and sureties founde: and if the debt be desperate, than doe they theim selves agree with the partte foz more or lesse, as the likelihode is, and pay hym of the common purse. So that ere euer they departe, they empty the prisonnes of all theim that lie foz that summe.

¶ Of customes in theyr lyuyng.

TO speake of the gentilmā venetians priuate lifes and customes, I wot not whether it be best to follow the common repozte: or to dissemble the matter. And yet me seemeth I cannot dooe more indif-

The Venetian astate.

ferently than rectie what is bled to be said on both sides.
CIf any man would saye, there were no woorthy men
amongest the Venetians, he should greatly erre. For
(as I beleue) there be some, and speciallye of those olde
fatherly men, as wyse, as honest, as faithfull, as ho-
norable, and as vertuous, as in any place can be found
Anykewyse some of the younge men, as gentill, as libe-
rall, as balaunte, as wel learned, as full of good qua-
lities, as maye be. But to speake of the greater num-
bre, straungers vse to report, that the gentilman Vene-
tian is proude, disdeynful, couetouse, a greate nygarde,
a more leachour, spare of lining, tyranne to his tenants,
finally neuer satisfied with hordyng by of money.

For though (saye they) he haue. viii. oz. ix. oz. x. thousand
duckates of yerely reuenew, yet woul he kepe no more
persones in his house, but his wyfe and chyldren, with
ii. oz. iii. women seruaunces, and one man, or two at
the most, to row his Gondola. He woul goe to the
market hym selfe, and spend so miserablie, that manye
a meane man shal fare better than he. Of hys. 10000.
duckates a yere, if he spend thzee oz. iiii. C. in his house,
he esteemeth it a wonderful charge. Wespdes all thys,
he hath. ii. oz. iii. Jewes, that choppe and chaunge with
him dayely: by whose vsury he gaineth out of measure.
And yet woul he rather see a poze man starue, than re-
lieue hym with a penie. It is true, he woul haue hys
wyfe go gale and sumptuously apparailled, and on his
womā besides, if he be a louer (as in maner they be al)
he woul sticke for no cosse. To the mariage of hys
daughter. 30. 40. oz. 50. thousande duckates is no mer-
uaile. Finallye hys greatest triumphe is, whan
saunce

saincte Marke hath nede (for vnder that name is com-
prehended theyr common welth) to be hable to disburse
an huge summe of money in lone, to receiue yerely till
he be repayed. 10. 12. 02. 15. of the hundredth.

¶ This kynde of prest the Signoria vseth to take (bor-
rowyng of all them that are hable to lende) whan they
happen to haue warres . And they that may, doe the
more willingly lende: because they are not onely well
payed againe with the vsurie, but also the more honou-
red and fauoured as long as theyr mony is out of their
handes.

¶ This is theyr trade, saith the Straunger . But the
Venetian to the contrary defendeth hym selfe on thys
wyse.

¶ Admitte (saith he) that this reposte were true, If I
be proude, I haue good cause, for I am a prince and no
subiecte. If I be spare of liuyng, it is because my com-
mon wealth alloweth no pompe, and measure is hole-
some. If I kepe few seruantes, it is because I nede no
more . If I bie my meate my selfe, it is because, I woul
eate that, that I loue, & that (hauing little a do) I woul
exercise my selfe wythall . As for my tenaunt, he ly-
ueth by me, and I am no tyranne for husbanding mine
owne . If I gaine, I gaine vpon my money, and hyde
not my talent in the grounde . If I loue, I hate not,
if the be fayre , I am the more woorthie . If I spende
little, I haue the more in my purse . If I spende large-
ly with my daughter, it is because I woul bestow hie
on a gentilman Venetian, to encrease the nobilitiee of
myne owne bloudde , and by meane of suche alpaunce
so attaine more habilitiee to rule and reigne in my com-

The Venetian astate.

mon wealth : Besydes that , my money; if hys houl-
bande die, his hys and no mans els. If my wyfe go
gale, it is to please myne eye, and to satisfye hir. In
keppng my money to lende vnto saincte Marke. it is
both an helpe to my common wealth, and a pposite vnto
to my selfe.

¶ And thus defendeth the Venetian it, that in maner
al the world lateth vnto his charge.

¶ But surely many of theim trade and byng by theyr
chylzen in so much libertee, that one is no sooner out
of the shel, but he is hayle felow with father and frend,
and by that time he cometh to .xx. yeres of age, he know-
eth as muche lewdnesse as is possible to be imagined.
Foz his greatestt exercise is to go amongst his compa-
nyons, to this good womans house and that. Of whiche
in Venice are many thousandes of ordinarie, lesse
than honest. And no meruaile of the multitude of theyr
common women, foz amonge the gentlemen is a cer-
teine vble, that if there be diuers bzethern, lightlye but
one of theim doeth marie; because the number of gen-
tlemen should not so encrease, that at length their com-
mon wealth might ware vile; wherfore the reste of the
bzethern doe kepe Courtesanes, to the entent they may
haue no lawfull chylzen. And the bastardes that they
begette become mostt commonly monkes, fraters, or nuns;
who by theyr friendes meanes are preferred to the
offices of mostt pposite, as abbott, ppsours, and so forth.
But specially those Courtesanes are so riche, that in a
maske, or at the feast of a marriage, or in the shrounge
ryme; you shal see theim decked with selvelles, as they
were Queenes. So that it is thought no one citee as
gaine

gaine hable to compare with Venice, for the number of
georgeous dames. As for theyr beaultie of face, though
they be saye in deede, I would not highlye commende
theim, because there is in maner none, old or yong vn-
perfected. In deede of theyr stature they are of the
most parte berate goodly and bigge women, wel made
and stronge.

The libertie of straungers.

AL men, specially strangers, haue so muche liber-
tee there, that though they speake very ill by the
Venetians, so they attempt nothinge in effect a-
gainst theyr astate, no man shal control theim for it.

And in theyr Carniouale time (which we call Costide)
you shal see maskers disguise theim selves in the Vene-
tians habite, and come vnto theyr owne noses in deri-
sion of theyr customes, theyr habite, and misery.

Further, he that dwelleth in Venice, may reckon him
selfe exempt from subiection. For no man there mar-
keth an others dooynge, or that meddleth with an o-
ther mans liuyng. If thou be a papist, there shalt thou
want no kynde of supersticion to feede vpon. If thou
be a gospeller, no man shall aske why thou comest not
to church. If thou be a Iewe, a Turke, or beleueest in
the diuel (so thou spreade not thyne opinions abroade)
thou arte free from all controllement. To lye mary-
ed or vnmarried, no man shal aske the why. For eating
of fleshe in thine owne house, what daye so euer it be,
it maketh no matter. And generally of all other thyn-
ges, so thou offende no man priuately, no man shal of-

The Venetian astate,

fende the: whychē vndoubtedly is one pꝛincipall cause,
that draweth so many straungers thither.

An abbridgemente of the Venetian histo-
ries from the edificacion of the
citee vnto thys day.



Mitting the diuers opinions
of manye men, touchinge the be-
gynninge of the Venetian name,
I will recite that whychē moſte
wyters agree vpon, (that is to
ſay) either they are deſcended of
certayne people called Heneti,
(whiche after the deſtruction of Troie came with An-
thenoz into Italie: and landyng in thoſe marſhes of
the Adriaticke ſea, engabſſed the countrey theraboutes)
or els of certayne Britons called Veniti, part of thoſe
Frenchemen that fyrſt paſſed the mountaines, whoſe
habitacon in Britaine, at that tyme called Veneti, is
ſuppoſed to be now called Vanes. So that whether it
be of Heneti, or of Veneti, at length they were called
Venetiani.

Now to come to the foundacon of theyꝝ citee, I finde,
that betwene the yeres of grace. 422. and. 466. (a-
bout the tyme that Attila plagued the whole region of
Italy) the gentlemen and ciuelins, pꝛincipally of Pa-
doa, and generally of all the countrey about, betwene
the Alpes and the Venetian Goolfe (to flee the fury of
the Hunni, that wꝛth ſyre and ſwoorde conſued all
things

thinges befoze theim) resozted with theyr gooddes and
 richesse into the marishes, where Venice, with hir other
 membrs now standeth: and perceluyng what a com-
 moditee or sauegarde those marishes were against the
 enemies rage (Italy beying so ofte scourged with war-
 res at that tyme) they vpon agreement beganne the es-
 tablishment of that citee, in the place Riuo alto, now cal-
 led Rialto: where was builded the churche of saincte
 James, that yet vnto this date remaineth. And as be-
 fit, that befoze this tyme the bankes within those mar-
 shes had been occupied and enhabited: yet because the
 inhabitauntes were poze fisshermen: the place merited
 not to be written of or mencioned, buttill suche tyme as
 those gentilmen and citisins resozted thither. Where-
 fore I saie, that the Vadoanes (moste of auctoritee a-
 mongest the rest) after this fyrst building of the citee,
 ordeined certayne consules for the gouernynge therof:
 who for a felw yeres, now one, now other ruled y same:
 buttill the citee beganne to ware greate and populous:
 and that (because the situacion of the places in the wa-
 ter, would not suffer the citee to be one whole thing to-
 gether, but diuided into diuers islands, as the water did
 geue) they were faine to appoincte yerely ouer euerye
 Island one Tribune to gouerne them: and for matters
 concernyng the whole comon wealth, they ordeined a
 generall counsaile, wherunto all the Tribunes, with
 certayne of the chose citisins, shold repayre. And so vnder
 these Tribunes began theyr common welth to en-
 crease, theyr citisins to make shippes, as wel of warre
 as of merchandise, & so to trafficque abrode the world.
 But principally the diligence of theyr fisshers yelded

The Venetian astare,

thetm no smal gayne, by reason that they saltsthe, carried into other places, was bought as a specyall merchaundise. So that in proceſſe of tyme they reputation, wealth and force began so much to growe: that in the defence of Italie, and fauour of the Emperoure Austrian (whose capitaine Wellſarto had beſieged the Gottische kyng Urige in Rauenna) they made out certayne ships and botes, and vpon the river of Po, mette with parte of the Gottische armie, fought with theim, and diſcomfited them. Againe, in company of Valeriano, gouernoz of Rauenna, they were part of those. 40 ships, that diſcomfited other. 40. ſalle of the king Lottola befoze Ancona: taking & drowninge the moſte part of them. For the which doinges they were both embraced of theemperour, & alſo much honozed of his capitains: in ſo muche that the famous Barles, being ſent of the emperor to defend Italy againſt the ſoſelaid gotes, what to thanke the Venetians, and to ſee the maner of they ctee, went in perſon vnto Venice, where he commended much the diligence of they goodly building: and in that meane while ſent his armie by land to Rauenna: in which iourney at the paſſage of the Po, the Venetian ſheppes dyd hym great ſeruiſe.

Thus whyle Barles was in the Rialto of Venice, the Padoanes ſent ambadaours vnto hym, complaynyng, how the Venetians had vſurped vpon them thoſe marſhes, whiche time out of mynde had been theirs: together with the haven of the river of Wyent. Where vnto the Tribune of the Rialto made ſuch an anſwere that Barles courteſely told theim, that matter required longer debating, than his haſtie iourney wold as than permytte.

permitted: wherefoze exhorting the Padoanes to take ap-
 eience for the tyme, he desired theim, in the defence and
 fortifyinge of their countrey, to shewe like diligence,
 loue, and sayth towards the empyre, as the Venetians
 had doen: and than so much the moze should he be glad
 to aduance them.

¶ And so vnder the fauour of diuers emperours those
 landes of Venice, as Grado, Eraclea, Equilo, & Ma-
 lamoco were gouerned of priuate tribunes, & by a ge-
 nerall counsaile for the space of, 200. yeres and moze,
 without any greate incident, woorthy to be mencyned:
 excepte that betwene the bishoppes (afterwarde made
 Patriarkes) of Aquileia, which standeth in the maine
 lande; and of Grado, that lieth in the marshes, there
 was muche warre, strife, and feightyng for the interest
 of theyr iurisdictiones.

¶ Finally in the tyme of Constantine the, iiii. after I-
 talie thzough diuers warres had been soze afflicted, and
 that from all partes the persones that were of power
 (for theyr sauegarde) fledde thither: Venice encreased
 so much, that Luipandro, Duke of Friuli, either for
 enuie, or for feare of their towardnesse, prouoked cer-
 teine of hys neighbours to oppresse Venice. And se-
 cretly on a night made out a certeine noubmer of botes
 downe the water, and sodenely assaulted Grado, Era-
 clea, and Rialto: where they toke certeine shippes, la-
 ded with merchaundise, lately commen out of the easste
 partes. But incontinently as the rumour was reyled,
 these assaulters fledde, and were so pursued, that many
 of theim were slaine, many hurt, and the mosse part of
 theyr pray recovered. ¶ Neuerthelesse the noyse of the
 people

people continued, & specially the lamentacion of them that had lost theyr friendes or goodes. Wherefoze in Eraclea they called a counsaile, and muche a doe there was through diuersitie of opinions; because the people lased all the fault in the ill gouernaunce of the officers. But at last the Patriarke of grado, an ancient learned man, of auctoritie, was prated to say his mynde. Who with a longe oracion perswaded, that without concord it was impossible to liue surely or quiet, and that where as were dyuers heades, there coulde be no concoyte. Wherefoze his opinion was, that they shuld chose them one only prince, to gouerne theyr common wealth, and preserue theyr vnitie. For where any astate (saide he) is not gouerned with one consent & will, there nother haboundaunce of money, strength of place, noumber of people, worthinesse of capitaines, nor helpe of friendes or neighbours can auaille. So the whole counsaile agreeing to his opinion, resalued vpon the election of a Duke: that shoulde haue auctoritie and charge ouer all matters of importaunce, to call the counsaile, and to haue priuate thinges referred vnto him by the Tribunes: that the counsaile of the clergie should not assemble, but by licence of the Duke: and that the benefites geuen by the people and clergie, shoulde be confirmed by hym.

Paolo,
Lucio.

¶ To whiche dignitie they by the election elected a worthy citizen Paolo Lucio of Eraclea, geaunte him an othe for the administration of iustice, and for the quiet rule ouer them without tyrannye.

¶ Thus when Paolo had taken the gouernaunce into his handes, he beganne to agree those persons, that be-
fore

foze contended: whiche was so muche the more easie to doe, by as muche as at that time there was almost continuall warres betwene the Lumbardes, & some of the Dukes, either of Friuli, Spoleti, or Beneuento: that in maner all theyr neighbours were in armes.

When he had thus wel quieted his citisins, he ordeined watche and warde to be kept at the mouthes of the riuers: fortifying some of theim with castles, as tyme and place would serue him.

He commaunded euery towne to haue a certaine number of boates in a readinesse, when the Duke shold geue them any token: and restored the Venetian dominion vnto his olde limites, now called La piaue Secca.

He mayntained amities with the kyng Ariperto, and made peace with Luipandro, wth condicions of aduantage. But amongst all his other doynges the *Lawes.* wortheiest of memozy, was, that he reformed the lawes and brought theim into such a playne and bylese order, that eche man mighte be his owne lawyer: Affirming, that nothyng can moze hynder a man, than the solowynge of longe suites and greedy lawyers. Wherefoze in those daies they vsed none imperiall lawes: but besides those theyr fewe lawes wrytten, if there happened any doubt, incontinentlye they resorted vnto the lawe of nature, chosynge that, which semed vnto theim moste iust and honest.

After Paolo, an other citisyn of Eraclea, named Mar- *Marcello,* cello, a very sober & wise man, was elected Duke, but in diligence he was nothing comparable vnto Paolo.

In the tyme of this Marcello (excepte the stryfe and contention betwene the patriarch of Aquileia & Grado, whiche

The Venetian astate.

do, whiche I esteeme not woorth the wyspynge) I fynde no woorthie matter of memoize.

Derte hym succeeded D^{iso}, a man not onely noble of bloude, but also woorthie of dedes.

He first bled to byng bp the yonthe of Venice in the exercise of armes. He augmented the number of soldiers in the shippes of warre, and thorough his valiantie restored Paolo, one of the Grekish emperours capytaynes, unto the astate of Gaenna. In which enterpryse Perendio, Duke of Vicenza was slayne, and Ildeprandro, nephew of Lulpandro taken prisoner: who by commission of the same Lulpandro, had (by spege) gotten the sayd citee from the foresaid Paolo.

This victozy was one notable thing that first exalted the Venetian name.

Finally upon contention spronge betwene the Eracliani and Equilesi, for the lymites of theyr confines, for the which was dayly feightinge betwene them the space of two yeres: This duke D^{iso} supposed to be the authour of that sedicion, in a tumult of the people was slayne.

Surely a lamentable ende, of the gloriousse and happy begynnynge of so woorthie a man. The moze because of an other inconuenience that folowed, that the Patriarke of Aquileia toke from the Venetians the townes of Possone and Centenara: though afterwarde thorough the menaces of Gregory, bishop of Rome he restored Possone, whan he had bitterlye destroyed Centenara.

737 After the deathe of D^{iso}, there beganne a new rumour for chosing of the Duke, and many grudged, that Eraclia

clea alone had so long tme enioyed the honour therof. Therefore now bothe the seate and election was translated vnto Malamoco, whiche at that tyme was very muche encrease d bothe in people and richesse. Neuerthelesse the counsaile of this election coulde not agree amongst them selves, & therfore at length concluded, to chose a new maner of officer, namyng him, Maister of the souldours, whose authorites was remouneable from yere to yere.

The first was Domenico Leone, and succeeding him was Felice Cordacchino, the.iii. Deodato sonne of the Duke D'iso, who continued in that office, as some saye, two yeaeres. The fourth Iuliano Zpato, and the v. Giouanni Fabritiaco, who before the ende of his yere, was put out of his office, and lost both his eyes, In which meane tme the olde strife, betwene the Equilesi and Eracleani, renewed, in so much that meeting together, neere vnto the chanel, now called dell' arco, so many on both sides were slaine, that almoste they came to naughtes.

The Venetians (werted with these and suche other Deodays, 737 businesse) returned to theyr old gouernance, electing the forenamed Deodato to theyr Duke: who finallye beeyng occupied aboutes the fortifying of Brondolo, was assaulted by Galla, a citsin of Malamoco, & beeyng taken prisoner, had his eyes put out. The naughtie dooyng whereof so muche offended the Venetians, that ere the ycare passed, they toke Galla, put oute hys eyes, depriued him of his vsurped astate, and at last toke from his life: chosing Domenico Menicaccio or Monagario, in his place.

Domenico
Venicaccio.
747

¶ This Domenico had not so great auctoztee at hys predecessours, for to abate the power of their duke, whiche by the passed experience the Venetians thoughte to be ouerlarge, they loyned in company wyth hym two of theyr Tribunes, whych so much offended thys Domenico, that at length he openly contended, to recouer the wonte absolute power. And therfore was not onely deprived of his dygnities, but also for a punishment hys eyes put oute.

maurizio.
752

¶ And than in his place was created a worthy ryche man called Maurizio of Craclea: who in hys time pacified muche bothe the secrete grudges, and also the open contentions betwene his priuate citisins: and obtained the see of a bishop to be placed in Venice, in the Church of saint Peter. Whych bishop was afterwards exalted vnto the degree of a Patriarke, by Nicolas the .v. bishop of Rome.

¶ Durynge the rule of this Maurizio the Venetians (after great debating of the matter in counsaile to and fro) graunted to ayde kynge Charlemayne wth .xxv. bestelles wel armed and panned, whych did Charlemayne great service in the assaulte of Pavia, whan he toke Desiderio king of Lombardy prisoner. Finally Maurizio obtaining of the Venetians to haue hys sonne Giouanni, loyned in the astate wth hym, and hauing ruled .xi. yeres alone, and .vii. yeres loynedly wth his sonne, he dyed.

Giouanni
768

Giouanni likewise ruled alone a certayne space; and obtained his sonne Maurizio to be loyned wth him, who bothe togethers bare them selves verie ill towardea theyr citisins. And amongst other thynges Maurizio, be-

risto, beyng sent of his father vnto Grado, caused the Patriarke of that place to be throwen downe out of a toure: because he was wonte to warne bothe the father and sonne of theyr ill behauiours. Wherfoze they became hateful to theiſe ciſſins: ſo that a conſpiracy was wrought againſt theiſe, the chiefe wherof was named Obelerio, that before tyme had been Tribune of Malamoco.

This conſpiracie came ſo to paſſe, that the people proclaimed Obelerio duke, & the rumour was ſuche, that Giouanni, with his ſonne, and one Chriſtofer a biſhop theyr friende, fled all three vnto Mantua.

Then was Obelerio placed in the aſtate, who ſhorter-
ly obtained his brother Beato to be ſoigned with hym. Obelerio
788

In theyr time the ancient malice betwene the Eracleani and the Equileſi renewed, in ſuch wiſe that it made a fowle ſlaughter amongeſt theiſe. Wherfoze it was finallye concluded, that both the one and other towne ſhould be deſtroyed, & the inhabitants reduced vnto Malamoco and Rialto. And ſo was it quicklye done, the rather becauſe euen then kynge Pepine, ſonne of Charlemaine was determined to aſſaile the countrey and hauens of Dalmatia, againſt the grekiſh emperour Niceſero: towardes whiche enterpriſe Pepine requiſed paſſage and bytaſſes of the Venetiſians. But they wolde not conſent therto though Obelerio their duke fauoured the frenche parte. For in conſultyng vpon this matter were great diſputacions, & manye reaſons laied bothe for the one parte and the other: but finallye this opinion of Agnolo (a woozthie ciſſin of Eraclea) was beſt allowed: that for the neweltee of kynge Pe-

pline, they should not shewe theim selves unconstaunte to breake theyr auncient amitee with the Grekish emperour: not withstanding that Pepine by reason of the haven of Rauenna, might in maner vndoe their traffique by sea.

So Pepine to be auenged, made an armie to Rauenna, and cossing towards Venice, toke Brondolo, Chiozza, Pelestrina, Albiola, & came so nere, that he constrained the duke & senatours of Malamoco, to flee vnto Rialto with theyr richesse and chyldren. Finally Pepine was discomfited by the imperial capitaine Piscea, sent as wel to succour the Venetians, as also to defend Dalmatia: so that incontinently there folowed a peace betwene all thre, that is to say, the imperial army, king Pepine, and the Venetians, to their great contentacion. For if Pepine in that voyage had preuailed, they had bene in a dangerous case.

This meane while the Venetians had banished Obelerio and Beato as parciall of the frenche parte: and elected to theyr duke Angelo Particiaco, that before had dissuaded theim from Pepines amitee. Who obtained of the french king a confirmation of the passed peace: and after reedified the towne of Braclea, where he was bozne, callinge it Citta nuoua, and in it began the palaice of the Signoria, that the dukes hitherto vse to dwell in. And obteinyng his sonne Giustiniano to be soigned with him (after he had builded dyuers sayre churches, and doen many good deedes) he dyed.

Giustiniano thus conformed Duke, incontinently called home his brother Giouanni, that for his yll behaviour had been before banished, and toke him as his

compa

Angelo
Particia=
co. 792

Giustiniano,
810.

companion in the astate. In whose time at the instance of the Greeke the Emperour, the Venetians sent an armie by sea against the Turkes, to defend Sicilia. And certaine merchauntes of Venice coming from Alexandria in Aegypt, brought with them (as they say) the bodye of S. Marke, vnto whose honoure the sayed Giustiniano began the church of saint Marke befoze rehersted: and the whole citie euer sens haue taken him for their aduocate.

Finally, vpon his death bedde, he toke an order for the continuance of that buyldyng and dyed, leauyng his brother Giouanni alone in the astate, who toygned the church of Saint Marke vnto the Dukes palaice: and founde prouision for priestes to synge and serue in the same. And the warre beyng begunne betwene the Venetians and the Narentani, he made an armie, & went vnto Veglia in the Ile of Corcia, & toke it with Obelerio befoze named in it: who had begunne a preparation there to recouer his olde astate. Wherefoze Giouanni caused hym to lose his head, and afterwarde burned Malamoco, because certefne of Obelerio his olde frendes fledde thither for refuge.

Finally this Duke Giouanni had two conspyracles made against hym: the first was occasion that he fledde into Fraunce: the secound (after he was reconciled ornes againe vnto his astate) made hym to forsake the worlde, and become a friere in Grado, where he dyed. After Giouanni succeeded Peter Gradenco, who toygned his sonne Giouanni in the astate wyth hym: and at the request of the Greeke the emperour sent .60. saile armed, against the Moores, that were than newly lan-

Giouanni.
813.

Pietro
Gradenco
826

besydes Rome. Whych. 60. sayles were all taken
or drowned. In folowynge the victorie the same Poore
res scoured all the Adriatike seas euen to Caople & in
theyr way toke certayne Venetian shippes, laden wyth
merchaundise, comynge out of Soria. So that whether
it were for this ill lucke, or throught sedicion that then
reigned in the citee, a conspyracye was made againste
this Pietro, & was finally slaine in the church of saint
Zacheria, hearyng of euensong. Whych sodeyne death
troubled not a litle the citee, & caused the office of the
thys Anogadozi to be made, to pursue the trial of man-
slaughters and murders. An office vnto this daye of
no smal auctozitee amongst the Venetians.

Anogadozi

Orso
Particiaco
865

¶ Then was Orso Particiaco made Duke: who with
helpe of his sonne Giouanni, discomfited the Sarassa-
nes, that a litle before had gotten Candia, robbed a-
longest al the costes of Dalmatia, and had runne euen
vnto Grado. For the worthy and valiant doyng wher-
of the Greekeish emperour Basilio rewarded Orso with
much honoure, who for his parte againe not to seeme
vncurteple, sent. xii. bzasen belles vnto the Emperoure
for a present: beyng (as they saye) the fyrst belles that
euer were vsed amongst the Greeces.

Belles.

Giouanni.
884

¶ After Orso, his son Giouanni as wel for his fathers
merites, as for his owne worthynesse, was confirmed
Duke. In whose tyme the Rauennates receyued ex-
treeme damages by the Venetians, and the cytee of
Comacchio was gotten. Finally this man beyng fal-
len sycke, and hauing his brother soligned with him in
the astate (a man not the meetest to rule such a common
wealth) deposed both hym selfe and his brother remyt-
tyng

gynge the counsaile to the election of a newe Duke.
An acte surely not onely rare and meruailouse, but also
woorthy of high commendacion.

Then Pietro Candiano was elected, who proued so
woorthy in armes, that those he fought with the Schla- Pietro Candiano
uone armies, and overcame them, although in the last 890
battaile he was slayne.

After whose death Giouanni Particiaco, before na-
med, was ones againe called vnto the dignitee, & con-
tinued in the same till the Schlauone warres were fully
quieted, and than againe was contented that Pietro
Tribuno should be chosen in his place.

This Pietro discomfited the Hungariens, that before Pietro
had overcome the emperor Berengario, & ouerranne Tribuno
all Lombardy, & approached so nere to Venice, that they 893
wanne Eraclea, Equilo, & Capo d'aggere, and were
mynded to passe vnto the Rialto: geuyng such cause of
feare to the Venetians, as afterwarde bothe doubled
the glozy of Peters victozy, and exalted highly the Ve-
netian name.

Some wyte, that after this enterpryse Pietro fortified
the citie with a wal from Santa Maria in Zubenico,
vnto the Rio del Castello, and that he cast chaines of
pyron ouerthwart the Canale grande, but at this daye
there remaineth no memory therof.

After Pietro folowed Orso Baduaro, that fyrste coyn-
gined money in Venice, a man so muche geuen to rely- Orso
gyn that at length, renouncynge his astate, he became Baduaro
a frier, and so dyed. 915

Tha succeeded Pietro Candiano, who conquered ma- Pietro
nye townes of Istria, and other places: and overcame Candiano
938

Alberto sonne of the emperor Berengario, which be
inge lord of Rauenna, vsed to spoyle and take the Ve-
netian shippes in their passage.

He recovered certaine gorgeous damselles rauished
by the Schlauons at a feast in the Church. S. Peter
Di Castello, and for memory of that victorie ordeined
perely certeine plates, called Le Marie. And (as some
write) in hys tyme the Schlauons were made tributa-
ries to the Venetians, to paye them perely an hundred
barrelles of wyne.

After his death folowed Pietro Baduaro, in whose
tyme no notable thyng happened.

Then was Pietro Candiano, sonne of the other Pie-
tro, renoked from exile: whyche for hys naughtye life
was befoze banysht by his father. And albest that in
the helpe of Alberto di Rauenna he had shewed him-
selfe enemye to his owne countrey (the unkyndenesse
wherof was cause of his fathers deathe) yet did the Ve-
netians create hym their Duke. But finally his pro-
cedynges were such, that the people rose agaynst hym,
sette fyre on the palayce: and as he fled with his sonne
in hys armes they slew hym. Wherwyth theyr furze
was sooner appeased than the kindled fyre quenched.
For ere it ceased, it burnt a great part of the church
of S. Marke, with two other churches, and aboue thre
hundred houses.

This rumour being pacified, Pietro Orseolo, a man
much geuen to religion, was elected Duke. The no-
tablest thyng in his tyme was, that the Venetians suc-
coured the ciue of Bari, the besieger of the Saracines.
Finally, after he had doone many charitable deedes in
Venice,

Pietro.
Baduara
956.
Pietro.
Candiano
958.

Pietro
Orseolo
973.

Venice, he was perswaded by a pilgrimme monke of Calcoygne to forsake the worlde. And so habandonyng wife, childzen, and friends stale away: and died a friser in Calcoygne.

Then folowed Vitale Candiano, who fallynge sicke, renounced the estate, became a friser, and so dyed.

Vitale.
Candiano.

975

After whom Tribuno Memmo succeeded, w^hiche either for feare of the emperour Ottone, or throughe the greate debate betwene the families of Dorsolini, & Caloprini (than the chiefe of Venice) forsake the dignitee, became a friere, and within vi. dayes after sickened and dyed for sorowe.

Tribuno
Memmo

975

Then folowed Pietro D'Iscolo, who conquered Dalmatia, with thelandes soygnyng therunto. And therfore obtained the fyrst tytle of Duke of Dalmatia, and Venice.

Pietro
D'Iscolo

987

The emperours Basilio and Aleſſo graunted hym free passage for the Venetians throughe theyr domynions, without custome payng. And the emperour Ottone held his sonne at the crisme, and for his sake graunted many lybertees vnto Venice.

After whose death, as a recompense of the fathers merite, Ottone D'Iscolo hys Sonne, of the age of 18. yeres, was elected duke, who ouercame the Adrianesi with the kyng of Coruatia, and so retourning victoriously out of Dalmatia, fel into the handes of Domenico Flabeno, wyth others, that had cospyzed against hym, who shaued his beard for despite, and finally conspyned hym into Greece: where shortly after he dyed.

Ottone
D'Iscolo.

1007.

Pietro
Barbolano

1026

Then folowed Pietro Barbolano, who endenoured hym selfe to pacysse the rumour of the people, offended

The Venetian astate.

for the oultrage dooen vnto Ottone : but all in vayne.
For at length, by meane of D^oso Patriarke of Grado,
brother vnto Ottone, Barbolana was taken, his beard
cutte off, clothed in a fraters weede, and banished.

D^oso
D^oseolo
1037

¶ And because the death of Ottone was than vnknown, the Patriarke D^oso supplied the place as his liues tenaunte. But incontinently vpon knowlage of hys death, the Patriarke called a counsaile, & after a longe Oracion, lamentyng the iniurie doen vnto his brother, surrendred the astate,

Domenico
D^oseolo
1031

¶ Herupon craftily and in maner by force, Domenico D^oseolo toke the dignitie vpon hym. But synallye beyng expelled of the people, he fledde vnto Rauenna, and there myserably dyed.

Domenico
Flabénica
1031

¶ Than succeded Domenico Flabénica, who made a lawe, that from thensfoz the no Duke shoulde take a companyon to hym. He was the p^ryncipall cause of Ottones exile, as it wel appeared after. For he founde the meane, that the familie of D^oseolt was clerelye put besydes the counsaile. And finally, haung well pacified and resourmed all thynges, he dyed.

Domenico
Contarini
1042

¶ After whom succeded Domenico Contarini, that in his tyme recovered Zara, whiche befoze rebelled, by returning vnto the obedience of the kyng of Cozuatia. He ouercame Roberto Guistardo in Puglia, and recouered the citee of Grado, that was halfe destroyed by Pepo Patriarke of Aquileia: and after dyed.

Domenico
Siluio
1068

¶ Than was chosen Domenico Siluio the greatest man of reputacion that thitherto had ruled Venice. He married the sister of the emperour Niceforo, and at his request sente an armie vnto Durazo, against Roberts

duke

Duke of Puglia and Calabria: whitch army sytt pre-
uailed, but at length was so discourmfited, that Dome-
nico was therfore depofed. Though some wyte that
he dyed in the astate. His wife was so delycate a
woman, that ſhe woulde haue delue gathered to make
hir bayne wythal, with many other curiouſe perfumes
and trickes, to longe here to reherſe: and yet ere ſhe di-
ed, hir fleſhe did rotte, that no creature could abide hir.

Domenico beynge thus depofed Vitale Falero was
elected, who in fauour of Aleſſo, the Greekiſhe emper-
our, renewed an armie againſte the forenamed duke
Robert, whych army was alſo discourmfited. Neuerthe-
leſſe he cauſed the Venetians to be called lordes of Dal-
matia, becauſe he valiaunely conquered the ſame bothe
by ſea and lande.

Vitale
Falero
1082

After whoſe death ſucceeded Vitale Michele, a worthy
warrtour on the ſea, in whoſe time the Venetian nauie
was rekened. 200. ſaile armed of ſhippes and galleys,
whych beynge ſent into Aſia, with Michele his ſonne, ſel
out with the Piſant a littel beſydes Rhodes, and foughte
with the ſame, and toke. 22. of their galleys.

Vitale
Michele
1095

After which victorie he and many other Chriſtians
went againſt the Infidels, and gatte Smirna, Soria,
and Ieruſalem.

Finally this armie beynge retourned vnto Venice, was
againſe ſent out into Puglia, and there toke Bzundizi,
and ouerranne all thoſe ſeas aboute, and ſo retourned
loſed wyth glory and ryche praye.

After hym Ordelaſſo Falero was created duke.

Ordelaſſo
Falero

In whoſe time the Venetians ſent an other army into
Soria to ſuccour Baldeuynne kynge of Ieruſalem to

1098

The Venetian astate,

gette Pitholemaida, otherwyle called Acres.

About the same season the emperor Hedrye the .4. agreed the Venetians and Padoanes together for theyr confynes, after the Padoanes wyth greate slaughter had ben ones dyscomfyred.

There chaunced also a fyre, begun in the house of one Henry Zeno, that burned a great parte of Venice.

Which fyre was no soner ceased, but newes came, that Calomano, kyng of Hungary, had passed the mountaynes of Coruatia, and conſtreyned the citee of Zara to rebel. Wherefoze an army was made out, vnder the leading of Delaffo, who not only recovered zara, but also passed the mountaynes, & conquered the countrey of Coruatia, and so victoriously retourned to Venice: where he rested not longe, but woode came, that the Hungaryens were comen agayne befoze zara. To the succour wherof he sped hym, and there in the fight was slayne with a darte, and hys army dyscomfited, so that the Venetians were fayne to sue to the Hungaryens for truce, which for .v. yerres (wyth muche a doe) they obteyned;

Domenico
Michels.
1115

Nexte folowed Domenico Michels, who at the intercession of Calisto bishop of Rome, with .200 saille toke hys way into Soria, to rescue Toppe, that tyme besyged wyth .700. sayle of Infydelles: agaynst whome he obteyned the victoize. And folowynge the same, wente vnto Tyro, toke it, and gaue it vnto Alasmondo Patriarke of Jerusalem.

The prosperouse successe of whyche victoizes was occasion, that Emanuel emperor of the Greekes sent and forbadde hym, to procede any further. But he being offended

offended wth that commaundement, bent hym selfe a-
gainste the emperour, and by force toke from hym the
plandes of Scio, Rodes, Samo, Metellino, and An-
dro, and so wth greate honoure returned to Venice,
where he dyed.

Then was Pietro Polano chosen his successour, who
broughte the citee of Fano vnder the Venetian obedi-
ence, and fought firste with the Pisani, and after wth
the Padoani, bothe whose armyes he ouercame: so that
of the Padoani he brought .350. prisoners vnto Venice,
and after released them wthout ransome.

Pietro
Polano
1130

This Duke fauouryng the parte of the emperoure
Emanuel against Roger duke of Puglia, went in his
owne person vnto that enterpryse, recovered Cosu,
and ouerronne and sackes all Sicilia. And thorough
hys great trauayle syckened and dyed, was brought to
Venice and buryed.

After him Domenico Morosini entered into that state,
who besieged Pola, because the inhabitauntes had hin-
dered the Venetian passingers: and at laste vpon agree-
ment, ordeyned, that in maner of a trybute the Polani
shoulde perely paye to the churche of Sainte Marke a
thousande weight of oyle. The like wherof he con-
streigned thelm of Parenzo to doe. Finally, haunyng
made a leage with William kyng of Sicilia successour
vnto the forenamed Roger, of whom he obteyned dy-
uers priuyliges for the Venetian merchauntes com-
moditye, he dyed.

Domenico
Morosini
1147

Then entered Vitale Michele: by whose dayes the
Veronesi, Ferraresi, & Padoani, through prouocacy-
on of the emperour Federico Barbarossa, did no small

Vitale
Michele
1154

domage to the Venetians. For the redengeyng wher-
of they made one an armie, and toke the Patriarke of
Aquila, wyth xii. of his canons (of the imperfall fac-
tion) prisoner; who were after set at libertie, bypon
couenaut to paye yearely tribute vnto the Venetians
at thysyde, a fatte bull, and. xii. hogges.

This meane whyle the emperour Emanuel enterpyng
secretly into affinitie with kynge William of Sicile,
toke Spalato, Trani, and Ranga from the Venetians.
Wherefore they armed, & Vitale in person went for the
recovered Trau, thre w it to the earth, with parte of the
walles of Ranga, and so went to Negropone; whete
by counsaile of the gouernor, he concluded a peace with
the emperour. For wythstandyng, the emperoure had
a lyttle before taken Scio. For concludynge of whych
peace, and for the pestilence that his infected souldiours
brought home with them, the venetians at his retourne
slew hym.

A Duche adoe was made for his death, but nothyng
to effect: sane a certefne nomber were than apointed
but the election of the Duke: some wyte. x. and some
xl, but howe so euer it were Orio Malipiero was cho-
sen. who refusynge it, preferred Sebastian Ziani, for
his aunciente, rycheffe, and wysedome. So his refusall
was accepted, his modestie highly commended, and Se-
bastiano accorbyngly elected.

This Sebastian erected the two notable pylers of
marble, that are yet seen in the markette place of saint
Marke: whiche with an other greater than eyther of
them, were brought oute of Candia, but the biggest fell
into the water (and for his vnmearurable weight) can
not

not be gotten by agayne.

The emperoure Emannell, who secretely hated the Venetians, constrained Henry dandolo their ambassadour, to stand so longe darvng in an hotte basen, that he lost his syghthe. For what cause he wrought this, I finde not. And though it muche offended the Venetians, yet the tyme served not to reuenge it. For they had taken part with Alexander bishop of rome against the emperour Federike Barbarossa; & with an armie by sea Sebastian in person, toke Ottone the emperours sonne, with certayne galeys, & broughte him prisoner to Venice. So that throughe the practise of Ottone there folowed a peace betwene Federike, the bishop, and the Venetians. And the duke was rewarded of the saide bishop with licence for him and his successors to seale in leade, to haue a canoppe borne ouer hym, a waie farre before hym, with trumpettes and standardes, and finally ones a yere to espouse the sea, with throwyng a golde ryng into it. All whych ceremonies the Venetian dukes vse vnto this daye.

After the deathe of Sebastian the forenamed Orione Malipiero was created duke, who wente vnto the emperor of Zara, that lately had rebelled.

He also sent an armie into the holy lande, that recovered the citee of Ptholemaida, with those other places that the Venetians before tyme had gotten there. Finally he became a sinner, and so dyed.

Then succeeded Henry dandolo, who banished the Veronesi from the trade of Venice, so that the Veronesi for theyr parte wolde suffer nothinge to passe downe the ryuer of Adice. But at length they were faine to agree

The Venetian astate.

agre with the Venetians, & to restore certayne goodes that they before had taken.

The Pisani also enusyng the Venetian glozy, made an armie against them, and gatte Pola, whych by the Venetian army was incontynently recovered, the wallz raised to therth, and the enemies ships burned: and before Rodone they toke two other Pisane ships, laden wyth merchandise, and made Trieste & all Istria, tributours.

¶ After this they recovered zara also, and semblably raised the walles thereof to the earthe, in so muche that many of the inhabitantes (beyng fled before) wyth the helpe of the Hungariens, renewed an army, and overran all Dalmattia. But at length they were constrained to make peace with the Venetians, geuyng theyr chyllozen in ostage, submittyng theyr churche vnto the Patriarke of Grads, and bindyng thesm selves to geue yerely thre thousand conye skynnes to the Duke for a present.

This meane while came Alekso, sonne of theperours Isaac (than lately expelled out of Constantinople) vnto Venice for succours: who obtelned, that the duke wyth an army, soignyng hym selfe with an other armye of Frenchmen, went to Constantinople, and after many prosperouse successes by the waye, toke it, and restored bothe Isaac and his sonne vnto the empire. But the emperour liued not long after: and his sonne, coueting to kepe his promyse with the Venetians, was betrayed & strangled by Mirillo or Murcifone one brought by by his father from lowe degre, vnto so great reputacyon, that after he had murdered Alekso, he toke the Empire vpon hym. Wherefore the venetians & frenchemen
abhoz

abhorryng this vnnatural crueltie, enforced theyr powers of new, reuenged the death of Aleſſo, toke Conſtantinople by aſſaulte, and diuided the dominion betwene them; ſo that of the French part Baldeuine a Flemmyng was made capitaine or emperour, & of the Venetians, Thomas Moſoſini was made Patriarke: adſoignynge vnto the Venetiſan domynyon the Ile of Candia, with the other Ilandes of the ſeas Ionium and Egeum.

So whan they had recovered Raugia, and eſtabliſhed the Greekiſhe empyre, this duke Dandolo dyed. And was buryed in Conſtantinople.

The Venetians beyng thus entred into an empyre, beganne to contende amongeſt theim ſelfes, whether they were better to remoue theyr common wealthe to Conſtantinople, for the encrease of theyr name and power: or to remaine ſtil in Venice. But ſnallye it was concluded, that better it was to truſt to the perpetuities of the Site of Venice, than to the byttell chaunge of Conſtantinoples gloze.

Then was Peter ſtant elected Duke in Venice, and the arme in Greece on the other ſide elected Marino ſtant Poceſtate of Conſtantinople: on condicoon that he ſhould receiue hys confirmacion from Venice.

This Peter proued an excellent man: he encreaſed the army in Greece: by meane wherof Corfu, Modon, Coron, Galipoli, Naſſo, Paro, Molo, Erma, & Andro were gotten: Negroponte was made tributarye, and the Genoaiſes armye ſlought withall, and diſcomfited.

He ſent alſo a Colonia of Venetians to inhabyte

The Venetian astate.

Candia, with officers according: whiche many tymes after rebelled.

¶ He ouercame the Padoanes, and broughte. 400. of theim prysoners to Venice: finally he warpyng veraye religionse, renounced the astate, and withdrew him selfe into the monasterie of saint George, where he dyed.

After hym succeeded James Tiepolo, who with the helpe of Marke Samuto, rescued Candia, than molested by the Greeke the Corsales.

¶ Twyse he repyled the siege of Constantinople (Leoffilo Ziant beyng Potestate there) and gatte many of the enemies thypes. And after makynge truce with the Genowayes, in the fauoure of Gregoꝝe the. ix. byshop of rome, he sent an army against Federike Barbarossa gat Terma, Campo, Marino, and Bescice: and in the hauen Mafredonia, burned the Cetea: a notable shippe that the emperour had made for hys owne person, and there slew a thousand men of warre:

¶ About this time Gzelino di Romano gatte Padoa from the Venetians, and entred into the Venetian marishe as farre as saint Eltero and the Bebbe.

¶ This duke vnder the gouernance of his owne sonne, sent. 60. galleys to Durazzo to succout the Genowayes against the emperour & the Pysant, who in his returne recovered Pola and Zara, and than peace was made with the kyng of Hungarie, vpon condicison, that from thensforth he should neuer pretend title to Zara.

¶ After this James folowed Marino Morosini, who was chosen of the counsaile called Pragadi, and beyng prouoked by the Romish legate, made warre vnto the forenamed Gzelino, & recovered Padoa, wherof Aufc-
dino

James
Tiepolo
1215

Marino
Morosini
1247

dino, nephew of Ezelino was capitaine, whilſt Ezelino laye at ſiege befoze Mantua. For whyche loſſe and for hys labour ſpent in vayne befoze Mantua, Ezelino retournyng to Verona, fel in ſuch a rage, that he cauſed. 12000. Padoanes, part of his armye, to be helwen to peeces. Such a crueltie as hath not ben hearde of, Cruelties ſens the tyme of Sulla, who did the like vnto. 12000. pzenetiſnes, friendes of his ennemie Marſus.

¶ Of this name Ezelino were foure, one after another that cauſed no ſmall trouble in Italie.

¶ The fyrſt Ezelino, a Doucheman bozne, came into Italie with the emperour Ottho the thyrde, and by hym was made Conte di Onara, a towne of the Marca Trivigiana. But afterwardes he gate hym ſelfe the lordſhip of Baſſano vpon the riuer of Brent, with many ſaſtre territories theraboutes, and ſo became greate, both of dominyon and alſo of aliance by mariages.

His ſonne was called Ezelino Balbo, and the.iii. Ezelino di Romano Monaco, all thre crewell men of nature. But the.iiii. Ezelino di Romano paſſed all thother, & dyed rather for choler and deſpite of the diſcomfiture, geuen him by the Vicentines, than for the hurte that he receiued in his legge. Whome Peter Gerardo a Padoan wyter, deſcribeth thus: He was harde of ſeaour, terrible in worde and dede, ſcarce of laughter or ſpeeche, full of deſpite, ſuſpicioſe, takyng enery thing to the worſe, daungerouſe to enterpriſe, prompte to all euill, cruel to al perſonnes, and out of meaſure delited in their death and tourmentes, priſons, pryn, hunger, colde, ſyre, and other ſuche. So that to extirpe the whole ſtroke of ſo cruell generacion, after his death there was no crea-

Rinieri
zeno 1250

ture of hys blond suffered to lyue.

¶ After the death of Marino succeeded Rinieri zeno, who sent an armie into Soria against the Genowates, that discomfited them betwene Ptholemaida & Tyrot besides, vi. other Genowaye shippes, that were losse in Candia, and nere vnto Tyzo in the second and, 3. battayle.

¶ In this meane tyme Baldewyne the capitayne, and Pantaleon Iustiniano patryarke of Constantinople, were betrayed of the Grekes, and constrained to flee to Negroponte, leauing the citee & empire vnto Sigismund Paleologo, that afterwarde through helpe of the Genowates, gat manye Ilandes: traualling to extend hys domynion vnto Morea. Whereupon the Venetians made forth moe galeys by, 30. at a tyme, to increase their army, that than was commen out of Sotia in hope to finde theyr enemies about Sicilia: But al in vayne, wherfoze retournyng into Soria, they toke the Cetee of the Genowates, and began to assaulte Tyzo. In which businesse, the Venetians lost a notable shippe called Castel forte, with, x. others laden with merchandise. Neuerthelesse renewyng their armie with part of their staple, that lay in Candia & Dalmatia, they mette agayne with the Genowayes in Sicilia, where after a long fight, they toke, 24. Genoway Galleys, burned the rest, slew about, 1200. men, toke, 1500. prisoners, and drowned al the rest.

This notable victorie brought the emperoure Paleologo in such feare, that he sued for truce to the Venetians: and obtayned it for, v. yeres.

This meane while was a great muttering in Venice

for the treasure spent, because the chamber was found empty, and that for the mainenance of those warres they were aboute to leuey subspyes. So that the people assembled, and furiously assaulted the Dukes palace, hurlyng stones at the wyndowes, with other despitelful deedes.

Finally the armie was renewed, and in an other conflict with the Genowates, they took, v. of theyr shippes: About whitch tyme Rinieri dyed.

¶ Then folowed Lorenzo Tiepolo, in whose tyme Lorenzo Tiepolo 1267 happened a wonderfull dearth of corne in Venice: by reason theyr neighbours, for enuie of theyr prosperitee, would suffer no corne to come to them. For remedye wherof the Venetians made a law, that al merchaut-shippes, passyng betwene the Goole of Fano, and the mouthe of the ryuer Po, should paye them custome after a certaine rate of theyr merchandys. Whereby to their great gaine, they reuēged them selves vpon their enemyes. But the Bologneisi moste of all others, being offended with this law, made out an army against the Venetians, and were ouercomen, constrained to aske peace, to ouerthrowe a castell that they had made at Primano on the Po, and to graunte the Venetians free entrie into theyr riuers at all tymes.

¶ About this tyme, by means of Philip the french king, who trauelyed to succoure the Christians in Horia against the infidelles, the Venetians, Genowates, and Pisan made a league together for .v. yeres.

After Tiepolo, Iacopo Contarini was Duke, in Iacopo Contarini. 1273 whose tyme the warre was well neere ended betwene the venetians and Genowates, for certefne goodes that

The Venetian astate.

the Genowales had taken: whyche beyng restored, the armie prepared for them, turned agaynst Asia, that than newly rebelled, throught the prauocation of the patriarche of Aquileia: who by force were reduced to their wonted obedyence.

They of Ancona beyng offended wyth the foresayde law of custome paynge for theyr merchaundise, began to robbe and spoyle alongest the costes of Asia: so that the Venetians, to correcte them, besyged the cytee of Ancona: whyche dured not longe: for the byshoppe of Rome entreated the Venetians, to agree wyth them, and bzeake vp theyr siege.

Finally this Contarini percesuyng hym selfe verays sickely and vnapt to rule the astate, did wyllinglyc renounce it.

¶ Than succeeded John Dandolo, in whose tyme the water in Venice swelled so hyghe, that in maner the citie was drowned: and after that folowed a wonderfull earthquake.

¶ He also fyrste coyned duckates of golde. And at the request of Nicolas, than bishop of Rome, prepared a new armie to saile into Syria: but it went not forth so that the kyng of Babylone in Aegypte, toke and sacked Ptholomaida, and after rased it to the earth.

After Dandolo Peter Gradenigo was elected duke. At whose entrypt the truce with the Genowales expired: so that a new armie, vnder the leadyng of Roger Morosini proueditore, was sent into the east parties: where they toke Pera, & Castello delle foglie vecchie and abode there so longe, that the yere folowynge John Zoranzo, wyth .25. freshe galleis, was sente thither: who

Giovanni
Dandolo
1281

Pietro
gradenigo
1290

who toke the citee of Casa in Cherfonesso.
 The Genowales this meane while prepared an armye
 of .70. galeys, and vnder their capitaine Lampado d'
 oria, entred into the Adzlatike seas, entending to come
 to Venice. But the venetian armie (beyng the greatest
 that euer they made) caused them to retyze: yet metyng
 together vpon the cosse of Dalmatia, they foughte, and
 the venetians were discomfited, and Andzea Dandolo
 wounded to be taken prysoner, who so muche despayzed,
 that beatyng his head against the galey bordes, he slew
 hym selfe. And albeit that the losse of this armye was
 of great importaunce and peril vnto the venetians, yet
 incontinently they renforced theyr power, and in the
 stret of Gallipoli, sometyme called Hellespontus,
 mette with the Genowales againe, and were there a
 gayne ouercomen. But the Genowales for all their
 victories were so wretched, that they graunted the vene-
 tians peace, and laied warre aside for a season.

Thus the thynges ferre of, beyng appeased, their bus-
 synesse at home beganne to awake. For one Marino
 Bocconio conspired against the duke & Senate, which
 beyng dysconered, he and dyuers of hys complices,
 were put to death betwene the pillers of S. Marke.

The Padoanes began than also to fortifie at a certayne
 place, betwene Chiozza, & Albano, called Petabubula
 which was no lyttel trouble vnto the venetians, for the
 tyme, howe be it at length they remedyed it.

After this they made out an other army by sea vnder
 Welletto Iustiniانو, who prospered muche in Grece.
 For after he had ouercome all those cosses, he returned
 home with .5000. prysoners, & with a great summe of
 money

money recovered of the Greeke Emperoure that be-
foze tyme the Venetians had lente him. Which was no
small comforte to the common wealth that longe tyme
had suffered. Shortly after Clement bishop of Rome excommuni-
cated the venetians, for aiding of Azo da Este vnto the
affaire of Ferrara, and wrote his letters throughout al
Europe, condemnynge thein as enemies of the church,
and geppynge their goodes as a lawfull praye vnto all
men, whiche caused thein to susteine greate losse.
Besides this, Baiamonte Tiepolo, their owne citelie,
entendynge to make hym selfe lord of venise, enterprised
to assaulte the Duke and Senate in the palatce, where
after myche bloodshed, at laste he was slayne, and hys
parttakers accordynge punished, parte in Venice,
and parte at a place there besydes, called Malpassio.
Zara aboute this tyme rebelled agayne, and shortlye
after this duke dyed. After whom succeeded Marino Giorgio, that lyued
but x. monethes, in whose tyme an army was made out
to bessege zara. Then folowed John Soranzo, who recovered zara
and brought Noua, Spalata, Trau, and Sebenzani,
townes of Dalmatia, vnder the Venetian dominion.
This meane tyme fraunces Dandalo, ambassadoure
with bishop Clement, shewd subhannitie, that Venice
was not only assailed, but also privileged to be no more
on that wyse accursed. These thynges synghed, they sente oute, 50. galleys
against the Gellowates, because they had taken the ve-
netians goodes. But after they had besseged Pera,

Marino
Giorgio.
1312

John
Soranzo.
1313

and

and were promysed amendes and restitution of theyr goodes, the armie retourned without other expedition. Than was Iustiniano, that had been capitaine therof, sent Proveditore into Candia, where with hys wysedome he quieted the countrey, that beganne to rebell.

Finally, after the Venetians had perserued the Paduanes from the fury of Mastino della scala, that wold haue oppressed thesm, this duke Scranzo dyed.

After hym entred Fraunces Dandolo, in whose time hapned a great dearth of coyne in Venice: whyche was relined afterwarde with prouision brought out of Sicilia by Nicolas Falero, for that purpose sente thither, This duke accepted the Polani and Valesi vnder the Venetian dominion: and euer after defended them from the power of the Patriarke of Aquileia.

He caused Thomas Viaro Proveditore of the armie against the Genowales, to die in prison: because he had not borne hym selfe prudently in that enterpryse. He sent Peter zeno with an armie agaynst the Turkes, that than had newly chased the Christians oute of Sozia. Whyche Turkes were foughten wyth, and finally discomfited.

Than beganne the warres againste the Signori della scala, the chiefe whereof was Mastino before named: who chasing the Rolsi from Parma got Feltró, Belluno, & Ceneda, before tyme taken by the said Rolsi, from kynge John of Boeme. The Mastino thus growynge great, attempted to trouble the Venetians with buildyng of fortresses and bastilions about Petabubula. Wherefore the Venetian entred in league with the kynge of Boeme, and with the most parte of al the

The Venetian astate,

states of Italie, specially with the Florentines, against this Mastino: and made Peter Rosso generall of that league: who (assemblynge an armie, of the Venetians, Florentines, Bolognese, Ferrarese, & other thep: colleges) after many skymythes, takyng of fortresses and towncs: finally did discomfite Mastino in two severall battailes, and broughte hym by force to requyre peace: whych was graunted on this wise, that he should leaue Felero, Cusdale di Belluno, and Ceneda vnto Charles sonne of the kyng of Boeme: Bergamo and Bressa, vnto the Visconti of Myllaine: Treviso, with the appurtenaunces, Castelbaldo, and Bassano, to the Venetians, and.iiii. castelles to the Florentines.

¶ After the happy successe of these warres, Dandolo dyed.

¶ Then Bartholomeo Gradenigo, succeeded, in whose tyme, the water in Venice for the space of thre dayes, dyd swel foure yardes higher than his wonted course: so that they thought to haue been all drowned: but at laste saint Nicolas, saint George, and sayncte Marke came into a pooze fishers bote, and in the mouth of the hauen drowned a shippe of diuels that wrought al this myschypse. For proufe wherof, this pooze fylsher the next mornyng after the water ceased, presented vnto the duke and senatc a golde ring that saint Marke had geuen hym. Thys was taken there for a myracle, though I thinke no man would beleue it.

The feare of this water was no sooner ceased, but newes came, that the Candians rebelled. Wherefore a power sent thither, assaulted them on thre sydes, and with the correction of the principall rebelles, reduced them

Bartholomeo
Gradenigo
1340

thems to their former obedience.

¶ Shortly after happened a great dearth of cozne, and Gradenigo dyed

¶ Than folowed Andrea Dandolo, a man for his wisse- Andrea
Dandolo
1343
dome and ciuillitee much commended of Petrarcha.

¶ In whose name Peter Zeno (in compaigne of other Christian princes) was sent with an armie against the Turkes, whom at the firste they discomfited, and toke Smirna: but after wardes the turkes assembled againe, and with great slaughter ouercame the Venetians, the Cypriotes, and the Rodianes.

¶ This Duke procured licence of the kynge of Baby- lone, that Venetian merchauntes might freely traffique in Aegypt, and sent an army vnto zara than yelded vnto the kyng of Hungarie, who beyng come thither with. 120000. men, was foughte with by the Venetians discomfited, and zara reconered.

¶ This duke ordeined the office of the thre Auditours, for the better expeditiō of matters, because the Auogadori had too much charge on theim to dispatche wel: and he hym selfe wrote a worthy hystory of the Venetian astate and lawes for the tyme than passed.

¶ He sente, vi. shippes into Sicilia for cozne, wherof two peeryshed by the way, the other. iiii. releued the citee in their great dearth. After folowed suche an earthquake, that. iiii. of. iiii. Temples, with diuers other buildynges in Venice were shaken to the earth: and than such a pestilence that in maner Venice became voyde. ¶ Peter: thelesse a newe army was made out against the Genowates, that foughte with them at Carisso besydes Negroponte, where first the Genowates were discomfy-

The Venetian astate,

ted, than the Venetians, and thir dlye in Sardegna the Genowales againe: and thereby brought so lowe, that they became subiectes to John Visconti, archebishop & Duke of Myllayne, who sente the famous Petrarcha ambassadour to venice, to obteine peace from hym and the genowales. But the venetians wolde not graūt it. Wherefore the Visconti sent his armie into Dalmatia, sacked the towne of Faro and Corfu, toke Parenzo in Istria, and spoiled a venetian shippe, goynge into Candia, of value (by reporte) of. 80000. ducates.

¶ Thus while the Venetians for ease of this trouble were making a leage with the king of Boeme, to bring him against the Visconti, this duke Dandolo dyed.

Marino Falerio succeeded him, in whose daies the common wealth lacked littel of better vndoing. For their army was soze discomfited by the genowales, Pagano Doria being capitaine, at the Ile of Sapientia, besides Pozea. After this, the Duke him selfe conspired against the cities libertie, entending to make him selfe absolute lord thereof, by putting the nobilitie and senate to death. But his purpose was discovered by Beltrame a skinner, one of the confederates, so that the duke was beheaded, and diuers other punished, besides a number that fled, and were banished.

¶ Finally this Beltrame for his reward, was made a gentelman of Venice, with a thousand ducates of yerely reueneue. But after a certaine space, thinkinge his reward ouer littel in respect of so greate a seruice, he lamented him selfe vnto the senate, and was so importunate, that they not onely toke from hym his foresayde reueneue, but also depriued him of the gentilmans dignitee

Marino
Falerio
1354

nſtee, & made hym a ſkinner againe, as he was befoze
 ¶ After this Marco Cornaro as Vice Doge, ruled
 for a certeine ſpace.

¶ Then John Gradenico was elected duke, who ſent
 dyng out. vii. galleys againſt the Genowaies, was oc- John Gra-
denico.
1355
 caſion of the peace, that immediately folowed betwene
 them.

In his time Lewis kyng of Hungary entred in leage
 with certeine princes and nobles of Lumbardy againſt
 the Venetians: ſo that after he had beene befoze Zara,
 Spalato, Trau, and Nona, with other places in Dal-
 matia: he beſeged Treuiſo: during which ſiege Gra-
 denico dyed.

¶ Then John Deſſino was choſen, who being that tyme
 beſieged within Treuiſo, and aduertised of hys electi- John Deſ-
ſino 1356
 on, requyred the kynges ſauconducte to paſſe: which
 woulde not be graunted. Wherefoze at laſte incompar-
 ny of certeine men of armes, he ſecretly departed, and
 came to Venice: and was no looner in the auctozitee,
 but he reuoked the Potestate of Padoa, and toke from
 the Padoanes the trade of ſalte. A matter vnto them
 of great impoztance. This did he to be reuenged on
 Carraro, a principal of the Padoanes, who was entred
 into intelligence with the Hungariens.

¶ Finally this king prospered ſo much againſte the Ve-
 netians, that they were conſtreyned for a peace to
 graunt hym al Dalmatia, from the goolfe Janatico, to
 Durazo, with certeine other towneſ aboute Ceneda
 and Treuiſo, that he had than newly gotten.

¶ To this peace the Venetians at that tyme, were glad
 to agree, for eſchewynge of moze daunger.

The Venetian astate.

Lorenzo
Cello 1360

longe after thys Delfino dyed.

Whom Lorenzo Cello, than capitaine of the armye
bpō the goolfe, was elected, who being aduertised ther-
of, incontinently repayzed vnto Venice; where he was
receiued with such pompe as the Venetians vse. But
his owne father, would in no wyse goe againste hym:
thynking it vnmete, that the father should vse anye re-
uerence to hys sonne.

In his time, fyrst the Duke of Austriche, and after the
kyng of Cyprus came to see Venice for their pastetime
where they were receiued and honoured accor dyngly.
Than of new Candia rebelled, for the great taxes that
the Venetians leaped of theim. Wherfoze fyrste one,
and than an other army was sent thither, whiche with
much adoe (by reason of the Greekes defence) at laste
recovered it; and so with triumph retourned to Venice.
About this time the kyng of Cyprus toke and sacked
Alexandria in Aegypt, from whens he retourned laden
with a wonderful praye. And not longe after thys
duke Cello dyed.

Marco
Cornaro
1365

His successoure was Marco Cornaro, who forthwith
had woꝝde that Candia againe rebelled. Against whom
a newe armie was prepared, with priuilege obtained of
the bishop of Rome, of clere pardon and remission of
synnes, for all theim that shoulde beare armes in that
enterpryse.

Finally the Candiottes were so oppressed, that they
were constrained to aske peace, and with sharpe puni-
shementes were brought to their wonted obedience.

The busynesse of Candia being thus wel quieted and
reformed, Cornaro lyued not longe after.

Than

Than entred Andzea Contarini, notwithstanding that
 he oftentimes refused the dignities, perchaunce through ^{Andzea}
 foresyghts of thynges to come. For yfste they of ^{contarini} 1367
 Trieste through succour of the duke of austria, rebelled
 and beyng in a sharpe battaile ouercommen: were con-
 streigned to retourns to the Venetian obedience.
 Than beganne a new bickering betwene the Carrari,
 lordes of Padoa, and the Venetians, for the interest of
 certeine confines, betwene whome were many skirmi-
 shes with variable fortune on both sides, But the vene-
 tians had euer the better, vntill the Carrari had gotten
 in leage the kyng of Hungary, the duke of Austria, the
 Genowates, and the Patriarke of Aquileia, who on all
 sydes by lande and sea, oppressed the Venetians sore.
 For notwithstanding that in this meane whyle, with
 helpe of the kyng of Cyprus on the one side, they yfste
 discomfited Andronico sonne of the emperoure Calois-
 anni with the Greekes in the Ile of Tenedo, and after
 that diuers of the Genowates by sea. And than on the
 tother side with the helpe of Bernabo Visconti, by land
 discomfited the Carraro on the Padoan territory, with
 getting of some townes: yet fortune tourned so agayne
 them, that at Pola they lost .xv. galleis at one time, and
 by littell and lyttell losse Vmago, Grado, Caorle,
 Chiozza, Loreo, Le Bebbe, Capo d'aggere, Mala-
 moco, & Pauligia: lokyng euery foote, whan they shuld
 be assaulted in Venice. Insomuche, that they sente
 a blanke Charter vnto Peter Dozia, than capitaine of
 the Genowates arme, beseching him to prescribe them
 what condicions he would, and they gladly would ac-
 cept them; but as it hapneth commonly in prosperities,

The Venetian astate.

men are not contented with reasonable aduantage: he would not haue theim but at his owne discretion. And so dyoue forth the tyme till Carlo zeno, with the Venetian armie, scoured all the leuauante seas, toke many riche shippes, of they: ennemyes: and wyth the slaughter of. 300. Genowates, refozed the fortreffe of Constantinople vnto Calotanni emperour of Greece, besleged Pera: & finally after manye woorthy victories in those parties (aduertyed of the peryll that Venice was in) retyred homewardest: foigned wyth Vettorio, Pisani capitaine of the rest of the Venetian armie, and neere vnto Brondolo, Chiozza, and those other places theraboutes, fought diuers tymes with them, with dyuers fortune, and at last slew they: capitaine befozenamed, recovered Chiozza through famine, and toke 80. Wadoan botes, with. 19. Genowate galleys, besides certefine shippes laden with salte, and nounder of prysoners.

This great victory thus obtained by Vettorio Pisani and Carlo zeno, was not yet enough to end this warre. For the rest of the Genowates armie discounfited at Chiozza, departed to Trieste, causyng it to rebel. And than leauing Istria in gouernance of the Patriarke of Aquileia, retourned againe to attempt the gettinge of Brondolo and Chiozza. But findyng the passages closed againste theim, they made towardest Pirano and Parenzo, doyng they: best to gette them: wherin they preyayled not, and so at laste wythdrew them into the haueu of Marano.

¶ This meane while the Venetians endeuoured them selves to reconer againe Bebbe, & the other places nere about

about theim. All which they obtained, Capo d' aggez
re onely except, that was holden by the Carraro.

Then came newes, that Pola was taken, and that the
Genowates, renuyng theiꝝ armie, had also taken Arbe
in the Ile of Scardona. Wherefoze a newe power was
made out, which passing into Istria, sacked Iustinopo
li, and besieged Zara. In whyche enterpryse Vettorizo
Pisani died, so that Carlo Zeno rested capitaine alone:
who with, viiii. galleys of newe, scoured all the costes of
Dalmatia, toke, xii. Schlauon Shippes, and wente forth
into the riuer of Genoa, where he wrought wonders:
whilst the Genowates and theiꝝ colleges on the other
side sacked Capo d' Istria, toke Conigliano, Pouale,
and Treviso befoze yelded to the duke of Austria: be
sides, xliiii. Venetian Shippes, that the Genowates toke
in the porte of Pelaro.

And so longe contended they thus warring one vpon
another, that at laste both parties were wexted, and by
meane of the duke of Sauoye, accorded. In the conclu
dyng of which peace the Venetians rendred the Ile of
Tenedo with the Genowates (that by the meane of the
emperor Caloianni, came befoze to their handes.)

Finally, after the Carraro of Padoa had gotten Tre
viso by force from the Duke of Austria (the kynge of
Hungary being dead) this duke Contarini finished his
lyfe.

Then folowed Michela Morosini, that liuyng but .4.
monethes, made a newe lawe for the triall of murders
and manslaughter.

Pert succeeded Antonio Veniero, a pleasaunte wyse
man, that in the gouernance of Tenedo, had behaued

Michela
Morosini
1583

Antonio
Veniero,
1583

hym selfe prudently.

The bare so earnest a zeale to Justice, that hearinge a complainte against his owne sone, for certain dishonest partes played about a gentilmans doze, of whose wyfe he was enamoured, caused hym to be layed in pryson, where he miserablie dyed of the plague. And though he knewe, that the infection was entered into that pryson, yet wolde he not at no friends intercession remoue his sonne into any other. Whych acte one way semeth commendable, an other way vnnatural and cruel.

Aboute this tyme the Venetians entred in leage with Giangalezo Visconti, duke of Millaine, and with the marchese Da Este of Ferrara, agaynst Carraro of Padoa: so that betwene these thre the territozy of Carraro was diuided.

Before the Venetians had Treviso, the marches of Este had certayne castels, that he had before losse, & the Visconti had Padoa, Feltra, & Ciudadale di Belluno: which with Vicenza and Verona, that he had also gotten a lytle before, set the Visconti of Millaine on suche a height, that immediately he moued warre agaynst the Bologniense and Florentines, whereby he began to be had in Ialousie, and mistruste, of all the other astates, about him. Wherefore the Venetians, with those other two before named, the Mantuan, the Ferrarese, Carlo Malatesta, & Robert duke of Bantura (vnto whome the yonge Pouello Carraro was fled for succours) entred all inra a leage against him: by reason wherof Verona was sacked, Padoa besieged, and the Visconti at length in such wise discomfited, that he was fayne to requyre praece, whych was granted for .x. yeres solowynge.

After

After the death of Veniero succeeded Michele Steno ^{michelo. Steno}
 in whose tyme, .lxxx. Venetian galleys, laden wth mer- ¹⁴⁰⁰
 chaundise were lost in the Arcipelago.

Then Zeno, wth .xl. galleys was sente oute againste
 the Genowates: who had ben in Dozia, sacked Barutti,
 and taken certeine Venetian shippes. But in they^r re-
 tourne, betweene Rodone, and Giunchio, Zeno dys-
 coumfitied them: notwithstanding that in maner they
 were double as many.

This meane tyme the young Carraro beyng (partes-
 ly thzough the Venetians fauour) restored vnto the do-
 mination of Padoa, besieged Alcenza, and streigned it so
 sore, that in desphe of hym they yelded theim selves to
 the Venetians: who toke occasion of vnkynndesse to-
 wardes Carraro, because he had ben the p^rincipall mo-
 uer of the Genowates agaynst theim: and that also he
 had counsailed william Scala to take on hym the do-
 minion of Verona. Insomuche that the Venetians ar-
 med, & s^{py}ste chastised Alberto da Este of Ferrara for
 parttaking with Carraro, and finally by playne force,
 gat bothe Padoa and Verona: and led this Nouello
 Carraro, wth hys two sonnes p^rysoners to Venice,
 where by nyght they were all thze straungled.

And albeit, that the Venetians were esteemed to haue
 spent in those Padoane warres better than two mylly-
 ons of golde: yet this victorie ouer they^r approued enes-
 mie was so grateful vnto them, that forgettyng al ex-
 pences, they triumphed wth feastes and bonefiers so
 longe, that they set the toppe of saincte Markes steple
 on fyre: whych afterwarde (to they^r cosse) was made
 by againe and cleane gylt ouer.

The Venetian astate.

Thus the Venetians rested not long, but that Ladis-
lao, kyng of Naples and of Hungarie, warred on them
in Dalmatia, and toke zara : whyche they redemed of
him for the summe of an. 100000. duckates, takynge
also truce wyth him for. v. yeres. And than died Steno.
¶ Perce folowed Thomas Mocenigo, that reformed
certaine offices in the Rialto.

Thomas
Mocenigo
1413.

He also recovered certaine townes in Friuli, that one
Pippo, a capitaine of the kynges of Hungarye had in
the last warres befoze taken from theim. And was
author also of the renewsyng of the palaice of Sainte
Marke, for the moctonyng wherof, he willingly payed
a thousand duckates, forfasted by an ancient law made
against him that should firste mocton the alteracion of
that palaice from his olde facton.

Fraunces
Foscario
1424

¶ When Mocenigo was deade, Fraunces Foscario en-
tered into the astate, who being prated therunto, entred
in league with the Florentines, against Philip duke of
Apellaine: and sente Carmignuola theyr captayne to
Bressa, whiche by meane of intelligence was sone got-
ten: though the forteresse helde a certaine space. On the
other syde the florentines toke Nicolos da Este, mar-
chese of Ferrara for their capitaine, and sente him into
the territozie of the Genowases, where was gotten no
small booties. So that Duke Philip thus troubled,
fearynge leasse the countrey of Romagna shoulde re-
turne to the Florentines dominion, yelded by the same
to the vse of the church of Rome, into the handes of the
legate of Bononia, and for aduoidyng of farther incō-
ueniēce, caused the same legate to procure him a peace,
whyche was sooner obtained than well obserued. For

Philip

Phillip encouraged wth the money and large offers of the Ap^lanese, wolde not suffer the articles to be obserued, and inuading the Mantuane territory, prouoked his enemies the colleges, to renewe their power, wth which, and by the power of the general Carmignuola, the duke receiued such a discomfiture, besides Terentiano, wth losse of his cariage, plate and money, that if Carmignuola had folowed the victorie, he had ben like enough to haue driuen Phillip out of his Duchie.

¶ Finally after sundry conclusions and breaches, at last a ful peace was concluded, that Bergamo & Bres^asa, wth their appoyntaunces, shoulde remayne to the Venetians, Cremona, wth his territory should be geuen to Sforza for the dower of his wife Biāca, daughter to Phillip Romaningo, wth the fortresses of Gieradadda to be restored to Phillip by the Venetians (Peschiera and Lanado onely excepted) that Conzaga should haue the rest of the Mantuane confines, and that in those quarters Legnago, Porto, Riva, Torbott, Penetra, and Rauenna, shoulde remayne to the Venetians. That wthin the terme of two yerres Nicolas Piccinino should restore Bononia to the church. That Astorre di Faenza shuld deliuer vnto the Florentines their fortresses, and finally that Phillip shuld no more meddle wth the Genowayes.

¶ This peace satisfied, all the colleges (the byshop of Romes legate onely excepted) whose part in Bononia seemed nothyng honourable in this behalfe.

¶ Durynge these businesses in Lumbardie, the Turkes assaulted Theſsalonica, a citie of the Venetians in Macedonia, and by force toke it, wth James Dandolo, and

The Venetian astate.

Andrea Donato, gouernours of the same,

Not longe after Andrea Dandolo was sent ambassadour vnto the Soldan of Aegypt, to excuse the senate of Venice, for the rakyng of certayne of hys vessels, wythout theyr consent.

In this tyme the water in maner drowned all Venice, so that whan the floudde was past, the hurt that it had doen, was esteemed aboue a myllion of golde.

The daughter of the kyng of Arragon, wyfe of Lionello da Este of Ferrara, came to see Venice: and the furpe of the people was so greates to see hir, that they brake the bydge of the Rialto: in the fall whereof .xx. men were slaine, besides a noubler mained and hurt.

Eugenius the bishop of rome, impacient that Piccinino shoulde so longe kepe Bononia, entred in league with Alfonso kyng of Naples, and with duke Philip, against Sforza: and so renuyng the warres in Italie, the Bolognese, thozough helpe of the Venetians and Florentines, recovered theyr libertee, and for aduantage, gatte dyuers of theyr enemies castels. By moane wherof Philip fel in hand againe with the Venetians and Florentines, that came to theyr succoure: so that theyr capitaine Michelle Attendulo fought wyth him besides Casale Maggiore, put him to flight, toke foure thousande hoise of his, ranne to the gates of Wyllayne, and brought Philip so lowe, that besides Wyllayne he had no moze leste, but Crema and Lodi. Wherefore he sought peace of newe: but it woulde not be graunted hym.

This meane tyme James Foscaro, son vnto the duke, for certeine his ill demeanours, was thise confined into
Candia,

Candia, and there dyed.

¶ Then Sforza takynge parte with duke Phillip losse Casale Maggiore, and the Marca d' Ancona, that the bishop of Rome toke from him, but finally Phillip dyed seased both with a feuer and the fluxe, dyed.

Incontinently vpon whose death Lodi and Vicenza, submitted them selves to the Venetians. Wherefore Sforza, capitaine of the Milanese, came with an army to Vicenza, toke it, and sacked it. And Attendulo on the other syde wasted a great part of the Milanese, vntyl suche tyme as Sforza agreed hym with the Venetians, to haue 4000. men, and 12000 duckates of yearly prouision, vntyll he myght gette the state of Myllaine: promysing them, whan he were Duke, he would be contented to renounce to theim all that, that Phillip had gotten on that syde the ryuer of Adda. So that whan Sforza obteyned the state of Myllaine (whyche happened shortly after) he obserued his promyse, and peace folowed.

¶ About this time a certayne Grecke, called Stamato, robbed the treasure of saint Markes churche, after he had been two yeres in cuttyng an hole thzough a very myghtie stone wal: but beynge belwaxed thzough a tal loure, that he trusted, the treasure was recovered, the Grecke taken, and for his longe pacyence and worthy thefte, hanged with a golden halter.

¶ Then came newes oute of Sicilia, that Loredano, capitaine of the Venetian army, had foughten with the Genowates and Sicilians: and had burned 47. of their shippes. After which victorie a generall peace folowed for a tyme.

The Venetian astate.

The kyng of Bolsina sent for a present to the Venetians certayne bestelles of Silver .iiii. goodlye horkes, and manye Faulcones.

Liberalitee

Frederike the emperour, retournyng from hys coronacion at Rome towarde Almaine, passed the Venice, where the Senate presented to the Emperesse: a ryche crowne, sette with the selwelles, wherof some one stone was esteemed at .3000. duckates, and besides that gaue hir two conerynges for a cradell, richelye embroidered with stone and perle: because she was at that time great with chylde.

A new leage made betwene the Venetians, and the Seneli, the duke of Sauote, the marques of Monferrasio, and the lordes of Cozreggio, agaynst Sforza, than newly made Duke of Myllaine. For defence whereof Sforza had secret helpe of the Florentines: so that the Venetians, with their colleges, procured Alonse kyng of Naples, agaynst the Florentines, who after made warre vpon them in Tuscanie, whylest the gentill Leonessio, capitaine of the leage on the other side, toke Loddi, Gotolengo, Manerbio, Pontoglio, and ranne euē to the gates of Myllayne.

About this tyme the Turke wonne Constantinople, in the takyng wherof the emperour of Grece, with diuers gentlmen Venetians, ballauncly resistyng their enemies, both by sea and land, were slaine, besides a number of others taken prysoners, with the losse of theyr nauye and substance. Wherefore the byshop of Rome toke vpon him the appeasyng of the Italvan warres: agreyng the parties on this wise: that Sforza shoulde restore vnto the Venetians all that that he had taken
from

from them in those warres (the castels of Gieradadda onely excepted) that the kynge of Naples should do the like to the Florentines (Castiglione excepted) and the Florentines to do the like to the Senese. And that whē any controuerſie should happen of newe betwene them, the byſhoppe of Rome ſhoulde order the matter wythout any buſiſſe of warre.

The Genowayes were left out of this peace, by meane of the king of Naples.

¶ Federike emperour of Almayne requyred ambassadours from all the princes of Europe, to make a newe league against the Turke.

But this meane whyle Bartholomeo Marcello returned from Constantinople with an ambassadour of the Turkes, that brought certeyne articles of agreemente to the senate, which the Venetians accepted: and therupon was confyrmēd amitie betwene the Turke and theim.

Pasquale
malpiero,
1457

After the death of Foscaro succeeded Pasquale Malpiero, of whom I fynde nothyng of importaunce, save only that in his time hapned the terrible earthquake in Italy, that specially in the realme of Naples dyd so much hurte: and that empyntynge was than fyrſt inuented.

After hym succeeded Christofero Moro, in whose time the Turkes wanne by force, and rased to the earth the Venetian walle, made vpon Istmus of Morea, and after did in maner what they would thozoughout al that region.

Christofero
moro,
1462

¶ This Morea, auncientlye called Peloponnesus, is the chiefe parte of Grece, a very riche countrey, com-

morea,

The Venetian astate.

passed about with the sea, except in one narrow place, that it seemeth tacked vnto the maine lande: in whiche place beyng aboute fyre myle ouer, was suche a walles made, as with reasonable furniture had been sufficient to resist a wonderful power. But the venetians (because they fyest of Christian princes, entred in amitie with those infidelles) trustyng to much in theyr newe friendship, attended moze to the bndoyng of theyr neighbours at home, than to the earnest poyssion that so woorthy a countrey, agaynst so puissaunte an enemy, the Turke, requyred. So that shortly after the losse of that wal, they were shamefully discoumfit at Parafso, James Barbarico beyng theyr Proueditore. And than also they losse Negroponte, where was suche a slaughter of Christians, as would make any Christian herre wepe to heare it. Besides a huge summe of money, that they were constrained to geue to the king of Hungarie, to resist the Turkes passage, that with an other armie by lande was than coming towards Dalmatia.

Nicola
Trono.
1471.

Than succeeded Nicolo Trono, who was cause of the establisshmet of Ercole da Este in y duchie of ferrara. He entred in league with Vsnuassian king of Persia (whose successour is now called Sophie) agaynst the Turke.

IN his time the Venetians gatte the realme of Cyprus by this meane. James, lasse kynge of the same, for the great amitie betwene his forefathers and the Venetians, came vnto Venice, and requyred the Signoria to adopye one of theyr daughters, as daughter of theyr common wealth; and than woulde he be content
red to

red to accepte hir vnto hys wyfe.

¶ This large offer was soone accepted, and Katheryn Cornaro, a goodly yong gentillwoman espoused to the kynge, who therupon returned into his realme continuing in peace the tyme of hys lyfe. At his death, (leauyng his wyfe great with childe) he ordeyned, that she and hir childe not yet bozne, shold enioy the realme, But the chylde after the birth lyued not longe. As soone as the Venetians hearde of the kynges death, they armed certayne galleys & sent them with Georgio Cornaro, brother to the Quene into Cyprus, to comfort hir on the Signorias behalfe: wyth this wyle, that whan Cornaro shold arrive before Famagosta (the princypal citee of Cyprus) he should feigne him selfe so sicke, that he myght not goe out of the shippe, and whan hys sister the Quene, with hir barons should come to visite hym, than should he kepe them sure from returning, and sodelnelye enter the citee, subduyng it wyth the whole realme, vnto the Venetian obedyence. As it was deuised, so it happened from point to point, albe it that the Quene was counsailed not to go about the galey, and that some busynesse was made after for it, yet in effect the Venetians preuailed, & the quene was brought to Venice, where she passed the rest of hir yeres. Some esteeme this doing treason, but many men allow it for good polycie.

After Trono folowed Nicolas Marcello, in whose tyme happened no notable thyng, other than the victor-
 itous defence of the towne of Scodra in Albania againste an infinite number of Turkes.

Next hym succeeded Peter Mocenigo, whyche at the

¶ It

tyme

Cyprus wonne.

Nicola Marcello
1473

Pietro Mocenigo.
1474

The Venetian astate.

tyrne of hys election, was capitaine of an armie by sea, wherwith he had in Cyprius quited a great rebellyon, preserved Scodra from the Turkes fury, and restozed the kyng of Carramania to hys astate.

¶ For these worthy deedes, and for hys other vertues was in hys absence first made Proctour of. S. Marke, and than (as I sayde) created Duke. And beyng called hame from the army, to gouerne the dominio, Antonio Lozedano was sente for the in hys stede: who deliuered Lepanto from the Turkes siege, and bled greate dyligence in the conseruacion of the countrey of Morea.

After Mocenigo, Andrea Vendramino was elected duke. In whose tyrne the Turkes retournyng into Albania, came fyrst befoze Croia, & after ouerran all the countreys betwene that and the ryuer of Tagliamento in friuli: so that the Venetians were faine to cal backe the capitaine Carlo Montone, who not longe befoze put out of wages was than gone into Tuscanie.

¶ This Duke attempted a peace with the Turkes, but hys purpose was interrupted by meanes of the kyngs of Hungary and of Naples.

After Vendramino folowed John Mocenigo, brother to Peter befoze named.

¶ Thys man agreed wth the Turke, after they had warred wth hym, 17. yeares. The articles of accorde were, that the Venetians should yelde into the Turkes handes Scodra, the principal citie of Albania, with the islandes of Corfu, Tenaro, and Lemno, and besides that should pay him. 8000. duckates a yeare. In consideration wherof the Turke for his parte graunted theim safe passage for traffique of merchaundise into the sea

now

Andrea
Mocenigo
no, 1476

John
Mocenigo
1478

nowe called Mare Maggiore, and auncientlye named Pontus Euxinus: and that the Venetians shuld haue power to sende an officer of theirs vnder the name of Bailo to Constantinople, to iudge and order all their merchauntes busynesse.

Not longe after this agreeement, the Ile of Corfuta in Dalmatia, was brought vnder the Venetian domination.

And in the. llii. yeare of this mans rule, warre was moued against Ercole duke of Ferrara, for the breache of certeine articles betwene hym and the Venetians.

After that Robert of S. Severino was sent wryth an armie against Ferrando kyng of Naples, in which enterpryse the Venetians dyscomfited Alfonse Duke of Calabria, sonne of the foresayde kyng. But those warres, by meane of other Princes of Italye, were soone appeased, whan the duke of Ferrara (besydes the losse of Comacchio) had sustained very great damage for hys parte takynge.

After to Vendramino succeeded, Marco Barbarico Marco
Barbarico
1485. who neuer seeking to be auenged on his enemye, would say. It sufficed a discreat prince, to haue power to reuenge, wherby his enemy shuld haue cause to feare him. Therfore he vled seueritie againste the transgressours of the common wealth, & not agaynst them that priuately offended him. In his daies hapned litel adoe.

The contrarpe whereof folowed in the tyme of hys agostino
Barbarico
1486 successor Agostino Barbarico.

First by reason of the warres wth Edmonde duke of Austrie, for the interest of certaine mines of yron, in which enterpryse the Venetian capitaine Robert of S.

The Venetian astare.

Seuerino died: than thozough the compng of Charles the. viii. frenche kynge into Italpe, who at lengthe, partly thzough the Venetian force was constrained to retyze into Fraunce: but most of al they were troubled with the Turkes, who fell out with them, ouerranne al their countreys as farre as Tagliamento, slew aboue. 7000. persons of the Venetian parte, and toke from them Lepanto, Modone, Corone, and Durazo.

¶ Neuerthelesse this meane whyle the Venetians gatte Cremona, and diuers other towne in Italp, which is rather a reproche to the, than an honoz that wold licke warre vpon their chysten neighbours, than bend their power to resist the Turkes.

¶ After Barbarico, Leonardo Loredano was elected to the astare: in whose tyme all Chyistian pnces about the Venetians, conspyred by one accorde vtterly to destroye theim. And the league was suche, that in one selfe tyme the emperoure Maximilian, Lewis the. xii. frenche kynge. Ferrando kynge of Spayne and of Naples, Iulius byshop of Rome, with the Dukes of Mantua and Ferrara, should warre vpon them, beginning about the yere of grace. 1509 So partelye by force, after many discouragements of the venetians power, partly by accorde: in maner all the venetian dominion with in the maine land was diuided amongst these pnces. The french kynge had Bressa, Bergamo, Cremona, and Crema: the emperoure Maximilian, Verona, Vicenza, Padoa, and part of Friuli: The kynge of Spayne, the citres and portes in Puglia, that the venetians before had gotten: The bishop of rome, Arimino, Faenza, Anagnina, and Cerusa, with the rest of Romagnia, and the

Duke

Duke of Ferrara the Pollifene di Rouigo. So that the Venetians had so litel dominion left on the maine lande, that y^e emperour Maximillian came to Maestre b. litel myles from Venice, as neere as the sea woulde suffer hym to appoche: and there for a triumphe o^r displayte, shotte of his artillerie to Venicewardes: though he coulde doe it no hurt. Wherefore the Venetians, prouoked in maner by despayre, & throughe an oracyon made by they^r duke, that encouraged theim rather to die lyke men, than to suffer theim selves thus vilpe to be eaten by and despyled, renued an armie by land, recovered Padoa, than negligentlpe kepte, fortifyed it and Treviso, fought dyuers times with variable fortune against they^r enemies, sought to be reuēged on the duke of Ferrara, againste whome they sent. xviij. galleys and 400. bores to assaile the Ferrarese dominion by the riuer of Po: and fynallpe behaued theim selves so manfully, that the kyng of Spaine, and the bishop of Rome, made a new leage with them against the french kynges: who at that tyme, besydes the state of Myllayne, had gotten Bononia, & was become so greate in Italy, that they were all asfearde of hym. Upon conclusyon of whiche league the citsiens of Bressa retourned to the Venetian obedience, so that for defence of that citee against the frenchemen, Andrea Gritti, with certēns o^rther noble venetians and capitaines, and a conuenient number of souldiours, were sente thither: where after a soze conflict with the frenchemen, they were all dyscomfited, slaine o^r taken, and the principall prysoners sent to Myllayne to Mounser du Foys, thā gouernoure there, who sent Andrea Gritti, as a singular presents, prysoner

The Venetian estate.

prysoner to the frenche kynge.

The Venetians not a little troubled for this losse, caused the campe of the league, that then lay befoze Bononia to draw towardes Ferrara: and in succour of that campe made a new army by water, wherewith they sacked Argenta, toke Mirandula, and did muche hurte to the Ferrarese dominion, tyll at laste the Vice Roy, of Spaine general of the sayd campe, came befoze Bononia, and from thence to Rauenna for feare of the frenche host, that from Myllaine pursued hym. Unto whyche frenche armie the Duke of Ferrara vnited his power, and so together folowed the armie of the league to Rauenna: where on Easterdaye in the morninge was fought the blouddest battaile betwene theim, that hath ben heard of in our daies: and so many thousande slaine on bothe sydes, that it coulde scarcelye be iudged whd had the better: Sauynge that the Frenchemen obeyned the victozy, toke Rauenna, put it to sacke, and after gaite dyuers other towne in Romagna.

Douchemens hall
in Venice.

Whyle these thinges were doing, the Douchemens hal in Venice, called Il fondago di Tedeschi, was redified a very faire and great house: and of a meruaylouse rent. For they asseyme, that it yeldeth to the Venetians aboue. 100. duckates a day: whyche after oure old rekenyng amounteth aboue. 7000. ponde sterlynge by the yere.

Antonio
Grimani.

After Lozedano succeeded Antonio Grimani, who being in exile, was called home, made proctour of sainte Marke, and finally Duke.

Andrea
Gritti.

Then Andrea Gritti, befoze named, newlye retourned out of Fraunce, was elected Duke: by whose meanes
the

the Venetians entred in league with the french kings: and so recovered Bressa, redeemed Verona for a great summe of money, and ayded the frenchemen to recover Millaine, and to doe many feates in the realme of Naples: how be it, the frenchemen not longe after, losse all againe through theyr ill gouernaunce and tyrannie.

¶ Finally practisynge now with fraunce, now with the emperour, now with the bishop of Rome, as best serued for the common wealth: this duke left it in good order, tranquillitee and peace, and so died, greatlye bewayled of his citsens.

¶ Then folowed Peter Lando, in whose dayes the ^{Petro} ^{Lando} Turke made warre to the Venetians, because they togged with the emperour against him: so that they to obtayne peace, were faine to geue hym the strong and notable ctees in Napoli, and Maluagia in Greece: and besyde that the summe of, 300000. duckates.

¶ It was thoughte, that the Turke woulde haue been appeased with a muche lesse gifte, but beyng secretly aduertised by the french ambassadour, how the Venetians had geue theyr Bailo or ambassadour commysion, that rather than the warre should continue to make this offer: he would none other wyse agree with them.

¶ This knowlage came through intelligence, that the french ambassadour had with one of the Venetian Secretaries, who through corruption of money, disclosed all the procedynges of the private counsaile: wherby at length beyng discovered, the same Secretary fledde into Fraunce, and 11. other Venetians of his confederacie were taken and hanged.

By this mans time Andrea Doria, with a great nauy

of the Emperours, of the byshop of Romes, and of the Venetians together, enterprised a sourney against Barbarossa, admiral of the Turkysh nauie: and yet meeting with him at great aduantage, both of power, & place, Doria retyred; so: what cause no man can tell. He leste the Venetian Galeon, the notablest vessel of the worlde, in the middell of the Turkes nauie. And yet after she had been assailed .v. houres on all sydes, she came hie waies safe, in despite of them all, leauynge an infinite number of hir thotte in the Turkysh beten shippes and galleys.

Francesco
Donato.

After Lando Francesco Donato was elected vnto the astate, about two yeres and an halfe befoze the wytyng hereof. And because in his tyme hitherto hath not hapned anye worthy thyng to the Venetian, I woul referre the rest to theim that hereafter shal fynde occasyon to wyte.

The



The citee of Naples (some tyme called Parthenope) is one of the fairest cytees of the worlde, for goodly streetes and beautiful buildyngs of temples & houses, specially the Castel Nouo, wher in the kings were wonte (as the Vicere now is) to be most commonly resident: beyng one of the rarest buildyngs for greatnesse and strength, that any where is lightly to be found.

The countrey aboue is so pleasant, that in maner euerye village deserueth to be spoken of, as wel for sumptuous buildyngs and numbze of commodities, namely haboundaunce of delicate frutes, as also for the holles some ayre. For in most places it semeth alwayes) yea at the deadeest of the winter) to be continuall spryngge tyme. In deede the heate of sommer doeth somewhat greue them, but they are so prouided of large and open buildynges, that it doeth not much annoye them.

And one thyng amongst al the rest is to be meruailed at, whereof it shoulde procede, that manye tymes the fyre breaketh out of the earth in diuers places vpon the sea costes, like to the flambes of Mōgibello, aunciently called Ethna in Sicile, as in the first yere of the emperour Titus, it hapned besides Naples in the hil Vesouio, now called Summi, where Plinie the same tyme (seeking the cause therof) ended his life, not by violence of the fyre (for he approached not so nere) but by the vehement opilation of the sulfure, that stopped his breath. It is true, that the natural bare balnes (whereof there

Castel
Nouo.

Tempera-
ture of
Naples

Plinie
death.

where
barnes

Of ff.

be mag

Fire breake
lyng out
of the erth.

be many in Italy, and namely, in the realme of Naples come of the naturall heate that is in the sulfure, thorough the beynes wherof the water maketh his course: but what shuld be cause of this flambe, that (as it were against nature) ascendeth out of the cold earth, almoste no man can make any reason. In deede, the best opinion that I gather, is, that the beyne of sulfure in the earth, receayng sometymes through the extreme heate of the sonne, a certayne kynde of fyre, kindleth: and as the beyne is great or smal, so worketh it the effect. If it be nere the upper parte of the earth, & haue vent, it breaketh oute in fyre or smoke, if it be so deepe, that for the great weyght of the earth, it cannot issue, than dooth it cause the earth to quake: as in those parties (most subiect to the sonne) earthquakes are commo, and sometime whole townes and countreys are destroyed withal.

Fertillitee
of Naples

Some thinke the fertillitee of the realme shoulde procede muche of the heate that this sulfure geueth the ground (sayng there is moze plenty than elsewhere) but wherof soeuer it cometh the countrey is surely replenished of all thynges necessary for mans lyfe, & so pleasant withal, that Pandolfo Collenuccio (a notable wyfter of the Neapolitane histories) thinketh, the wonderfull mutations that haue happened in the same, to procede of the desire that men had vnto the pleasures and commoditees of the countrey. And further speakynge of the inconstancie of the people, he sayth these wordes: It seemeth, that the realme of Naples is predestynate to haue in it continuall tyrannies, seditions, falshood, rebellions, warres, destruction of citees, rauishments, and flambe, with all the other calamities that of auarice and

rice and ambition (true mothers of such plagues) maye growe. And allegeyng the auctorities of diuers aun-
cient wryters, affirmeth, that the prouinces of the realme
which he calleth Regnicoli, doe perseuer withoute re-
bellion as long as they fynde none to rebel against.

Neuerthelesse Titus Liuius, & the auncient Romayne
hystories shewe, that Naples it selfe was of all other
citties mosse constant in their fates towards the Ro-
manes, as wel in tyme of daunger as of prosperitee.

And for the space of these .30. yeres and more they haue
perseuered in quyet obedience vnder their princes.

Neuerthelesse in this the abbzidgement of their hysto-
ries yo shal see, that sens the decay of the Romayne em-
pire, no realme in al the world hath ben so much subject
to alteracions and warres, principally throught occasy-
on of the inhabitauntes them selves, who alwaies were
diuided in partetakinges to their owne confusion.

And you shal yet to this houre see, that the Neapolita-
nes are scarcelye trusted on their wordes. Not that I
thynke they deserue lesse credyte than other men, but
because the wonted general ill opinion of their vniuersal
falsnesse, is not taken oute of mens hertes. Yet is the
Neapolitane for his good entertainment reckened to be
the verate courtesie of the worlde, thoughe mosse men
repute him to be a great flatterer and ful of craft.

What wol you more? They are ryche, for almost euery
gentylman is lord and kynge with in hym selfe, they
haue peray sayre women, and the worlde at wyll, in so
much as Naples contendeth wyth Venice, whether
shoulde be preferred for sumptuous daunces. Finallye
the court about the Vicere, was wot to be very princely.

The description

lye, and greater than that of Spyllayne for trayne of gentilmen: but now it is somewhat diminished as you shal perceiue in the ende of this history.

The sayng (of them that best can gette) is, that it yeldeth the emperour. iii. millions of gold by the yere, which after our reckenyng is about. 700000. pound. A grea parte wherof is consumed in mainteining the vtterest affaie, and keeping of manie fortresses, in the wages of 300. men of armes, continually mainteigned there, that muste kepe euerys one bys. iii. horse, for the whiche he hath as good as 50. pound sypende yearlye, and many of them haue more. And one grea saute there is, for almost no straunger can traualle the realme vncrobbed, specially betwene Rome and Naples. It is in maner closed about with the sea, except 150. mile, that is cutte ouer from the mouth of the riuier of Vferre now called Maseno, vnto the mouth of Tirono, and is of compasse in all, measurynge it by the banke, about 1400. miles, hauing vpon the sea costes such a number of bayens, and good rownes, as few realmes charytence haue the lyke.

The historie of Naples:



After Charlemayne had taken on hym the occidentall empyre, and agreed wth Placido Emperoure of Constantinople for their conynes, leuynge (as I sayd before) the Duchy of Beneuento for a mere beluene both, wherein he placed Grimoalde a noble man deservynge

ded of the Lombards nation, the realme of Naples rested in peace about the space of 27. yeres, til the coming of the Sarasines into Italse, who landed at Ciuita Vecchia, rased it to the earth, went to Rome, spoiling and burning there what they wolde, passed by Monte Casino & by the monastary of S. Bennet, destroying all before them, and laded with wonderful rycheffe, returned to their hante in the riuer Garigliano, and so passed home into their owne countrey agayne.

The sprite
comynge of
the Sarasines into
Italse.

Not longe after the Sarasines vnder their Capstayne Sabba, returned into the realme, & besieged Taranto to the succours wherof the Greekeish emperor sent his capitaine Theodosius, with a great army by sea, of the whyche. 60. sayle were Venetians, who metynge with the Sarasines, fought with them, were discourmyted, many taken, slayne, and drowned: and finally Theodosius him selfe put to flyght.

843

Then the Sarasines toke the isle of Candia, and the more part of them arraying in Italy, toke all the townes on the sea costes from Ancona to Otranto, and so about to Taranto, spoiling and burning ouer al, vntill at laste, the Venetian arade mette with theim, dyscomfited theim, and droue them cleane away.

864

Within a while after Constantine a child, sonne vnto Leo late emperor of Constantinople, was depriued of his estate by one Romano, general of his fathers army. And this Romano (being also a Romaine boorne of vile condiction) usurped the empyre by force, whyche caused much ruffling, & namely the countreys of Calabria and Puglia rebelled againste hym. But he to be attenged on them, caused the Sarasines agayne to come into Italse, who

He, who not onely ouerronne those two countreys, but also al the rest of the realme of Naples, and Campaine almost to rome: entending to assaulte and sacke it, had not John the .x. than bishop of the same made a greate armie, that so fought with, and discouraged them, that they were fayne to flee vnto the mounte of Gargano, now called sainte Angelo: where they fortified themselves & dwelled many yeres, renuyng now herte nowe there through the realme, burnyng, spoylyng, and kyllyng in suche wyse that whan they came before anye towne, and promised, not to kyl the people nor to burne the houses, incontinently the inhabitantes would yelde them selfe: because they had been so often bereyn, that they thought resistance naught auayleable.

¶ And thus triumphed the Saracines in one parte and an other of the realme, but most in Calabyta & Puglia, till the comyng of Otho, the fyrste of that name, emperour of Almayne, into Italye. Who being arrived at rome (from pacifying of certayne rumours moued against John the .xii. than bishop there) was perswaded by Pandolfe, prince of Capua, to lend the armie he had brought out of Germany into the realme: it shoulde be an easie matter for hym to dyppe all the Saracines as wyne. And so it proued: for the emperour had no sooner sent his sonne (also named Otho) with hys power

964. into those parts, but incontinently the Saracines made what they coulde to carpe with them, and so departed.

By reason whereof, this Otho the second, helde the realme as his owne certayne yeres, till the Greekish emperour Basilio, sent a mighty army of Grekes and Saracines into Puglia, & there discomfited Otho in suche wyse

Otho the
fyrst.

Otho the .x.

the wyse, that if the Greekes had knowen how to haue
 bled theyr victorie, they myght easely haue recovered
 Rome and all Italye. But they contented with the re-
 couery of Calabria and Puglia, fortified the same and
 kepte it, not withoute warre, sometyme of one pryncce,
 sometyme of an other, and many tymes of the Sarac-
 nes, that (wyl entoyng the ile of Sicilia) wold by felth,
 here and there, be doyng mischefe agaynst their Chri-
 stian neyghbours.

¶ Finally Henrie the fyrst emperour of Almanie, 1008
 ghel Catalasco emperour of Constantinople, and Ser-
 gius the. iiii. byshop of Rome, the realme of Naples
 wode thus diuided into sundrye domynions, Calabria
 and Puglia (as I haue sayde) was in possession of the
 Greekes: the romaynes some here, some there in Cam-
 payne and therabout, had theyr partes, and some o-
 ther vnder the name of princes, occupied the rest.

¶ Than one Tancredi, Conte d' alta villa, a Norman
 bozne, came into Italie, who hauyng. xii. sonnes of hys Tancr. di
the Nor-
magne.
 owne, and a certayne noubmer of other Normaines be-
 sydes, toke wages of Pandolfe pryncce of Capua, to serue
 in his warres agaynst Guaimaro pryncce of Salerne: in
 which warres the Normains serued so wel, that Pan-
 dolfe preuailed as he woulde wythe hym selfe. But be-
 cause he seemed to set little by those Normaines, after
 he had obtained his purpose, therfoze whan the tyme of
 theyr appoyntmente was expired, they lefte Pandolfe,
 and wente to serue Guaimaro, whose affaere by theyr
 helpe was shortly after much encreased.

¶ Finally Tancredi being dead, his sonne Guglielmo Guglielmo
Ferrabach
 Ferrabach, was made general ouer the Normains, that

The discription,

were than a great nountber: insomuch that the emperour of Constantinople determining viterlye to drine away the Saracines, that than occupied the Ile of Sicile, required his helpe, promisyng for his rewarde, the iiii. parte of all that should be gotten . But whan the Saracines were all dryuen away, Molocco the emperours capitayne , toke the whole realme of Sicile into his owne handes to the emperours vse, & wold asygne no parte thereof to the Normains . Whych wronge Ferrabach dissembled for the time , & so withdrew hym wyth all his into Puglia, takyng the mosse part of the countrey by force, and entrynge into Melfi (a veray strong place besoze fortified by the Normans, for safes garde of their goodes, wifes and chyldren) he prepared all thynges necessarye for the warre . And tarped tyll the fozenamed Molocco came to besiege him wyth a notable army, and than (as an expert capitaine) considering the Grekes to be werie of their greate trauayls from Sicile thither, incontynently pssed ouer agaynst them, and discomfited Molocco, slew the most part of his army, and drave hym in maner cleane out of Puglia, takyng the possession of it into his owne handes, and naming hit selfe Erle of puglia, and so continued the rest of his life, whych was not longe.

Drogone

¶ This Guglielmo Ferrabach than beyng deade, hys brother, Drogone, succeeded in the dominion of Puglia, who had diuers conflicts with the Grekish armyes, & diuers fortune withal, but finally in a great battile, betwene the ryuer Ofanto and the castell Oliueto, the Grekes were ouerthrowen, and from that tyme forth, the Normains enjoyed the whole countrey of Puglia,

as their owne quyet possessor.

After the death of Rogone, folowed his brother Hun-
fredo, who continued. vii. yeares in the afaire wythoute
any notable thying that happened in his tyme. Hunfredo.

¶ Than succeeded Godfrey another brother, in whose Godfrey.
tyme the prince of Salern happened to be slayne of his
owne mé, and Gisulfo a Normaine made prince in his
place. This Gisulfo had diuers tymes attempted the
getting of Beneuento, and now of new made preparas-
cion for the same, wherefore Leo the. ix. than byshop of
Rome, required succours of Henry the. 2. emperor of
Almayne than beyng in Rome. So the emperor sent
for his Germaines, that laye at Mercelly in Lumbardy
and deliuered them to the bishop, that in his owne per-
son, with the rest of those Italians he coulde make, en-
tered into the realme, entending vnterlye to expulse the
Normans. But Gisulfo, heyrng of his coming, hastned
to Beneuento, toke and fortified it, and afterwarde as-
sayed the bishoppes army at a place called Ciuita, where
in conclusion was stricken a sore battaille, but the Nor-
mains gat the victorie, taking the bishop with certayne
of his Cardinales prisoners, whom (after veray gen-
till intreatyng they lette goe wythoute rancome. For
rewarde of whiche courtesie, the byshop afterwarde
confirmed vnto the Normaines, all that they helde in
Italy, to be their lawfull possessions.

¶ Not long after this dyed Godfrey, and lefte the erle Bagelardo,
dome of Paglia to his sonne Bagelardo. ¶ Therewith
Robert (surnamed Guscardo) brother vnto Godfrey,
was so much offended, that by force he chased his ne-
phew out of the afaire, & than occupied bothe the coun-

The discription.

freys of Puglia and Calabria, adfolgnyng also vnto it,
the citee of Troia, whyche vnto that daye perteyned to
the Romaynes.

Robert
Guiscardo

This Robert was a man strong, hardy, and wise who
perceluyng the great contencion betwene the Romay-
nes and Nicolas the secound their bishop (the better to
establishe his dominion) he sente his ambassadours to
the bishop, who in cōpany of those ambassadours came
to the citee Aquila, and there mette with Robert: & had
suche communicacion together, that Robert was con-
tented to restore to the bishop, the citees of Beneuento
and Troia, with those other landes, that he befoze had
taken from the church, for the which the bishop crea-
ted him lawfull Duke of Puglia and Calabria, and ins-
uested him in the same duchy, with gift of the standard
of the church, so that Roberte became liege man and
vassalle of the Romaine see, and by the bishops com-
mandement brought his armie to Rome, where he so
chastised the Romaines, that they gladly obeyed theyr
holy Romaine father.

Robert
created duke.

¶ Not longe after, leauinge his brother Guglielmo in
Puglia, he passed into Calabria, & fortified the towne
of S. Parke, and departynge thence encamped belydes
the riuer Poccato, nere to the baines, and shortly after
gat Cosenza & Martirano. Than wente he to Squil-
laci & so long the sea costes to Reggio: whiche he be-
sieged, and finally did so much, that he gat whole Pug-
lia and Calabria, the lande of Brutij, and the rest of the
whole realme of Naples, geuyng vnto certayne of his
brethern such part as pleased hym. By reason whereof
the same bretherne (who a litle befoze had ben his con-
traries)

erantes) consented wholly to call him from thence for the Duke of Calabria and Puglia.

¶ And though I comēt to be brieſe, yet I woul not paſſe ouer one thyng that happened in the tyme of this Robert.

There was found in Puglia a certeine image of marble, with a cercle of braſſe in maner of a garland aboute his heade, in which were wrotten theſe wordes Kalendis Maiis Oriente Sole aureum caput habebo, the expoſition or meaning of this ſentence was diligently ſought for by Robert, but none coulde declare it, tyll at laſt a Saracine, learned in artemagiſke came forth, and (being priſoner) required his libertie for the interpreting of it, which being graunted, incontinently he ſaid: The firſt day of the kalendes of Maye, at the riſynge of the ſon, marke where the end of the ſhadow of this head ſhal be, and diggynge there, you ſhal know the meaning of theſe wordes, which time was obſerved, and ere they had dygged depe, they founde a wonderfull treaſure, that afterwarde dyd no ſmall ſeruiſe vnto Robert in his warres.

Treaſure
founde vnder
ground.

¶ Then was the realme of Sicile vnder the Moores, whoſe prince Reſtauerto, made one Bettimeno his admyral or chiefe capitayne ouer the ſame. This Bettimino came ſecretely into Puglia to Roger, duke Robertes brother, and ſhewed hym, howe Sicile was in poincte to rebel, ſo that for a reward and other agree- mentes betwene them, he finally opened to Roger the meanes, how he might get it. Whiche Roger by the helpe of his brother Robert, immediatlye enterpriſed, & paſſynge with a power into Sicile, the fyrſte towne he

The description

Sicilie con-
quered by
the mozt mayne

toke was Melsina, and at length chased awaye all the Saracines, the whole Iland became subiecte vnto hym and his brother, so that for a token of this victorie, Roger sent vnto Alexander the second: than byshoppe of Rome. xlii. camelles laden with part of the praye of the Saracines, for a presente. And wonder it was to see the speede of these victories, for Robert Guiscardo and his brethren, had broughte all these domynions before reherfed vnder them within the space of. xviij. yeres.

Bishoppe of
rome besieged

¶ Not longe after, Gregorie the. vii. byshop of Rome, fyrste fel out with Robert, but afterwarde beyngs soze persecuted by Henrype the. 3. Emperour of Almanie, he agreed with Robert, and receiuyng of hym onely the marke of Ancona, he confyrmed to him al that Nicolas the. ii. had before graunted wyth rather moze. For the whych, whan the same Gregorie was after besieged in the castel. S. Angelo at rome, by the fornamed emperour, Robert Guiscardo came thither with an army, and repsted the siege, leadyng the bishop (who was muche hated of the Romaynes) with hym to Salerno for his moze suretie, where he shortly after dyed.

¶ Thus Robert, after manye woorthye feates doene in Italy and Sicilie, by occasion at last minded to drisue Aslesio, emperour of Constantinople out of hys afaire and to be emperour him selfe, so that he passed the sea wyth an huge armye, conquered Durazo, Valona, and diuerse other ciities in Dalmatia, Albania, and Gretia: fought by sea with the Greeke and Venetian armies both, and ouercame them: and was like to haue preuailed in his enterpryse, had not death prevented hym.

¶ Finally as he was goyng into Greece at Calsiopoli,
in the

In the Ile of Corfu, he sickened and died, ledynge a gloriouse and victoriouse lyfe 60. yeres. 1082

Then succeeded him in the duchie of Calabria and puglia Roger his yonger sone, who in the counsaile holden at Melfi, was confyrmed by Urbane the second bishop of Rome. But Boemonde the elder brother (whoener had folowed the sayth, and at that tyme remained captayne ouer the armie in Grece) herynge that no part of the dominion in Italie was reserved for him, wared so wroth withal, that (habandonng all his fathers enterpryse) passed the sea with his army, to disturb his brother oute of the affaie: and dyd so muche, that after muche sepyghtinge, by agremente parte of Puglia was assigned vnto hym, though he enioyed it not longe. For immediately after folowed the greate biage into the holye land vpon the conclusion of the counsaile made in Chisaramonte d'aluerina in Fraunce. In which biage amongst the other princes, Boemonde him selfe would nedes goe, and so worthily behaued him, that by assente of all men he was made prince of Antioche, and so continued honorablie till his laste day. By reason wherof his brother Roger remained quietly Duke of Puglia and Calabria, from the beginnyng of his reigne about xxx. yeres. 1094

After him succeeded his sonne Guglielmo, that thynking to marry one of the daughters of Alessio emperor of Constantinople, toke shippynge to goe thither: and commended his affaie to the protection of Calixte the second than byshop of Rome. But while Guglielmo was absent, Roger than Erle of Sicile, sonne vnto Roger brother of Robert Guiscardo, without any regarde of the

The description

of the byshop, assaulted Calabria, and gotte the better parts ere euer Calixt coulde succoure it. And albest the byshop reised suche an armye as the hasty tyme woulde serue, and came forth as farre as Beneuento, sendyng a Cardinal befoze with exhortacions and excommuniacions, yet wold Roger nothyng decline from his purpose: but was rather moze hotte in hys enterpryse, and fortune so muche fauoured hym, that after a noubmer of the byshoppes armie were fallen sicke, and manye of his dere friendes dead, the byshop him selfe sickened so soze that he was caried in a hozielitter backe to Rome, and all hys people desperpled. By reason wherof roger in maner without resistance, in thozte tyme gat all Puglia and Calabria into his owne possession, and so kept it, that whā Guglielmo retourned, deceiued of hys pretended mariage (findyng him selfe also spoyled of hys dominion) he was fayne to repayre to his cousin the prince of Saern, whers not longe after he died, leauing none issue.

Roger. 2.

So Roger remainyng successour by inheritance, woulde no moze be called Duke, but entituled hym selfe kyng of Italy, whych Calixt and Honorius (nexte byshop after him) dissembled, because thei could not chose: but Innocence the second, they next successour would not abyde that name, and therefore moued of dysdeynes without measurynge his force, suddenly assembled such people as he could make, and went against Roger with so great a furie, that ere ener Roger coulde make anye preparacyon, he drave hym from S. Germaines, and oute of all the abbey landes (where Roger thought to haue

true defended hym selfe) and finally constrained him
 to fle into the castel Caluzzo, and there besyged hym,
 till William duke of Calabria, sonne of Roger, coming
 with an army to succour his father, discomfited hym
 with his power, & finally toke the byshop him selfe, withal
 his cardinals prisoners whō Roger the father entrea-
 ted very courtlesly, and at last licēced them to departe at
 theyr pleasure. In consideration whereof the byshop
 graunted roger al his owne requestes, the title of king
 onely excepted: and amongst other thinges the citee of ^{The citee of}
 Naples, which till that tyme had alwaies ben the em- ^{Naples got-}
 perours. For sope wherof Roger at hys entrie made ^{ten by the}
 an hundred and fiftie knightes. But Innocence retur- ^{Normans.}
 nyng to rome, found a new byshop made in his absēce,
 one Peter, sonne of Pierleone, and was called Anacle-
 tus. Wherefore Innocence fledde with certayne ship-
 pes of Pisa, into Fraunce. The meane whyle Roger
 bishoppng this other bishop Anaclete, obtained of him the ^{Roger en-}
 title of kynge of bothe the Sicilies, on this syde and be- ^{titled kynge}
 yonde the Faro. But within thre yerres after, Inno- ^{of Sicilie}
 cence by helpe of the Pisants returned, & brought wth
 hym Lothayre Duke of Saronse, whome he crowned
 emperour. After which Coronacion they bothe with a
 puissant army went against Roger, & toke from hym
 al that he had gotten in Italye, as farre as the Faro di
 Messina, but within few yerres, whan Innocence was
 dead, Roger recovered agayne all that they toke from
 hym, and did afterward many notable feates agaynst
 Emanuel emperour of Constantinople, whoselandes
 and towne he toke by force, as Corfu, Corinthe, Te-
 bes, and Negroponte, & burned the suburbs of Con-

The discription.

Constantinople, assaulted the emperours palatse, and for a
memorie of his beyng there, gathered apples in his Oꝝ
charde.

¶ He also foughte with the Saracines and rescued Le-
wys the. viii. Frenche kyng out of their handes, taken
by theim by the way, goynge into the holte lande. And
so reising. 24. yeres lord of Sicile, he died in the citie
of Palermo.

Guilielmo. 3

¶ Than succeeded his sonne william befoze named, who
immediately ouerran the church landes, and was there-
foze excommunicated, insomuch that many of his owne
barons conspired with Adrian bishop of Rome against
hym. But finally after much a doe he humbled hym
selfe to the bishop, of whom he was assolued, & inuested
kyng of newe in the dominion of both the Siciles.

And after that made an armie into Barbarie; where by
foze he toke and sacked the citie of Tynyse: In his re-
tourne from thence he banquished the grekish army by
sea, though they were many moe in number than he.

William
deposed.

But because he waxed afterwarde somewhat couetouse,
and burdened the people with taxes and subsidies, his
barons rebelled, toke him in his palatse at Palermo,
and put him in prison. Than toke they his eldest sonne
Roger, and made him ryde through the streetes. After
whom the people went crying. Life to kinge Roger,
and death to the tiranne king wylliam.

¶ But the inconstante people repentynge them of their
errour, or fearynge lest Roger would reuenge the in-
surie done to his father, returned to the palatse with a
new rumour, and findynge it closed, began to assault it,
so that roger thinking to appease them, came to a wma

dowe

doe, and as he would haue spoken, was shotte into the heade with an arrowe, wherof he dyed.

William
restored

¶ Than was William taken out of prison and restored to his kyngdome, wherin after he had reigned in al. 21 yerres, he died, leuyng his sonne also named William in the estate.

¶ This William for his good and peacible gouernance was surnamed. The good kyng William. For in 26 yerres reigne, he neuer had warre with any christian prince, excepte that litel, that (moued onely of a noble courage) he made against Andronico, who beinge lesse tutour to Emanuel the second, a child, vsurped his empire of Constantinople. But the Constantinopolitans them selves arose against him, and helped him to peeces, creatyng Isaac emperour in hys place. Eugleimo, 4

¶ Many worthy feates did this William with his galleis agaynst the infidells: specialllye in the viage that the two kings Phillip of France, and Richard of englande made into the holy lande. Duryng whose beyng at the siege of Acres, the good kyng William dyed in Palermo, without issue of hys body. 1191

¶ Than the barons fearing the bishop of Rome should subdue theim (whose subiectes they wolde in no wyse be) incontinently elected Tancredi (bastarde sonne of the laste Roger before named) to be their kyng. But shortly Celestine the. iiii. byshop of Rome, founde meane to trouble hym on this wyse. Tancredi

¶ He crowned Henry the. vi. emperour on condycion, that he at his owne charges shold conquere the realme of both Sicilies, to hold it in fee of the church, restoring certayne citees, and payng a certayne tribute. And to

The discription,

make his matter the better, he secretly toke oute of the
monastarie of Palermo Constance a nunne, doughter
of the fozenamed roger, and (despensyng withall) gaue
her in mariage to this emperoure Henrye, crowninge
them both with the title of the foze sayoe realme. And so
1191 folowynge that title the emperour besieged Naples, but
by reason of a greate plague in his armie, he was fayne
to leaue his siege and retourne into Almayne. Before
whose retourne (which was. lxxx. yeres after) Tancredi
died, not reigntyng fully. lx. yeres.

Immediately after, his wyfe Sibille caused William
Euglielmo. 5 their sonne to be crowned. But the fozenamed emper-
roure (pretendynge title in the right of his wyfe) with a
1195 puissant army entred the realme, & in maner without
resistance obtained the whole, dring the Queene & hir
son William from place to place so longe, that at length
he besieged theim in a stronge holde, where fallynge to
composition, it was agreed, that William should enioye
the principate of Taranto, with the Erldom of Lecce,
yeldynge therfore due obedience to the emperoure, who
was sworne to obserue this conenaunte, But contrary
to his promyse the emperour as soone as he had the mo-
ther and sonne in his handes, sent them bothe into Al-
mayne, and made William to be gelded, to the entente
there should folow no more issue of that bloude. And
so ended that noble house of the Normaines miserably
that about the space of. 200. yeres had prospered, and
at length reigned in Italy & Sicile, as you haue heard.

Ende of the
booke of
Normains.

Henrico. 6
Imperatoze.

After Henry the. vi. emperoure of Almayne (borne of
the house of Suevia) had thus extinguisht the domy-
nion and power of the Normayne blood in Italye, he
obtained

obtained the realme of Naples and Sicile, and reigned
ouer them wel neere .lxxx. yeres, and died. Leauynge the ^{1198.}
realme by testament vnto his sonne Federike, who his
wife Constance bare after she was .50. yeres old: whiche
being but a babe, he committed to the protection of
his mother Constance, of innocent the .iii. than byshop
of rome, and of his brother Phillip duke of Sueuia.

So Federike not full ye. .lxx. yeres olde was crowned ^{Federike.}
kyng in Palermo: shortly after whose Coronacion his
mother constance died, commendynge the tuition of the
affaire wholly to the byshop of rome, that accordynge
maintained the same to his power: notwithstandinge
that during the noneage of Federike, diuers busineses
happened in the realme. First by Marquarde an Almain,
made Marques of Ancona: by Henrype the .vi. after by
Gualtiero di Brenna a Frenchman, who in the right
of his wyfe, one of the systers of the last king wylliam
the fourth, pretended title to the realme. Finallye
by Otto duke of Saronie, whiche after he had obtey-
ned the impervall crowne at rome, disposed hym selfe
wholly to conquere Naples and Sicile: till the fozena-
med Innocent by waye of excommunicacion had made
so many of his nobles and prelates to forsake him, that
he was fayne to leaue his enterpryse. At last Federike
being growen sufficiently in yeres, was called into Als-
maine, and there elected emperoure after the deathe of
Otto, so that returning to rome, he was triumphant-
ly crowned by Honorius the .iii. than bishop: in recom- ^{1220.}
pence wherof he gaue the erleldom of Fondi, with cer-
taine other landes to the church: but shortlye after Ho-
norius excommunicated federike, the cause why I find

The discription

nor: so that Federike to annoy the landes of the church gathered together a number of disperpled Saracines, placing theim in Luceria: and did so much hurte, that neither Honorius, nor yet Gregorje the ix. that was byshop after hym. xlii. yeares, had in maner suye good dayes rest. Some holde opinton, that Gregorje died onely for sorowe. Neuerthelesse this Federike was a worthy man. He had, iii. wyfes, the fyrste named Constance, syster to the kynge of Castile, by whome he had a sounne named Henry, that afterwardes for rebelling against his father died in prison: the secod was Iolantie daughter of Iohn di Brenno, king of Ierusalem, with whose maryage the tittle of the Realme of Ierusalem was geuen him, whiche tittle all the Papolitan kynges haue kepte euer sens, as the emperour doth at this day: the thyrde was Isabell, daughter to the kynge of Englande. This Federike went into the holy lande with a puissant armie, and there behaued him selfe so valiantly, that the Soldane sued to hym for truce, and vpon agrement deliuered to him the citee of Ierusalem with the whole realme thereunto belongynge (a fewe smal forresses onely excepted) insomuche, that in the myddest of Lent, he was in Ierusalem crowned, & before his retourne reedified the citee of Toppa, now called Zaffo. And after a notable victorie had agaynst the Milanes, with other their confederates of Lombardia, he entred into Cremona in maner of triumph, leadynge after hym a number of prisoners with theyr Carroccio, on the which Piero Tiepolo Porestate of Vyllaine was hanged by one of the armes with an halter aboute hys necke. This Carroccio was a carre drawn by

The kynges
of Naples
entitled
kynge of
Ierusalem

1229.

Carroccio.

was by certefne oren, trimmed aboute with greeces o2
 steppes in maner of a kingly seate, and decked with o2
 namentes of tapestrie and silkes of the beste sorte, w2th
 the standardes and baners of all the confederate citees
 and nobles. Unto whiche as to the princippall place of
 iudgement o2 of audience all men vsed to reso2te. And
 whan so euer the Carroccio, in any battaile was losse,
 than was the fiede wonne, fo2 aboute it was alwayes
 the strength of the battaile.

Of this battaile and triumph one wrote these wordes,
Hæ occisis non sufficiunt sepultura, nec Cremonæ
palatia multitudinem non capiunt captiuorū, which
 is as muche to saye, To them that are slaine sepultures
 suffice not, no2 the palaces of Cremona are not able to
 receiue the multitude of prisoners.

Then Gregorie lette crye the Crosse against him, and
 so much provoked hym, that all the prestes he toke, he
 caused their shauen crownes to be cutte a crosse, with a
 number of other despytes. And beyng at siege before
 the citee of Faenza (which he toke at last by compositi
 on) wantyng money to pay his souldiours, he cogged
 leather, and valewed it, whiche fo2 the tyme serued as
 wel as siluer o2 golde. Afterwardes beyng returned
 into the realme, he receiued the lether and gaue the va
 lewe of gold fo2 it againe.

Ento kyng of Sardegnia, and sonne of this emperoure
 Federike, by his fathers commaundement, fought with
 the Genowases by sea, and ouercame. 4. battle of them,
 in w2yche. 111. of the bisshope of Romes legates, with a
 number of other prelates (goynge to the counsaile at
 Rome made against Federike) were taken prysoners.

And

The descripcion

An Entio wyltyng to his father, to know what he shold doe wylh them, was answered thus in two verses.

Omnes prælati papa mandante vocati,

Et tres legati veniant huc vsq; ligati.

Whych is as much to saye.

Sende me those prelates called by the pope,

With thre. iiii. legates bound in a rope.

1250 Finally Gregoꝝ the. ix. (as I sayd before) seynge he could by no meane preuaile against Federike, sickened for sorow and dyed.

Then succeeded Innocent the. iiii. who before beyng a Cardinal, was faste frende to the emperoure. But as soone as he was bishop he became his mortal enemy: as Federike him selfe said, whan the newes of his election was brought hym: nowe of a good frende shall I haue an ennemye. For indeede Innocent at his dayes ceased not to worke agaynst Federike at the myschyses he coulde imagine. He fledde into Fraunce: and called a general counsaile in Lyons, where Federike was double accursed: but he effeimed it not, answearing alwayes, that as long as the byshop went about temporal persecucion, he would defend him selfe tempozally.

Finally after many notable battailes and victozies, he finished his life in Fiorẽtino, a little towne of Puglia, leauynge generall heyre of the realme of Naples. His sonne Conrado, bozne of his second wyfe Iolante, who by election of the princes of Germanie, succeeded bys father in the empyre. One other lawfull chyld he had named Henry bozne of Isabel his. iiii. wyfe, to whom he assigned the Ilande of Sicilie from the Faro di Mesina forwarde. Than of bastardes he had

Entio

Entio befozenamed , kynge of Harbegna , Manfredo prince of Taranto, and Federike Prince of Antioche, with diuers others not so notable.

As soone as the Conrade being in Almaigne, heard of Conrade his fathers death, he came with a great army, first into Lombardy, where he recovered many citiees that newly had rebelled: and after passed into the realme, reducing also vnto his obedience those townees that befoze his comming were in a rumour, of whiche some be destroyed and put to sacke, as Capua and Aquino, and so finally besieged Naples, which at length he toke by famine: ouerthrowinge the walles and principall houses therof, with banishment of diuers of the nobles. Thus whan he had got Naples, the whole realme was clerely his owne: so after he gaue hym selfe altogether to hunting and haukyng with other like pastimes. And being so in peace, his mother Isabell sente his brother Henry, chautender of yeres, to do reuerence vnto him, whom Conrade caused secretly to be murdered by the way. A child in witte and beautie verie towarde. But Cruelte the crueltie was not long unpunished for conrade hym selfe, by procurement of his bastard brother Manfredo (as it was sayde) was poysoned within. v. monethes after.

Now it is to be vnderstanded, that Henry the eldest sonne of the emperor Federike, who (as I saide befoze) died in prison, had a lawfull sone named Corradino, to whom after the death of Conrade all the domynion of Federike descended. But Innocent the. iiii. yet liuing, and consideringe Corradino beinge but a child in Almaigne, made an armie, & withal spede went to Naples,

Conradine
next heire
vnto
Conrade.

The discription,

82540

where he was receiued, and (as it was thought) had in
thort space obtained the realme, had he not dyed imme-
diatelye.

Manfredo

¶ By reason of whose death, Manfredo by title of su-
tour of the younge Corradino (yet still in Germanye)
suddenly assaulted and discomfited the bishops army,
and within very thort space brought the whole realme
to obedience, ere the ryghte tuteurs of Corradino in
Almaine, knew of this victoize.

¶ Than craftily he hyed certaine Almaines to feigne,
that they came streighte oute of their countrey wyth
newes of Corradines death: wherfore Manfredo wyth
all his, clothed in blacke seemed greatly to lament the
thing, insomuch that he caused the funeralles hono-
rably to be executed.

¶ Not longe after appered him selfe in kinglye habite,
and was saluted and called kynge. Wherewith Alex-
ander the. iiii. than bishop of Rome was sore offended,
excommunicated Manfredo, and sent an armie against
hym, which was discomfited. For Manfredo gathering
into his handes the treasures of his predecessours, wa-
ged so many Sarasynes, and banished men of the Flo-
rentines and Lumbardes, that he was alwayes so
stronge for the bishop.

¶ After Alexander succeeded Urbane the. iiii. who to
ouercome Manfredo lette crie a Croysse, vnder coloure
to expulse the Sarasynes oute of Italie and Sicile.

But the army of that Croysse was not sufficient to fur-
nish the enterpryse. So that Urbane of newe began
to deuise a better way, calling Charles Duke of Angio
and erle of prouance, brother vnto Helys the. i. french
king

kyng unto Rome, where first he made him Senatour and after crowned hym kynge of Sicille and of Ierusalem, upon condiction, that he should paye yearlye to the church. 48000. duckates, Pursuyng the title, Charles with his frenche armie invaded the realme, and at laste in plaine battaile fought with Manfredo besides Benevento, where Manfredo was slaine, and his power discomfited, so that Charles findyng after in maner no resistence, gat the dominion ouer the whole realme, and at length toke the wife and sonne of Manfredo prisoners, which sonne had his eyes put oute, and after dyed miserablie in prison in the castel De Louo.

1265.

Ende of the house of Swabia in the dominion of Naples. Carlo Duca de Angio.

¶ Then wente Charles royallye to Naples, where he found an infinite treasure that Manfredo had gathered, the thirde part whereof he distributed amongst his souldiours: and wared so great, that Clemente the. iiii. who succeeded Urbane, made him vicare of the Empire in Italie: so that at his pleasure he rode aboute the Tyberis and into Tuscanie vntill the comyng of Corradino before named, right heire by title of the house of Swabia vnto the crowne of Naples, who hauinge certayne intelligence in Italie, came with a mighty power oute of Almanie to reconer his enheritaunce. But Charles overcame him more by polycye than strengthe in the playne of Palenta.

1268

¶ And albeit Corradino and his cousen the Duke of Austrie brought vponge men, fledde in the discomfiture of the battaile, and did disguise them selves in vile appareille, trustyng to escape: yet their yll fortune at laste discovered the, so that they were taken, brought to Naples, & there after a yeres imprisonment (against al law

Corradino beheaded.

The discription,

armes or reason) openly beheaded: some saye, throughte counsaile of the byshop of Rome . For whan Charles had asked counsaile of the byshop , what he shoulde doe with Corradino, he aunswered these wordes, Vita Corradini mors Caroli, mors Corradini vita Caroli,

Crueltee

¶ But surely Peter, than kyng of Aragone, iustly reproued this crueltee in a letter wrytten to Charles with these wordes , Tu Nerone Neronior , et Sarracenis crudelior, that is to say, thou art moze Nero than Nero him selfe, and moze cruel than the Saracines . For in dede Charles wente into the holy land with his brother Lewys the frenche kyng, and there being taken prisoners of the Saracines, were courtislye entreated and sette to theyr raunsome : Whiche thyng gentlenesse and reason wolde he shoulde haue used towardes Corradino.

¶ But see what folowed . The frenche officers and souldours in sicile, behaued them selfe so proudly with a certayne kynd of tyrannye, as wel againste women as men, that Sicilians conspyred agaynst them, throughte the instigation of one John di Procida, sometime physician to the kyng Manfred, who after he had obtained promysse of maintenaunce by kyng Peter of Aragone, wrought this conspyracte the space of .xviii. Monethes (a wonder it could so long be kept secreete) and so well it came to passe, that at the daye appointed, with the fyrst ringyng of a bell to euensonge, the Sicilians being armed, slew all the frenchemen, wheresoeuer they founde them, they left not in all Sicile one frenchman on lyue, nor one woman that was knowen to be wyth chylde of a frenchman. Wherof yet vnto this daye, the

**Rebellion
in Sicile.
Slaughter
of frenche-
men.**

Sicill:

Sicilians euensonge, is vled as a prouerbe in Italy.

And than by accorde came to the kynge of Aragon ^{Peter} and receiued Sicile vnto his dominion, the rather be- ^{kynge of} cause he had a certaine title therunto, as in the right of ^{Aragone.} his wife Constance, daughter to the late kynge Manfredo. Vnto whom also the bishop of Rome graunted his consent, and in deede inuested him kynge therof by his ecclesiastical power.

Many thynges happened betwene king Charles and king Peter, & amongest other a desfaunce to fight hand to hand with the place appoynted at Burdeaur, befoze our pryncce Edward, than ruler of Gascoygne: where bothe kynges kepte theyr daye: but nother mette, nor fought. And ere euer kynge Charles returned, Roger di Loria, admyral to kynge Peter, had foughten by ^{Charles} sea with Charles pryncce of Salern, onely sonne of king ^{senne taken} Charles, befoze Naples, and taken hym prisoner, with ^{prisoner.} a number of the Neapolitane barons and gentlemen, that were all sent (except charles with, ix. of the chiefest) ^{Crustoe} into Sicile, and there for a reuengement of Conradinos death. 200. of those nobles and gentylmen were beheaded on a daye.

Finally kynge Charles vpon his retourne, made credynge greate preparacion to invade Sicile, but er he could bynge it to passe, he died for anger and melancolye, after he had reigned. xix. yeres.

And for as muche as some holde opynion, that this Charles was the fyrst Neapolitane kynge, that obteyned the title of kynge of Ierusalem, it is necessary to declare, by what meane. ^{Title of the} ^{kynghdom of} ^{Ierusalem} ^{1276.}

The lady Marie, doughter of the pryncce of Antioche,

The discription

resigned into the handes of this kynge Charles all hys
rytle to the realme of Jerusalem, where vpon he caused
him selfe to be crowned kynge of Jerusalem, and wth
helps of the Venetians, sent Roger Di San Severino
to be gouernour, to receiue feaultee and homage of the
christen barons there. Thus and not by the interest
of Federike, the kynges of Naples vsed the title of Je-
rusalem: though I fynde not who was Martes father,
by name, nor yet by what reason that realme shold ap-
perceine to him.

Carlo. 2.

¶ When kynge Charles was deade, hys onelye sonne
and heire, charles prince of Salerne remained prisoner
in Sicille, vnder the keeping of queene Constance, wife to
king Peter of Aragon: and was by consent of the bar-
rons condemned to die, as it were for a full reuengement
of Conradinos death: but the noble hert of constance,
would not suffer it: & caryng the matter, that befoze
she knew hir housbandes mynd, she would not attempte
to greate a thinge. Wherefoze she sente hym into Ara-
gone, where he continued prisoner til king Peter died:
and than by procurement of prince Edwards, lord of
Gascoygne, he was deliuered & restor'd to hys realme
of Naples. Who was raunsomed at. 30000. markes:
and for persourmance of couenauntes, lxx. of his sonnes
and. 100. gentilmen laye in hostaga.

Prince
Edward of
England

¶ There is to be noted, that wthin the space of one yere
died. lxx. kynges and a bishop of Rome, that is to wete,
Phillip king of Fraunce, charles king of Naples, Peter
king of Aragon, and Martine the. 4. bishop of Rome.

After Peter succeeded in the realme of Aragon his el-
dest sonne Alfus, in Sicille his sonne James, that held
in p^{re}s

in person the forenamed charles the secounde.

¶ Finallye Ausus the elder brother beyng dead, James to haue the kingdome of Aragon in peace (soe bered at that time by the french kyng) fell at composition wyth charles, to renounce Sicile vnto hym, and so dyd. But Federike younger brother to James, as soone as he heard therof, got a certayne power, went into Sicile, and gat it to hym selfe: by reason whereof betwene charles and Federike was continual warre many yeres, tyll at last charles to haue calabyria in peace (the most parte wherof Federike had gotten by force) consented, that Federike durynge his life, should quietly enjoy Sicile.

Federike
kyng of
Sicile.

¶ So charles byning all his thynges to a quiet, resigned. 24. yeres, and died, leauynge issue by his wife (Mary daughter of kyng Stephen of Hungary). xi. sonnes and v. daughters. The eldest named charles Martell, afterwarde kyng of Hungarye by the mothers title, Lewis the secound sonne bishop of Colanse in Spaine Robert the thirde sonne kyng of Naples. As for the rest, though they were princes, Quenes and princesses, yet I passe them ouer, and wyll onely speake of Lewys duke of Durazzo, because charles Dadurazzo (who was next kyng after the firste quene Johan) descended of hym.

¶ At the death of charles, Roberte his. iiii. sonne beyng in Auisign, was called from thence to the dominion of Naples, and confirmed kyng by Clemente the. v. than bishop of Rome, howbeit not long after Caronumber to kyng of Hungarye, and sonne of hys elder brother charles, pretended title ther vnto: but after longe debating therof, the lawiers finallye determined, that Ro-

Robert.

bert

The discription

bert should continue, and Caronumberto should consent hym with the Realme of Hungarie. And though Robert was much troubled by the comyng of the emperour Henry the. vii. into Italie, yet (after the emperour was poisoned by a blacke frier, in ministring him the sacrament of communion at Ronconuento besides Siena, by order (as they say) of the Romish legate, king Robert prospered so well in Italle (by reason he was taken as heade of the Guelff) that he subdued Genoa: and the Florentines with their whole affaie submitted them selves vnto him, & accepted his sonne Carlo senza terra to be their lord. Whiche Charles not longe after his establishment in that dominion, returned to Naples and died.

1342.

Finally Robert hym selfe sickened and died, without heyres males. And so the inheritance remayned in the iii. daughters of his forenamed sonne Charles. Vnto the eldeſt named Johan, he by his testament left the realme, vpon condicion, that she should mary with his nephew Andzew, yonger son of the abouenamed Caronumberto. In whose tyme lined Petrarcha and Boccaccio, the one for verse, and the other for prose, famous in the Italian tongue: and for theiſe vertues muche cherished of this kynge Robert.

Petrarcha
Bocchacius.

Glouanna
prima.
Quene
Johans
Husband
strangled

Accordyng to the testament of kynge Robert, his nephew Andzew came out of Hungary, & married Quene Johan, with whom he reigned scarcely. iiii. yeares, but that she caused hym to be hanged out at his chamber wyndow, because (as the same went) he was not cockie enough to satisfie his appetite.

Johan married the Lewis prince of Taranto, an excellent

leste beautifull man. But Lewis kyng of Hungarie,
 elder brother to Andrew, to reuenge his brothers death
 came with a puissant army into the realme, in somuch
 that the Queene and hir husband bothe fledde to An-
 gnion in Pouance, leauing Charles da Durazzo, sone
 of Lewis da Durazzo befozenamed, they lieutenant
 to defend: but the Hungarien so muche prospered, that
 in short space he gatte the whole realme, and toke thys
 Charles da Durazzo, with his son Charles prisoner.
 The father was beheaded, as gillie of the death of An-
 drew, being of secret faction in armes with the queene:
 the soune was ledde prisoner into Hungary. Finally
 kyng Lewis, after he had been .iii. monethes in the
 realme, leauyng a stronge garrison of Hungariens at
 Naples, retourned into his countrey and thence died.
 Then Clement the .vi. bishoppe of Rome entreated a
 peace betwene kyng Lewis and the Queene, in suche
 wyse, that Johan retourned into hir state, with coue-
 nant, that hir husbande shoulde in no wyse beare the
 tytle of kyng. But what auailed that: for she was no
 sooner in possession of the realme againe, but she by fa-
 uour of Clement, caused hir husband to be crownded king
 in Naples, and by Clements procurement, got the con-
 sent of the kyng of Hungary therunto. For the wher-
 che she gaue to the bishop the reue of Anagnion, that the
 churche euer sens haue kepte. But Lewis couetyng
 to satysfie hir fleshely appetite, fell in a consumpcyon,
 and dyed, wth in .iii. yerres after.
 Then she married James of Tarracone, a younge gene-
 tilmā borne in Asozica, than repured the goodliest sea
 low in the world: But to hym she graunted not the ty-

ele of lypng. With in setue yeares he dyed: some sape by natural infirmitee: other sape, he caused his head to be stricken of, for companyng with another woman. After she married Orsio, Duke of Brainsworth in Saronie, who than at that time serued in the warres of Italye, reteinued with the bishop of Rome.

Finally, Queene Johan, who fauoured not Urbane the .vi. elected bishop, immediatelye procured certaine Cardinales to elect one of the French faction: so they elected clement the .viii. by reason wherof grew a great schisme in the church. For Italy, Hungarie and Allemagne fauored Urbane: Fraunce and Spaine fauored Clement. And Urbane to be reuenged on the quene, made an armie, and dyd so muche, that he constrained both clement and the quene, to flee from Naples to Aulignion: where the quene considering she had no child, adopted Letopys Duke of Angio second sonne to king John of Fraunce to be hir hestie of the realmes of Naples and Sicille, and therof made satisfaction withynge: whereupon the seconde line of the house of Angio haue ever since mainteigned their title that they haue to the Realme.

Shortly after the quene retourned to Naples. Where Urbane this meane while, had induced Charles da durazzo (who as you haue herde before, was ledde prisoner into Hungary) kyng of Naples, and broughte so well, that Charles by helpe of the kyng of Hungary (that than fauored him much) brought a greafe armie with him, and inconelusion toke Naples and the quene with hir husband prisoners.

The husband Orsio was sette at libertie vpon condition

Title of the
second lync
of the house
of Angio.

despon he shoulde departe out of the realme. But the
 quene by sentence of the king of Hungary, was hanged ^{Queene}
 at the same wyndowe, where she caused his first hus- ^{Johan}
 bande to be hanged. His sister Marie (of his counsaile
 in that matter) was beheaded.

This Marie was she, of whome Boccace was com-
 moured, and for whose sake he wrote the two bokes,
 Fiammetta and Filoclo, And amongst other verses
 written of this quene Johan, I finde this veray notable,
 Regna regū vulue gēs tota clamat simul, oh, vehi

Interitus regni est a muliere regi,
 Whiche in englysh are of this effect,

Welas crien the people all,

A womans chappe weareth the crowne,

A womans ruling the wealth turne thal,
 Of realmes, quite vpside downe.

Queene Johan beyng thus dyspatched, Charles re- ^{Carlo. 3}
 meigned peacably in possession of the realme, till Lewis
 duke of Angio beforeraymed (better adoped) came with
 a great army out of Fraunce to recover the realme as
 his inheritaunce: and by the helpe of certayne princes of
 Italy, passed through Umbardoy, La Romagna, & la
 Marca, & so entered into Puglia, where manye townes
 yelded unto hym: continuing so a yere and moze, and to
 strength his army, Mounser de Couci was sent after
 him with 12000. horsemen from the frenche kyng.

But he not folowing the duke, passed through Tuscane
 and besieging the Castel of Arezzo taried so long, that
 er euer he coulde come to the succours, the Conte Al-
 bérico, general of the kynges armye, had discomfyed
 the frenche armie, and slayne the duke in the fyeelde.

For whose death Charles with all his court, mourned
in blacke mourning; Mounſer de Couci hearing of the
Dukes death, ſolde the citie of Arezzo to the Florentines
for 40000 ducates, & immediately returned
into France: ſo Charles had the realme in peace, till
Urban the biſhop, who called him into the realme, ſet
againſt him, becauſe Charles wold not conſent to make
Burdeth the biſhops nephew, brother of a byle ſtocke,
palace of Capua. Upon which breach Urban curſed
him: and becauſe he had not power to reuenge him, by
pon Charles, he turned his wrath bypon vii. Cardi-
nalles that he ſuſpected. Of whom he put vi. into a ſacke
and threw them into the ſea, and the other two he put to
death at Genoa, and dyed their bodies in a furnelle, car-
rying them afterwards on mopes, be. oze hym for an
example to the reſt.

Finally being Leſops of Hungarie deceaſing with-
out heire male, the barons of the realme called kynge
Charles to the dominion therof, who at laſte went thither,
and was crowned in Alba, but afterwards going
to Buda, he was frendely called to a ſupper, by the olde
quene and hir daughter, and there traitterouſly ſlaine at
the table.

This Charles had geuen to hym to wyfe by Leſops
kynge of Hungary, Margarete yongſt ſiſter of Quene
Johan before mentioned, on whom he begat two chil-
dren: Ladislaus and Johan. But ſoone as the Papo-
ltanes hearde of Charles death, they toke their owne
libertes bypon them, ſo that quene Margarete, with hir
children, was faine to flee to Gaeta, where ſhe rema-
ined in much care and trouble, till yeares, wholeſt the
whole

whole realme was tourued and tossed: firste by Deihol
lare husbände to quere Johan, who gaue a greare parte
therof, and died at Foggia, than by Lewys the second
Duke of Angio, who solowynge his fathers title, sente
certaine galleis to Naples to mainteigne those Papo-
lines that toke his parte.

Finallie Boniface the. ix. than bishop of Rome, admit-
ted the excommunication made against Charles: and
caused Ladislaus to be crowned kynge at Gaeta. And
albeit the forenamed Lewys of Angio, came to Naples
with an army by sea, and was there receiued, yet Ladis-
laus by littell and littell so allured the barons to hym,
that he not only constrained Lewys to withdraue him
into Brunnese, but also brought Naples and the rest of
the realme obeyent to hym. Whyles he attempted the
gettyng of Rome, which the fourth tyme he obteigned,
insomuche that entrynge trumphantly, the Romayne
nobilitie did him homage. But what folowed: Alexander
the. v. beyng made bishop of Rome in the counsaile
at Pisa, receiued the forenamed Lewys of Angio that
than was newly comen thither to doe hym honour.
For the which he obteigned of Alexander the inuestiture
of the realme of Naples, and prouision was made for
recovery of Rome and thother landes of the Church,
whiche within short tyme was brought to passe.
Finally Lewys conducted an army out of France, and
augmenting it with the Florentine & bishop of Romes
powers, entred the realme: where in playne battaile he
so discomfited Ladislaus, that if Lewys had knowen
how to vse his victorie, he mighte haue had Ladislaus
in his handes, and also the whole realme: as Ladislaus,
Ladislaus, ralyng

The Historye.

ealhyng of this battayle was wonte to saye, that firste day (sayd Ladislaus) if thei had folowed it, they mighte haue been lordes both of my realme and person, the second daye of the realme, but not of my person, and the thyrde day nother of my realme nor person. For the leysure that Ladislaus had after this discomfiture, serued hym so to fortifie the passages, that Letoys notwithstanding his victorie, was faine to retyre to rome, and so backe into Fraunce. By reason wherof, Ladislaus remainynge quyet in his estate, disposed hym selfe of new; to recouer rome, & partly by intellygence, partly by force did so: puttyng to sacke onely the Florentynes gooddes, that he founde there. And at laste sickened in Perugia, some saye of a feuer, some saye of popson: so that he dyed, whan he had reigned .29. yeares. And leauing none issue of his owne body, the realme descended to his sister Johan Da Durazzo.

Rome the
second
time gotten
by Ladis-
laus.

1424

Gionanna, 2.

Thus Johan, late Duchesse of Sterlich, attened the realme, without impediment, by reason of .xvi. thousand horsemen that serued hir brother at hys death, with good capitains, as Sforza da Cotigniola, gli Attendoli, Iacopuccio, & diuers others. But because she was somewhat noted for keepynge company with a goodlye yong man named Padolfello, whom she made hir chamberlaine, hir barons perswaded hir to mary: so that she toke to hulband James of Nerbona in Prouance, than Erle de la Marca in Italye, vppon condicion, that he shuld in no wyse take on hym the title of kinge. But he was not long married til by comfozte of the barons: he toke the kyngly name vpon him, and caused Padolfello to lose his head: vsynge Sforza veraye hardlye, and al though

all thorough the instigation of Iulio Caesar da Capua who therfore by the quenes policie lost his head.

¶ And though the erle James (suspectynge hys wyfes courage) would not suffer hit to goe oute of the Castell where they lay: yet at last with lowly behauiour, growynge out of suspicion with his houbande, she had libertie to goe so often abroode into the towne of Naples, that finally she made a conspiracy against him, and gat him into prison: reigninge afterwarde his selfe alone. Then toke she John Caraccolo to be his high steward whom she loued more than enonghe: so that by him all thyngs were gouerned, And vpon contention betwene hym and Sforza (who was in maner as a generall amongst the men of warre) the Queene desired Sforza, whiche a doe there was, but at lengthe Sforza was reconciled, and the steward banished. And partlye thorough the bishoppe of romes intercession, the Erle James was deliuered out of prison, & restored to the Quenes fauour. But for all that, not long after the erle James began to worke against Sforza, who (perceiuinge it) found the meane to bring the steward home againe, and therby not only purchased the Quenes fauour, but also broughte the matter so to passe, that the Erle James fled into Fraunce, became an heremite and there dyed. After whose departure, by commission of the bishop of Rome, Quene Johan was crowned in Naples: but ere the yere was ended, the Queene lost the bishops fauour and banished Sforza: who by the byshops procurement became capitaine vnder Lewis, the iii. duke of Angio, than newlye entituled kynge of Naples) and repleynge an armie, camped before Naples, abydinge the comynge

The Historie:

camping of Duke Lewys: who with an other army arrived there.

Alfonse adopted
heire to
queene Johan

This meane while, Queene Johan (seeing the power of hir enemy duke Lewis, to be too strong for hir alone), practised with king Alfonse of Aragone, to accept hym as hir sonne, to inherite the realme after hir: and there of made sufficient writing, with deliuey of two strong Castels in Naples, Castel Nouo, and Castell di Luo, that in king Alfonses name were receiued as a pledge of possession. Whereupon kinge Alfonse in person, with a great army by sea came to Naples, and there fought with the duke Lewys and his Capitaine Sforza. And though fortune for a tyme was fauourable to duke Lewys, yet at length through practise and lacke of money, Sforza became the Queenes man: so that Lewys was fayne to leaue the enterpryse, and drawe to Rome: by reason wherof the Queene wyth Alfonse remayned in peace: till dyscorde fell betweene them. The fyrste occasion was because the proclamacions were made in the Queenes name, without any mencion of Alfonse: which moued the barons of Aragone to conceiue a great dishonour, that a kyng of such reputacion, shoulde lye there in that affaite. So muche grewe this matter, that at last kyng Alfonse toke the queenes best beloued steward prisoner, and besieged the Queene. Howe be it, Sforza hauing receiued hir letters, came straight to Naples fought with Alfonse power, had the better hand, entred into Naples, and conuicghed the Queene awaye wyth hym: Wherefore kinge Alfonse augmented his power, and after harde feight with Sforza, recouered Naples, Reignynge the realme so muche, that by counsaile of Sforza,

Dyscorde

Sforza, the Queene finally agreed with Duke Lewis,
and adopted hym for hir sonne and heire: by whose
meanes Naples was recovered againe to the queenes
ble. And so .x. yeres after, the Queene and Duke Le^{1424.}
wys reigned in peace, and than dyed both. The queene
by hir testament, lefts the realme to Raynold Duke of^{1434.}

Lorraine, brother to the foresayde Lewis. Thus ended ^{Ende of the}
the successiō of Charles of Angio first king of that hous ^{house of Dur-}
^{1430.}

¶ Whether the Queenes testaments were feigned or
true, it was uncerteyne: For incontinentlye bypon hir
death, the citie of Naples, ordeyned amonge theim a
common wealth, & made no mencion of any testament,
butt they saw plainly, that the bishop of Rome wente
about to bringe theim vnder hym. Than they not on-
ly published Raynolde to be theyr kyng, but also sente
for him, to come & receiue the possession of the realme.

¶ This meane while in the warres betwene England
and Fraunce, Raynold hapned to be taken prisoner, so
that he coulde not come to Naples. Than kyng Al-
fonse came into the realme through intelligence that he
had with many of the nobles, and besieging the towne
of Gaeta (than defended by certaine Genowales, sent
thither by Duke Filippo Maria of Applayne) at laste
fought with the Genowales army by sea, in which con-
flicte were slaine of the kynes part, about. 5000. and
the kyng hym selfe, with hye, ii. brethren, the mayster
of saint James in Galice, dyuers of the greatest prin-
ces and barons of Spaine, and of knightes to the num-
bre of. 200. taken prisoners; and all brought to the fores-
named Duke Phillip to Millaine: who after very gen-
till intercessment, deliuered theim without ransome.

Alfonse

Kyng Al-
phonse taken
prisoner.

The Historie.

So Alfonse being restored to libertie, & wanting strong
through the amitie of the Duke of Myllayne, dysposed
hym selfe to recouer the realme, and came thither im-
mediately with his power, obtayned Gaictta, and went
to Capua, which had been alwaies kepte for hym: how
be it, during the time of his imprisonment, the Neapoli-
tanes seeing they could not haue, Raynolde sette his
wyfe Isabel Duchesse of Angio vnto naples, and dyd
theyr best by waie of assaulte to winne Capua. But
now that kynge Alfonse was returned, the part of An-
gio so muche declined, that Isabel was faine to resorte
for helpe to Eugenio than bishop of Rome, who sente
the Patriarke Vitellesco to Naples.

Patriarke
Vitellesco.

Thys Patriarke was a stout man, meter for the
spelde than for the church. For firste he dyscomfyted
the armye of the prince of Taranto, and toke the prince
hym selfe prisoner, and long time balliuauntly bare hym
selfe in the warres againste Alphonse, one while wyth
force, an other while with policie, so that beinge fallen
with his army in the danger of the king (through bes-
settyng of the streeties and lacke of victualle) he handled
hym selfe so humbly, that the kynge (embracing his faire
offers) graunted hym truce, and vnder colour of the
same truce, he (beinge armed, and the kynge vnarmed)
came to Villa Giuliana, and so narrowly beset it, that
wyth muche a doe the kynge escaped his handes. Leau-
yng all his baggage and cartage for a pray to the Pa-
triarke. Finally Raynolde beset named, beinge putte
to hys ransome, came with. xii. Genowaye galleys to
Naples, where with kyngelye honours he was trium-
phantly receiued; and so muche increased hys power,
that

Raynolde
comyng
to Naples.

that it was doubted, whether of the two partes were the better. Raynolde despyed Alfonse bodye to bodye, whiche Alfonse refused not. Howbeit at the daye and place of battaile appoynted, Raynolde appeared not. And albeit that Raynolde for a time prospered and gat into his handes the castel Nouo, and castel di Louo, that kynge Alfonse had alwaies kepte sens he receyued them at quene Johans handes, til that time, yet at laste (after the death of Iacomo Caldora, one of the pryncipallest of the Angioyne parte) Alfonse's power so much encreased, what by battaile, and change of diuers of the barons affections (who leauynge the Angioyne part became Aragonese) that he recouered Naples and all the whole realme: entrynge into the citee in maner of triumphe: where for a perpetuall memozy of his victozye, the Napolitanes before the castell gate, erected a notable faire arche of marble.

Thus Alfonse, obteyning the quiet possession of the realme, vsed new meanes of amities with Eugenio the Bishop of Rome: & did so much, that Eugenio confirmed him in the astate, and inuested his bastarde sonne Ferdinando successeur to the crowne. For whyche inuestiture, kynge Alfonse vpon couenaunte invaded the countrey De la Marca, and takynge it by force from Francesco Sforza (afterwardes Duke of Myllayne) restored it to the church. And than in recompence of the great courtesie receiued of Phillip Duke of Myllayne, he made warre in his fauour against the florentines, and archieued manye worthy enterprises, beyng in maner the onelye staye of duke Phillip in his later dayes: so that the duke by his testament made hym his

The Historye.

heire of the affaie of Apollaine, but he enioyed it not, as in the hystory of Apollaine appereth.

Efynallye, after a generall leage made in Paples betwene all the affaies of Italie, excepte the Genowayes. Alfonse made an armie, and besieged Genoa for breach of certayne articles concluded longe before at the making of a peace betwene them: whiche the Genowayes were bounde to geue to the kynge verely in maner of a tribute a bason of golde, and the cause of their withhol- dyng, was for that the kynge would neuer receyue it o- therwysse than sitting in his maiestee, as though he tri- umphed ouer them.

458.

The prouision made for the continuance of that siege was so greate, that by common opinion the citie muste nedes haue ben his, had he not dyed, the .66. yere of hys age, and the .22. yere of his reigne in Paples. Leauyng for successours in the realme of Aragone & Sicile hys brother John, and in the Realme of Paples hys sonne the forenamed Fernando.

Of this kynge Alfonse are written many great pray- ses, for his valpaunchesse hys temperaunce hys lear- ning, his liberalitee and other like vertues.

Ferdinando. Ferdinando, bastarde sonne to kynge Alphonse, succe- ded his father, in the beginning of whose reigne Calis- sto, thā bishop of rome, pretending the title of the realme to be fallen to the churche for lacke of lawfull heyres, excommunicated Fernando: and made greate prepara- cion to invade: but death prevented hym. So that Fer- nando (warned therby) vbled such meanes of frendship with Pio hys nexte successor, that he was not onely confirmed in the affaie, but also crowned by certayne

Cardi-

Cardinalles sent to Naples for the purpose.

¶ Nowe as soone as the newes of Alphonses deathe was knowne, Duke John, sonne of the forenamed Rainold (in hope of mutacion in the realme) made an armie by sea, with helpe of the Genowaies, and landynge within the territozy of the duke of Sella, ouerranne diuers prouinces, and gotte daylye townes and friendes, so that fernando was like to be put to the worse, had not the bishop of rome and the duke of Millaine taken his parte: by whose helpe duke John at length was by force constrained to leaue his enterpryse, and most part of those barons that toke his parte came and submytted theiueselues vnto fernando, who graciously pardoned them and restored theim to their states.

¶ Then died Pio, and Paule the secound succeeded, who ostentynies troubled the realme.

After the deatch of kynge John of Cypzus, ferdynando coueityng to conquere that realme, was resisted by the Venetians: betwens whom happened cruel warre, so that the Venetians toke truce with the Turke, and (as *The turke in Italye.* the same wente) were occasyon that he assaulted and toke Otranto in Puglia by force, whiche shoulde haue caused greater mischiefe in Italie, had not the Turke (than Mahomet the.ii.) dyed.

¶ Immediately vppon whose deatch kynge ferdynando sente his eldest sonne Alphonse duke of Calabria, to conquere Otranto, which after long siege and soze feight, was (for lacke of succours) recovered.

¶ Next Paule the seconde, succeeded Sixte the.iiii. byshop of Rome, and after hym Innocence the.iiii. who both wonderful inconstantly one while were frendes,

The Historye.

Couetous-
nesse.
1489.

and an other whyle for to the kynge.
¶ Finally this Ferdinand was noted to be veray couet-
tous. For calling a counsaile of his barons in the citie
of Chieti, he wold haue encreased his subsidies and
taxes. And because diuers of his nobles dissuaded him
from it, he put some of them to death, & some he impris-
oned: from some he toke their goodes, and some willing-
ly rebelled against hym: in which trouble and tyranny
he continued til he died, leauing issue males, itt. sonnes,
Alphons and federike.

1494.

Alfonse, 2

¶ After the death of Ferdinand, his sonne Alphonse,
than Duke of Calabria, with consent of all the barons
and nobles, was admitted kynge, and sendyng to rome
to Alexander than bishop, for his confirmacion, the car-
dinal Borgia, with a number of prelates was sente to
Naples, where by auctoritee of the Romishe bulles, he
inuested and crowned the kynge.

¶ Than the kynge fell at variance with Lodouico Sfor-
za, duke of Appilaine, because he vsurped the estate
that of right appertained to his nephew Giangaleaz-
zo, sonne in law to kynge Alfonso, so that Lodouico (mis-
trustyng the kynges power, that in deede was bent a-
gainste hym) founde the meane to bringe Charles the
viii. French kynge, into Italie, who pretending to goe
against the Turke, found no resistance: by reaso wher-
of he not onely ouerronne Tuscane & toke that state of
Rome from the bishoppe, but also conquered the whole
realme of Naples: althoughe he enioyed it not longe.
For all the princes of Italie immediatly so colleged
them selves againste hym: that he was faine to retire
with speede, and was neuerthelesse ouertaken & fought
with

with besides Parma, where he lost the greatest part of his cariages, and dyuers of hys nobyltye were taken prisoner.

Now as soone as kyng Alfonso heard, that the french kyng was arrived in Lumbardy, considering him selfe to be hated of his barons, and his son ferrandino contrarywise welbeloued, incontinentlye renounced the state vnto his sonne, toke his treasure with hym, & sayled into Sicile, where for the tyme of hys shorte lyfe (that dured scarce one yeare) he dysposed hym selfe to studie, solitarieynesse, and religion.

Then ferrandino was embraced of all men, in suche wyse that he was thoughte hable to resist the french kyng. Yet notwithstanding that the stretches and passages were kept, and the Neapolitanes armie great in the field, the french men preuailed not onely in the conquest of the realme, but also in the gettinge of that dysease, that for ever shal be a memory vnto theyr name. Ferrandino.

In effect king ferrandino, seeing his owne debilitie in respecte of Charles force, determined with patience to auercome his aduerse fortune: and so with viii. galleys departed out of the realme, and went into the ile of Procida, where he remained till he heard of the french kynges departure, and then being renoked by the Neapolitanes, not onely Naples, but also diuers other cities theraboutes expulsed the frenchemen, and rayled theyr owne kinges standardes. Morbus Gallicus

Upon this, ferrandino sent for succours to the Venetians, offering them Brundisio, and .iii. other haven townes in Puglia, to helpe hym to expell the frenchemen out of the realme. Whiche offer was accepted,

and

The Historye:

and Frauncesco Gonzaga, Marques of Mantua, with
an armie sent thither: who together with the Neapoly-
tane power, within the space of one yere, drave the fren-
chemen cleane awaye. Not longe after recoverye of
his whole estate, Ferrandino (without issue) died of the
fluxe: Leauynge hys vnckle Federike inheritor to the
realme.

Note here, that within the space of .xvi. monethes
were .liiii. seuerall kynges of Naples, that is to wete,
Ferdinando, Alphonso, Ferrandino, and Charles.

Federike

Finally Federike, brother to the last Alkonse, suc-
ceded to the crowne, but er he had fully reigned, .liiii. yeres
hearyng of the French kynges comyng Lewis the .xii.
and consideryng him selfe destitute of money, frends
ship, and abillitie to resist, he sold his armures and mu-
nition for 30000. duckates to the Duke Valentino
Borgia, sonne to the bishop of Rome: and with the reste
of his treasure and implemtes, went into France, and
there yelued bothe hym selfe and hys Realme into the
French kynges handes: who receyued hym, and ap-
pointyng hym an honourable prouision, kepte hym
in Fraunce tyll he dyed. And thus ended the reygne of
the house of Aragon in the realme of Naples.

Ende of the
house of ara-
gone in Na-
ples. Lewis
the .xii. of
France.

3501

And though vpon the surrender of this Federike (who
many charge with cowardise for the vile submitting of
him selfe, without any prouise of force) the french kinge
obteined the whole realme: yet he died, not long enioyng
it, either by reason of the intollerable proud behauiour
of the french gouernours, or els through the inconstancie
nature of the Neapolitanes, Ferdinando king of Spaine
(commonly called Il Re Catholico) conuoyed ther-

unto

unto by many of the barons, and specially by the estates of Naples, sent a puissant armie into the realme againste the frenchemen: Who within lesse than two yerres, partly by force and partly by treatie, were cleane expulsed: so that in fine, the realme rested wholly in peaceable possession of the Spanishe kyng.

¶ Ferdinando the. v. of that name, kyng of Spayne, ^{King Ferdinando of Spayne.} chasyng alwaye the frenchemen, enioyed quietlye the realme of Naples vnto his death: and easilye recovered of the Venetians the foure portes of Puglia, that Ferrandino had geuen them. By reason that whan all the Christia princes were entred into a league at Cambray againste the Venetians, they at that tyme made none offer of resistance, but rather consented vnto the rendering of them: like as in hope of peace they graunted vnto all the other princes what they would aye, Venice onely excepted.

¶ Finally Ferdinando decesynge, Charles the. v. nowe emperor of Almanie (sonne and heyre of Philip duke ^{Charles the v. Emperour 1515} of Burgoyne, and of Iohan his wyfe, eldest daughter and heyre of the forenamed kyng Ferdinando) succeeded in the realme of Naples, and he did in al the other realmes and dominions that Ferdinando had: and hitherto enioyeth the same.

¶ It is true, that the french kyng sente Mounser de Lautrech his general, with a puissant armie to con- ¹⁵²⁸ quere the realme. Where betwene the parties French and Spanishe were done many worthy deedes of armes. Naples it selfe was besseged by sea and land, vntill Andrea Doria, general of the french kynges army by sea, revolted from the french kyng to the seruice of the emperor,

The Historye,

peroure. From whyche tyme the hope of the French
armies prosperitee began to abate: & fortune so muche
to goe against theim, that what though extreme plage,
and though the hardinesse of the imperalles, that be-
gan to take courage, the frenchmen were constrained
to relse their assiege, Moulier de Lautrech, wyth ma-
ny other of the best French capitaines beyng deade,
some of the plage, & some of y^e sword: so that of 60000.
which vnder the French standarde came thither to the
siege, escaped not fully 2000, on lyue. From whych
tyme hitherwarde the emperour hath had no notabla
trouble there, sayng that now of late is begonne a lit-
tle strife betwene the Vicere Don Diego di Tolle-
do, and the barons of the realme, for the makynge of
certaine lawes, and some bickering and slaughter hath
happned betwene the Spaniards and theim, and many
gentilmen are fled to Rome and other places for feare
of punishmente. But because the thing is not of suche
importance as should seme to moue warre, & that noe
nede to make further rehearsal.



Florence, an excellent faire citee, standeth at the foote of the Appennine hilles, in a lyttle valeyn named Arno of the riuier Arno, that runneth throughe it. Comynge to it (excepted by the riuier syde) the descensyng is such, that a man may easily behold every part of the citee: without the which, downe along both sides of the valeyn are so manye fayre palaces & sumptuousse houses, that for the space of, viii. or. x. myles it seemeth in maner but one towne.

The citee it selfe is esteemed to be, viii. myles in compass, walled with square stone in maner as harde as flynte, and of a great heighe, with a number of goodly toures after the auncient buildyng, stronge enough to defende, but nothyng apte for artillerie to offend after the maner of these daies: for they were builded before the inuencion of gunnes.

ouer the riuier within the citee are .iiii. verye fayre ^{Bridges} bridges of square stone, on the furthest downe the riuier hath ben a little marble image of Mars, which was seene there by an astronomer about the first buildyng of the citee, in suche a conjunction of the celestial bodies, that it promised prosperitee to the citee as long as that image should stand: threynyng the decaye of the same, as soon as it were gone. And as I haue ben credibly enformed within lesse than these .20. yerres, it fell, and is gone no man can tel howe. Shortly where vpon the Emperours armie besyged the florentynes, and toke their

The Historye,

Arno.

libertee from theim.

The riuer Arno is not lighthe bigge, but ones a yere, whan the sonne hath power to dissolue the snow on the mountaines, it swelleth so, that it maye in maner be compared to Thames at London, sauyng it serueth not for vessel to come from the sea: by reason of the swyfte streame. Wherefoze the Florentines are faine for the most part to fetch their merchandise that come by sea, from Pisa. 40. miles of by lande.

Edifices

Within the citee are many goodly temples and other edifices, amongst the which the cathedrall church is an excellent faire buildyng. For the walles without are all couered with fine white and blacke marble, wonderfully wel wrought, and ouer the queere is an whole vault called Cupola, fashioned like the halfe of an egge risynge betwene. iiii. fies and the body of the church: so artificially made, that almost it seemeth a miracle. For it is so high, that the pomell on the toppe beyng able to contein. viii. persons, seemeth a verie small thyng to theim that stande by lowe. And the compasse of it by the base, is aboute. 260. paces. Besides that the flooze vnder this vaulte round about the quiere is laide with fine marble of diuers colours so faire, that it yeldeth a delite to theim that walke vpon it.

The steple standyng besides the church, is likewise of fine marble a verie faire and square tower, equall in height to the circute of the base, with diuers stories and thynges grauen in it, so artificial and costlye, that it deserueth singuler prayse.

The temple of S. John, called Il Battesimo, is likewise of fine marble both within and without, hauing a
number

number of goodly pyllers and. iiii. brazen gates verie
sumptuous and faire. Many other goodly churches
there be, whiche should be so long here to rehearse.

The dukes palayce, with the place before it, rep- ^{Wilde}
senteth a verie stately and antient maiestee. On the ^{beastes.}
backeside therof, is the house, wherein the wilde beastes
are kepte, as lions, tigers, beares, wolves, apes, egles,
grypes, and such other, whet of there be not fewe.

The. ii. principal houses of Strozzi and Medici seme
rather the buldinges of princes than of private men.
And generally the citizens houses for their beauty are
worthy of much praise. Howbest, they may make them
good cheape, because they haue marble & stone plentye
in the mountains there by, insomuch that al their stree-
tes: which are verie faire, large and streight, are paved ^{Hospitalls.}
with flatte stone. But amongst all other they haue
dyuers goodly hospitailes, for relieue of the sicke and
poore, and one very faire, so wel ordred, that it receiueth
a great number of men and women; but into severall
houses: where they are applied with good phisicke, and
their beddes, their sheetes, and euery other thyng so
cleane, that many tymes right honest men and women
be not ashamed to seke their health there. For that hos-
pital alone may dispende yerely aboue. 200000. crow-
nes: by reason whereof they haue excellent phisicyns,
good porticars, dilygente mynisters, and euery other
thyng necessarie.

Finally there is a verie faire and strong castell, cal-
led Cittadella, more than a mile and halfe in compasse
builded by the lasse duke Alexander, for a byddell to
the Florentines, because he had thā newly taken these

The description

liberties from thesm: they beynge for the mosse parte so
variable and inconstar, that the other Italians have be-
sed to cal them Bizzari, which signifieth wyld headed
¶ Thre myles without the citee, the Duke hath made a
gardesn at a little house that was hys fathers. Where
in is a laberinch or mase of bore ful of Cypre trees, ha-
vinge in the middelt one the fairest conduyte of white
marble, that ever I sawe: besides that it hath dyuers o-
ther conduytes, and such conueighances, that in maner
euery flowze is serued with renning water: and all the
chanelis are of white marble so sayze, that it is in my
iudgement at this presente, one of the excellentest thyn-
ges in all Europe.

The Florentines customes.

The common opynion is, that the Florentines are
commonly great talkers, conerouse, and spare of
slyping: but they be fine and clenly.

¶ In deede he that byeth at the Chambers more meate
than they: maner there alloweth, is incontinently no-
ted and spoken of. But for all the lacke that is layed to
thems as a reproche, yet didde I neuer see it so scarce,
that a reasonable man ought to finde faulte wythal.

And if men generally in other places coulde folowe it,
the riche shoulde liue more healthfull: and the poore
fynde more plentie.

I continued there a certaine space at mine owne char-
ges, and lay a good while with Master Bartholomew
Panciatico, one of the notablest citizens: where I ne-
uer saw the fare so skender, but any honest gentilman
would

woulde haue been ryghte well contented wythall. And yet I dare auowe, he exceded not the ordynarye. Besides that the fine seruice, the sweetenesse of the houses, the good order of all thynges, and the familiar conuersacion of those men, were enough to feede a man; yf wythoute meate men myghte be fedde. I woulde not desire, but many of theim vse much talke, which I thinke proceeded of the desyre they haue to seeme eloquent.

For he is not reputed a man among them, that cannot plaie the Oratoure in his tale, as well in gesture as in woorde. And therfore I suppose they? Academie was fyrst ordeined; which is one of the goodliest orders that I haue seene.

A certaine number of the chiefe of theim, being well learned, are drawen into a company, whereof the duke ^{The Academie.} hym selfe is one. These euerye holidaye at.iii. of the clocke at after noone, assemble in an halle appointed, where one of theim moueteth into a place called the Harange, a littell hygher than the reste, and in his owne mother tounge maketh an Oracion of an houre long, of what mattier so euer he thinketh best hym selfe. It is Orateur hath warnyng so to doe by an officer a great space befoze hys daye. For they chose euery halfe yere a Consull, who appoincteth a sundrye man to the Harange for euery holidaye. And whan the houre of assemble appochoeth, the most parte of the companye repayre to the Consull, and so bring hym honourablye to the place; where he sitteth hyghest, though the Duke hym selfe be present. And so; my part I neuer heard reder in schole, nor preacher in pulpyte handle theim selves better, than I haue hearde some of these in the Harange.

Women.

The florentines wyfes are nothyng so gaye as the Venetians. For they loue a modestie in theyr womens apparail; and speciall ye if the passe the age of .xl. ygerly she weareth but plaine blacke clothe. And they kepe theyr maidens so streit, that in maner no straunger maye see them.

The common people are verie religiose, and so; the moste part ful of supersticion: but they that are reckned wysest, beleue muche wyth Plinie. And where they haue been muche burdetned with Sodomie in tyme past, I can not perceiue there is any such thyng now.

Of the Dukes domynion and reueneue.

Besides Florence, the duke hath vnder his domynion. vi. citiees, Pisa, Volterra, Pistoia, Arezza, Cortona, and Borgo, wyth dyuers other good townees, and the greatest part of Tuscane, and may dispend better than .500000. crownes of yerely reueneue the greatestt part wherof riseth vpon the .x. that is paid hym of all the landes withyn his dominion.

Of



Onferryng the dyscourse of dy-
ners authours together, touchinge
the florentine hystories, and fin-
ding the effectes of them al gathered
in one by Nicolas Macchiauegli, a
notable learned man, and secretarie
of late dates to the common wealthe there: I detemy-
ned to take him for mine onely auctour in that behalf, &
It is manifest, that from the auncient citie of Fiesol-
le (the olde reuynes whereof are yet to be seen, on the
toppe of an hill two myles from Florence) the citie of
Florence had hys beginnyng pryncipallye. For by
reason Fiesole stode hygh, and was paineful for mer-
chantmen to bring theyr cartage vnto the citelins: kept
their market on the side of the river Arno in the plaine
where Florence now standeth: & buildyng there shopp-
es for theyr wares, from shoppes they grew to houses
and from a felwe to many, so that at length it became a
towne, which encreased much through certayne Colo-
nies of the Romans sent thither fyrst by Silla, and af-
ter by those thre Romanes, whiche after the death of
Caesar diuided the empire betwene them.

And albeit, that some haue contended vpon the name,
affyrming, that it was fyrst called Fluentia, and after
corrupted Florentia: yet myne opinion agreyng with
Macchiauegli, is, that from the beginnyng it was cal-
led Florentia. Under the romaine empyre, & about the
beginning of the mynourours, it seemeth to take first name

Dauid . . . and

Florence be-
ſtroyed and
reedyfied.

and reputacyon. For when the Emperre beganne to be afflicted of barbarous nations (as the Italians call them) than was Florence also destroyed by Totila king of the east Gothes, 250. yeares after it was reedyfied by Charlemaine, and so continued as one of the principall cities of Italie, unto the yere of our lord, 1215. alwayes as subiectes, first to the succession of Charlemayne, after to Berengarit, & lastly to the emperours of Almaine, by which tyme the Florentines coulde dooe nothyng worthy of memorie, for the power of them whose subiectes they were: Nevertheless in the yere, 1010. they toke Fiesole and destroyed it utterly, either by the emperours consente, or els betwene the death of the one emperour and the election of the other.

2089

But when the bishoppes of Rome beganne to grow great, and the emperour litle, moste parte of the cities of Italye ganne to governe them selves wth small regardes towardes their prynce: so that in the tyme of the emperour Henry the. iii. all Italie was denyded betwene hym and the Church. Notwithstandyng the Florentines in all those troubles kept them selves united together, and obeyed the strongeste. Untyll the yere, 1215. But lyke as after long health sicknesse is more perillous, so the longer Florence forbore to follow the sectes of Italie, the more affliction they suffered, when they fell to division amonge them selves. The first occasion wherof was,

Amonges their noble families were two principall, Bonelmonti, & Vberti, next them were Amidei and Donati. In the familie of Donati was a ryche wydowe, that had a wonderfull faire daughter: whiche she purposed

purposed to bestow on a yonge knyght, chiefe of the familie of Bondelmonti. But he, not knowynge either the faire daughter or the wydowes purpose, was besetrouched to a maide of the house of Amidei. Where with the wydow was wonderfully offended. And this kynge wyth the beautye of hir daughter to breake thae marriage, on a day as the gentylman passed alone by hir doore, she called him, and hauing hir daughter with hir, sayd: I reioyse at your good marriage, notwithstanding I haue a great while kepte my daughter here for you. At whose beauty the gentylman being astonied, and considering hir dowry should be greater than the others, without respect to his trouthe geuen, or to the inconueniencies that might folow for the breach thereof, forthwith answered, that syns she had kept hir for hym he should be muche bounde to refuse hir, and so incontinently macyed hir.

At this insurie the familie of Amidei, with helpe of the Vberti, determined to reuenga. So waiting their tyme on Easter day in the moynynge at the foote of the byldge Ponte Vecchio as mayster Bondelmonti was ridynge to church, they slewe hym.

Division

Whereupon the whole citee was deuised in two partes, the one with Bondelmonti, and the other with Vberti. And because these two families had manye strange houses and towers, specially in the countrey, they warred togther many yeres with aggreued fortunes. And although they neuer concluded a full peace, yet many times they toke truce: In which estate Florence continued untill the tyme of the emperoure Federike the.ii. who beyng kynge of Naples, and at variance with the church of Rome, to make hym

selfe

Guelph and
Ghibellin-
nes faction.

selfe the stronger in Tuscane, toke part with the Vberti, by reason wherof the Vbertine parte preuayled, and chased cleane out of the citee the Bondelmonti.

Here is to be noted, that in the contention betwene the emperour and the bishop of Rome, the whole Italpau nation was so diuided in two parts, that in many houses you shold haue the father against the sonne, brother against brother, and commonly one neighbour and one house agaynst an other. And to encrease the mischiese, ff. brethren dowchemen dwelling in Pistola (20. miles from Florence) sel out for this matter, and oftentimes openly fought in maintenance of their diuision.

Wherapon it folowed, that all the imperfall named theim selves Ghibellini, after the name of Ghibell, one of those brethren, and the church part Guelph, after the name of Guelph the other brother. So that the parte of Bondelmonti were Guelph parte: and they that were with Vberti were Ghibellines. Betwene whom not onely the nobilitie of Florence, but also the masse parte of the commons were deuyded. Thus by the emperours fauoure the Guelphes were chased out of Florence, and lyued in theyr fortresses and castelles in the vale of Arno, defendyng them selves as wel as they could agaynst their ennemies, vntill Federike died: and than by meane of certayne of the citee that were newters, both parties were reconciled, and the Ghibellines brought home to Florence. Where (laynge all suspyon aparte) they framed theim selves to procure a libertee vnto their citee, ere the new Emperoure shoulde haue power to oppresse theim. And so deuyded the citee into. vi. parties, appointynge. xii. citelins (ii. vnto euery

Florentines
comm
local the
constituted

euery parte) to gouerne the same, naming them Antian: chaungable euery year . And to eschew occasion of variaunce, that myghte happen betwene the parties for iudgment geuing, they chose two strange iudges, one named capytaine of the people, & the other named Potestate, to iudge all matters both ciuile and criminall . And because there is no certaine order, where no defendour is, they ordeyned .20. standerdes or bandes in the citee: and .76. in the countie, wherein were written all the yowthe and able men to be readye in hys appointed kynde of armure whan so euer they should be called, either of the capytaine, or of the Antiani. And the better to establishe the chynge, they deuised a carte drawen of two oren, to cary their banners and ensignes couered with white: vnto whiche, as to the maiestee of their common wealth, or as it were to the generall of their armie, the men of warre shoulde alwaies resorte. For whan soeuer they set forth any army into the field than was this carte or chariote drawen forth into the strete called Marcato Nouo, and there by the people committed to the charge of the chiefe gouernours of the army. Besides that they had a bell called La Martinella, which befoze the settinge forth of anye armye should ryng a moneth, to the intente their ennemyes myghte prepare to defende theim selues . This bell did they also cary into the fielde with theim, to set their watche, and to cal souldiours together.

Their procedynges herein were so commendable and so well handled, that in short space they grew to a wonderful actozitee, so that Florence became the heade of all Tuscan: and had (no doubte of it) attained suche

Freigned theim to withdraue to Siena. From whence they sent to kyng Manfredi for succours, and throughe the diligence of Maister Farinata delli Vberti obtayned such ayde, that the Guelles shortly after were dyscomfited vpon the riuers of Albis: with so great a losse, that they which escaped, fled not to Florence (thinking it to be lost) but vnto Lucca. The general of the kinges men in this iourney was one Conte Iordano, a man in armes much renowned, who folowynge his victory went streight to Florence, and reduced it to the obedience of the kyng. He aduallied al magistrates and lawes, with euery other thyng that seemed to serue the ciuities libertie: the injury wherof bredde double malice agaynst the Ghibellines in the hartes of the commons, and was occasion of theyr vndoing, as after shal appeare.

The Conte Iordano settynge Florence after his owne faction, was reuoked by the kyng to the seruice of the realme: and therfore appointed as liuerenaunte general there, the Conte Guido Nouello, lord of Casentino, who immediatly called a counsaile of Ghibellines at Empoli, and there concluded, that (to mainteine theyr part in Tuscane) it was necessary to destroy Florence: but Maister Farinata delli Vberti principal of the Ghibellines, onely amongst all the rest withstode this opinion, alleging the perilles that he had suffered were in hope to enjoy his countrey, and thinking himselfe no lesse hable to defende it than to gette it, as he had doen, he protested openly to become no lesse enemy to theim that shoud take the contrary, than he was already to the Guelles: and so with his owne reason and

auctorites

auctozities diſſuaded the reſt from theꝝ purpoſe.

This meane while the Guelſes, whiche were fledde to Lucca, were commaunded theſe by the ciueſins, who feared ſoze the thꝛetnynges of the Conte: and ſo wente to Bologna, and from thence vnto Parma to helpe the Guelſes of Lumbardie againſt the Gibellines there. Where after dyuers victozies, they grew to ſo muche wealth and reputacion, that the biſhoppe of Rome toke theſe as his, and gaue theſe the enſigne of the church wherch they be in Florence to this daye.

Than went the Guelſes wyth Charles of Anglo againſt Manfredi, and were partetakers of the Victozy, whiche ſo muche encreaſed theꝝ reputacyon that the Conte, wyth the reſte of the Gibellines, that than ruled Florence, deuised how to graſpy the commons, to gette theꝝ ſauour (whiche befoze they had vterly loſt) and therfoze diuided the citee into artes, appoyncinge officers of the commons vnto euerye arte, ſo that in all there were. 36, Ciueſins called to rule agayne, and to make new lawes as befoze. And where the Conte wyth the Gibellines thoughte by theſe meanes to drawe the peoples ſauour towardes theſe, the contrary immediatly folowed. For when the Conte Guido had ſet a tare vppon the people, for paymente of hys ſouldyours, they not onely reſuſed the paiement, but alſo withſtoode his force and the Gibellines bothe, in ſuche wyſe, that wyth loſſe of dyuers men ſlayne in the bickerynge, the Conte wyth the Gibellines (thꝛough cowardyſe of the Conte) forſake the citee, and went to Prato: and wyllyng to retourne, was moze eaſily kepte ſoz the, than he coulde haue been expelled, in caſe he had ſortified hym ſelfe

selfe whyle he was with in . Thus the people recou-
 red libertee vnto theyr citie, and (in hope to make all
 thynges well) reuoked aswell the Ghibellines agayne
 as the guelfes . But all in vaine, for the Ghibellines
 rested still in the auncient mortall hate of the Guelfes,
 for dyuers iniuries, and the people loued theim not , as
 ofte as they remembred theyr passed tyrannye , besides
 that the Ghibellines, whan they heard of the puiſſaunt
 comyng of Corradino oute of Almaine, to winne the
 realme of Naples, began to deuise how to recouer their
 astate againe, Wherefore the guelfes sent to the forena-
 med Charls thā king of Naples for helpe to defende them
 selves, whilst Corradino shuld passe. And vpo the co-
 myng of ayde from the kynge, the Ghibellines. ii. dayes
 before fled. And so had the guelfes libertee to make new
 lawes and new magistrat, which they did immediatly:
 Fyrst deuisinge the Ghibellines goodes in. iiii. partes
 one to the common wealch, another to the chiefe magi-
 strates, & the. iiii. to them selves, in recompence of their
 owne hurtes . And the byshoppe of Rome the better to
 mainteine Tuscan guelfe, made kynge Charles imper-
 yall vicare of Tuscan.

¶ After this Gregorie the. x. passynge through florence
 towarde Fraunce, deuised with the guelfes for recon-
 ciliation of the ghibellines, and did so muche , that cer-
 tayne men for the ghibelline parte came into the citie,
 and after longe communicacon agreed therupon. But
 because the thing take no effecte, therefore gregory ex-
 communicated the citie. Whiche Innocente the. v. bys-
 hop next successeur assayed agayne.

¶ Thus the Guelfes forgettyng theim selves in theyr

Of the astate

prosperitie, became so proude, that they regarded neyther magistrate nor people, but for every light occasion woulde feight, and many tymes kyl without abdyng any iustice: which moued the people to murmure, and gaue occasion to the bishop of Romes legate to practise the renouacion of the Ghibellines vnder pretence of banishe, and broughte it to passe in dedde: and than was there new orders of magistrates appointed, & the citizens so vnited, that for verie weynesse of longe strepe both abroade and at home, the names of diuision began to decate, so that Ghibellines and Guelles were almost forgotten, whan there began a newe diuision, betwene the nobilitie and the commons. In suche wyse that they armed them selves, and had tried the matter wylh the sword, if certayne religious and other indifferent men had not taken vp the matter.

In effecte the pride of the nobilitie was abated, and parte of the commons wyl bidded, so that they agreed agayne, and were quiet a whyle.

There were two notable families in Florence Cerchi and Donati, betwene whome had ben an olde grudge, but no fightyng of a longe tyme. In Pisa also two yonge gentylmen Lore and Geri at playe fel cutte and foughte: so that Lore hurte Geri. The father of Lore beyng offended therwylh, and thinking to pacifie the matter gentilly, sent his sonne to the father of Geri, to submitte hym selfe and aske forgyuenesse. But the father of Geri toke hym and cutte of his hand, sayng, that wound were healed wylh yron, and not wylh wordes. This matter so grewe, that the whole citee of Pisa was deuided in two parties, the one calling them selves

selves Bianchi, that is to saye, the white, and the other
 Neri, that is to saye the blacke. After longe stryfe
 within them selves being warked, the blacke band went
 to florence, and set in fauour with the Donati: the like
 whereof old the whyte bande wpyth the Cerchi: so that
 the aunciente grudge betwene those two families en-
 creased, and at last vpon a lighte occasson fell oute and
 fought in florence. By reason whereof the whole
 citee aswell nobles as commons were deuyded, and of-
 tentimes armed, so that the rulers (as newters) were
 faine to streigne their power, and partly by force, parts
 ly by auctoritee, causyng the parties to vnarme them
 selves, they banished certayne of the chiefe, specialllye of
 the Neri: whiche beyng exiled, resorted to the bishoppe
 of Rome: and obtyned of hym that Charles of Valois,
 brother to the French kynge (than beinge in Rome for
 certayne practises of the realme of Naples) shoulde be
 sente to florence: by whose meane the Neri recovered
 the citee, and by force expelled the Bianchi. And lyke
 as the Neri were first by the bishops meanes restored,
 so also the Bianchi, at the bishops intercession were re-
 ceued home, but not to rule: whiche greued them so
 muche, that vpon new contencion (their intent beyng
 discovered) they were vterly expelled.

Thus Charles of Valois (archeynyng his purpose in
 florence) departed thence, leauynge the Neri in quyet
 possession. But it endured not longe: for Corso Do-
 nati, chiefe of that part (thinkyng his estate very small
 to remaigne as a priuate man, of the common wealth)
 maked busynesse in the citee, in hope to haue al the rule
 hym selfe. Wherein he pynalled not, for the commons

sente for the Luchese to succoure theym , and by theyr helpe did so ouermatche Corso and his parttakers, that they remaigned still in their libertee: and procured a legate from Rome, to stablish an order amongst them. Who in steede of order (thinking to bring certaine purposes to passe) sette them further oute than euer they were, and departing in greate anger excommunicated the citee.

Thus as the Florentines were daylye at stryfe and warre within them selves, there chanced so great a fire that it burned . 1300. of theyr houses : so that what through the wonderful bloudedshed, and greate losse of the fire , for verape werynesse they layed downe their weapons, and though the legate had craftely gotten rift of the chiefe citelins to Rome , in whose absence he so comforted the Ghibellines and Bianchi (that than were in exile) that folowynge his advise, they suddenly entred the citee . Yet the commons so resisted them, that they were repulsd . Not longe after perceyvinge the purpose of Corso prepered againste their libertee assaulded his house, put him to flyght: and in fleyng take and slewe hym.

After that the Florentines lyued in quiet tyll the coming of Henry the emperour, who coming from Rome (where he was crowned) besieged florence on the one side, and at length departed without doynge much hurt, the rather because the Florentines had receyved succours from Robert king of Naples, to whom they had submitted their citee for .v. yeres.

Not long after Vguicione della Faggiola, with helpe of the ghibellines, became lord of Pisa and of Lucca, so

that

that the Florentines for dread of hym, requyred kynge Robert of Naples to send his brother Peter to succour them. Betwene whom and Vguicione was a battaille stricken in Vale di Nieuole, where the florentines were dyscomfited, lost 2000. men, and the kinges brother slaine in the felds.

¶ And though the kynge did his beste to succour them, yet of their naturall inconstancie, they beganne a new diuision amonge them selves, parte with and parte against the kynge. And for lacke of other the kynes aduersaries gatte one Lando d'Agobio to be theyr captaine, who with the multitude folowing him, would kyl and murder as he wente by the stretes suche as the people appointed: so that the citise was no lesse afflicted with bloudshedde within, than scorched wythoute by Vguicione, that euen than ouerranne al the countrey aboute.

¶ Not longe after Castruccio Castracani, a citiezin of Lucca, gatte the dominion of Lucca and of Pisa, & became so great, that he was made chief captain of al the ghibellines in Tuscanie, so that folowynge his good fortune, he attempted to get Prato, whiche the florentines prepared theym selves to defende, so makynge oute an armie, and promissynge reconcillemente to their banished men, Castruccio retired to Lucca: wherof folowed two inconueniencences; one, the commons and rulers were divided, for the people woulde haue pursued the enemye, but the rulers wolde not: the other, by reason their enterpryse toke small effecte, they refused their promyse concernynge their banished men, who therfore dyuers tymes attempted by force, to haue their promise kepte.

ſhally making out a new army againſt Caſtruccio under the leadynge of Raimondo da Cardona, the florentines a little beſides Alto Paſto were diſcomfited, and Raimondo ſlayne: in ſuche wyſe that the florentines were no more able to holde by their heades, but ſuffered Caſtruccio to ouerronne al their countrey ſpoilynge and burnyng what he wolde. Wherefore the florentines were faine to ſue to king Robert of Naples for helpe: who enforced them to take his ſonne Charles, Duke of Calabrya, to be their lord and conſequently ſent the duke of Athens, as his lieutenaut to gouerne the citee, vntil the comyng of Charles.

13:6.

And like as the comyng of Charles was a ſtay againſt Caſtruccio: euen ſo it was in maner as paineful to the citelins. For within leſſe than a yere, he leupd of the citee, 400000. flozines, notwithstanding he had comenated beſore, not to take of them aboue. 200000. beſides that, after they had gotte Piſtoia, Caſtruccio laſed ſiege therunto, ſo longe, that at laſt he gatte it from the florentines: how be it, he immediatlye therupon died, and about the ſame tyme, the forenamed Charles, lord of florence dyed alſo. So that the citee was at ones deliuered bothe of the tyranne (as they call hym) and of the enemy: and therupon recoveryng theyr libertie, thei retourned to a new order of theyr common wealth. Not long after theſe things returnyng from Rome, and paſſynge towardes Lumbardie, 800. horſemen of his retinue caried behind him, and ſodainly toke Lucca which they offered to ſell to the florentines for. 20000. flozines, and beyng refuſed, ſold it to a Genoway for 30000. pound, wherewith the florentynes were ſo offended

sended, that they made open warre to gette it, but al in vaine, though they spent yet a greate quantitee of mo-
ney more than the summe that quietly they might haue
had it for.

¶ As for the ciuile contention within the citie hapned 1328
none fro the death of Castuccio, until the yere. 1340.

¶ Certaine of the chiefe of the citie, the better to main-
teine theyr owne auctoritee, called strangers to go-
uerne some offices, which appertained to the electiō of
the commons. Amongest al other one Iacomo Gabrie-
li da Gobbi was made capitaine of a warde, and dyd
diuers iniuries, namelye to some of the nobilitie, as to
Pietro Bardi, and Bardo Frescobaldi. So that they
(not wel supportyng the wrong, specially at a straun-
gers hande,) conspyred with dyuers other againste the
rulers; myndyng not onelye to be reuenged, but also to
refoyme the affaie of the whole citie. And as it hapneth
most commonly, the deserryng of the matter was oc-
casson, that some fearefull conspiratour disclosed it: so
that the larme bel bringe ronge, and the pople armed
assemblinge in the markette place, the houses of Bardi
and Frescobaldi were assaulted in such wise, that they
(with the most part of theyr friendes (forsoke the citie,
and were banished: some that remayned were taken
and beheaded.

¶ Not longe after the florentines and Pisani practised
with Mastino della Scala for the purchase of Lucca,
that than was in his possession, so that the Pisani (seeing
theyr bargaine ouerdeere thzough the offers of the flo-
rentines) disposed them selves, with helpe of Visconti
than lord of Millayne, to get it by force, and so layed
siege

Of the astte

syge to it. That notwithstanding the Florentines went forth with theyr bargaine, and bought it durynge the syge. Wherein the Pisani perseuered with suche force, that in despite of all the florentynes succours, at laste they gatte it: so that the florentines not onely losse theyr money, but also purchased them selves dishonour. ¶ This meane while the florentines, seeing theyr owne debilitie and ill fortune, procured succours of the king of Naples, who sente the Duke of Athenes to be theyr capitayne. But he in freede of a capitayne that shoulde defende and preserve theyr common wealth, contrarywyse to get into fauour with the commons, and by displeasing and persecuting of the nobilitie, toke vppon hym selfe the absolute power, and bled the whole as his owne. He prohibited the rulers any moze to assemble in the palatse, toke the ensignes from the Gontalozners, brake the orders of iustice, deliuered al prisoners, reconciled them that were exiled, ordeyned newe taxes, and waged straungers, so that the citee was ful of frencheimen, who soz bare not to vpolate all sortes of wemen.

¶ Thus he continued .x. monethes, encreasyng daylye in tyrannie, to the hygh offence of the chiefe, and greate hate of the people (who before fauoured hym) that at laste the whole citee in .iii. dyners partes, nobles, people, and artificers conspired against him, and in conclusion assaulted and discounfited his men, and besieged hym in the palatse. One of the whiche they enforced hym to sende Guglielmo da Scesi & his sonne. Whom they helwed and gnawed to peeces in the market place. ¶ Finally the duke fel to accorde, and renouncinge his

astate

affaire and title to the dominion, departed wyth bagges and baggage. Whereupon not onely Florence but also Arezzo, Volterra, Pistoia, and other citees theraboutes took on them theyr libertees though they within short space after, yelded to Florence theyr wanted obedience. Then the citeesins deuiled a new orde in their common wealth, wherein the nobles had so great auctoritee, that they vsed theyr lybertee in all thynges ouer the people: but that endured not longe: for the people rebelled, and by force depyued them, erectyng magistrates of theim selves. And though the nobles openly practised with theyr frendes abroade for succours, and fortified theyr houses withinforth, in suche wyse, that Florence was ful of armes: whereupon they attempted to reconer theyr affaie. Yet at length after manye skymishes, much bloudshed, and fyre, the people preuailed, and brought the nobilitie so low, that they neuer durste arme theim selves moze, but became in maner vile and abiecte: so that from that tyme forth Florence decayed both in courtesie and chualrie.

Nobilitie
suppressed.

Thus they rested in quyet, tyll the yeare, 1353. In whiche tyme happened that notable plague, that John Boccaccio so pitifully mencioneith in the beginning of his Decamerone, thezonghe whyche dyed in Florence. 96000. persones. And though the nobilitie was than oppressed, yet fortune wanted not meane to reple new discencion amongst them agayne.

Two families in Florence, Albizi and Rucell, fell at variaunce, betwene whom the whole citee was no lesse deuiled, than it was firste betwene Bonelmonti and Vberti: or betwene Donati and Cerchi. And were

as long before this time the names of Guelfe and Ghibelline was in maner extincted and forgotten, Vguici one de Ricci (thyngyng to abate the reputacion of the Albizi) renewed the olde law, that no Ghibelline shold enioye magistrats within the citee. But the purpose of Ricci was cleane disapointed. For where he thought to proue the Albizi to be Ghibellines, they contrarywise not onely proued them selues Guelfes, but chiefe of the guelfes; and became so great in the citee, that at length they determined to vsurpe the dominion, which beyng discovered to the people, was occasion, that their houses were sacked, and some burned, and they for the most parte fledde: and those lawes, that the Guelfes had made before in prejudice of the other citelins, were revoked. So that those which were noted for Ghibellines, finding them selves recovered in credite, not contented to be parttakers, but rather desirynge to rule their whole common wealth, practised a newe meane, howe by force they myghte archieue their enterpryse: and perswadyng the multitude to rebell against the lordes, they did so much, that (notwithstandyng the conspiracy was discovered before) yet the people so assembled out of all order, renuyng by and downe here and there, spoilyng and burnyng, where as liked them best, that the power of the rulers coulde not resourne the matter, & at length it grew to so great inconuenience, that the lordes were constrained not onely to habandon the palatse, but also the whole dominion vnto the people; so that Michel di Lando a carder of woull, bare legged and all to torne, mounted vppe in to the hall of the palatse, with the standarde in his hand, and finding

no man

no man there, tourned him towarde the people, saying: Now you see this palayce, with the whole citee at your commaundement, what woulde you doe, wherunto the multitude answered, they wolde haue hym theyr Gonfalonere and lord: whych he incontinentlye he toke vpon him: and disposing him selfe to quiet the rumour so finde the people occupied, he sente theim Straighe to seke one Puto, that had been minister of iustice befoze: whom he caused to be hāged by the legges in the market place, and there to rne to peeres: and consequentelye proceeded the other refozmacions and lawes, as it semed best to hym. But because the commons perceyued, that he preferred the chiefe men to dignities & offices, and dyd not so much regarde the commons as they looked for, they rebelled againe against him, & drew them together to the churche of Santa Maria di Nouella, where they began to erecte newe officers, and to make newe lawes after their owne maner. The meane while Michell making him selfe stronge, departed oute of the palayce to mete them: but mislynge one another by a wronge waye, Michell at his retourne found them in the hygge streete: assaultynge of the palayce. Where he sette on them, and so discomfited them, that part he constrained to flee out of the citee, and part to caste awaye their weapons. And (notwithstandyng his bilebithe) he was a man him selfe of a ryght good nature, wise, and able to gouerne, yet coulde not his auctoritie so much bysdel the communaltee, but that they deuised them selves in partes, the one of men of estimacyon, whych he called them selves the people, and the other of the meane craftes, whiche called them selves the commons,

Thus as they lived fighting and brawling together, newes came to the counsaile, that Giannozzo da Salerno (a capitaine of Charles of Duras, than bent to conquer Naples) lying at Boloigne, determined, with helpe of the banished men, to assaulte the citee beyng promised by thein of the citee to haue a gate deliuered vnto them. Whereupon diuers were accused, amongst whome Piero, the chiefe of the Albizi was taken and put to execution, and Charles Strozi fledde.

John Sharpe

The Florentines the better to mainteine thein selves, reteigned John Sharpe (surnamed Acuto by them) an english capitaine, than abiding in Italie with a great retinewe, whose reputacion was suche, that well was that prince in Italie, that myghte haue his seruice in tyme of neede. For his power was so great, that whan he was oute of wages, he woulde take one citee or another, and vse it as his owne for the tyme, till occasion of seruice happened againe, and than wolde he sell it to that prince or common wealthe, that wolde geue moste for it.

Common
people.

About this time two the chiefest citisens in Florence, George Scali & Thomas Strozzi, with their auctoritee and credite amongst the people, dyd what they wolde righte or wronge, so that whan the capitaine of iustice wolde haue put to execution a certaine offender their frende, they by force assaulted and sacked the capitaines palatse, and deliuered the gillie: whyche acte offended not the capitaine alonelic, but also the magistrates, so that George Scali was therefore taken, and against the commo opinion (notwithstanding the great fauour of the people, whiche euermore proueth incon-

stante)

Francis) was beheaded: and diuers of his deereſt frendes with hym. Upon occaſion of whole death moſte parte of the citee was armed to ſtrengthen the iuſtice. But whan he was deade, they were not ſo ſoone diarmed againe. For the parties betwene the people of reputation & the commons did ſo kendale, that for the ſpace of a whole yeare, there was daylye fightynge betwene them: in ſuche wyſe that at lengthe by agreeement of both partes, the Guelſes were reconcyled and reſtored to their wonted honour and rule ouer the citee, and the other magiſtrates and rulers were depoſed, amongeſt whom Michel Lando beſore named, was one, whole vertues and merites (beynge ſo notable as they were) could not yet ſane hym from the peoples fury.

Thus the Guelſes being in auctoritee, and fearyng no man but Benedetto d'Alberti (a good man, riche, & of great auctoritee) becauſe he was not of their ſecte, they found the meane to baniſh hym, and diuers others that they thoughte contrarie to them, and ſo ſetled the common wealth after their maner, and kepte it in quyet til the yere, 1387. At whiche tyme Giangaleazo Viſconti, Duke of Millaine toke hys vncle Bernabo pryſoner, and made harpe warres to the florentines, ſo that (notwithſtandynge their valiantte reſiſtence) gettyng all the countreys aboute, as Bologna, Piſa, Perugia, and Siena, he was in ſo greate towardneſſe to wyunne Florence, that he cauſed a crowne of golde to be made, to the intent to crowne him ſelfe there kyng of Italie, and had done it in dede, if death had not pryvented him. Not long after the commons vpon light occaſion, rebelled of new, & in greate noubmer ranne to the houſe

of Veridi Medici, offering hym the rule of the aſſaies; but he leadyng theſe with hym to the high ſtreete, and leaſing them there, aſcended into the palatſe amongeſt the lordes, excuſyng him ſelfe, that the people made him to come by force, and ſo with thankes of them returned to the people, and perſuaded them, that they ſhould haue theyꝝ willes, ſo that they would laye downe theyꝝ weapons. Wherbye at his requeſt they dyd. Immediately wherupon the rulers ſecretely armed theyꝝ power, and eſtabliſhyng the order of the citee, put dyuers of thoſe commons to death, that had been cauſers of this dyſorder.

¶ For long after certayne of them that were baniſhed, being at Bologna, determined vppon hope of the peoples inſtancy, to attempt the recovery of their countrey, and to alter the aſſaie of theyꝝ citee, and ſo through the counſorte of one Biggſello, and of Barroccio Cauicciuli, than dwelling in Florence, ſecretly they entred the towne, and ſlew one or two: to the rumoure wherof the people being aſſembled, they declared, how theyꝝ compynge was to deliuer theyꝝ countrey from the tyrannye of them that ruled. &c. But for all that, there was none that would aſſiſte theſe. Wherefore they withdrew into a churche, and there ſome in the ſlaying were ſlaine, and the reſt taken, examyned and put to execution.

¶ Beſides this the Duke of Appellaine, whilſt he warred with y^e citee, practiſed ſecretly by meane of the baniſhed men, to winne it, but the thing being diſcouered was occaſion of the baniſhement of a number of citiſens, and than within two yeres died Giangaleazzo, after he

ter he had warred with the Florentines, xii. yeares. So
that the Florentines beinge peaced outewards, and
indifferent quere within theim selves, made oute they^r 1495
power against Pisa, and valsauntly gatte it.

¶ Then had they warre with Ladislaus kynge of Na-
ples about the citee of Cortona, whiche the Florenti-
nes had befoze purchased. And that warre was so pe-
rillouse, that (as most writers affyrme) they procured a
philsicion of the kynges to popson hym. By reason of
whose death, they recovered hert, being befoze in maner
desperat of the estate of they^r common wealthe: because 1414
the king hauing already taken Rome, Siena, la Mar-
ca, & Romagnia, wanted no more but Florence onely
to make his full waye into Lumbardy. Where he de-
termined with hys power to proue hys fortune. So
that the death of these two princes, the Duke of Appi-
layne and the kynge of Naples, was moze available to
the Florentynes, than they^r owne force. But they
(whose nature could not wel beare any rest) lyued not
fully. viii. yeares in peace, but that not onely the par-
ties within them selves renewed they^r wored contention
againc, but also the citee attempted warre against Phi-
lip, than Duke of Appilaine: in whiche warre they^r ar-
mie at Zagonara was discomfited, and consequently
all they^r holdes in Romagnia lost, Castracaro & Mo-
digliana excepted. Whereupon they made suite to the
Venetians, & obtined them in leage againste the duke.
By whose meane at lengthe they recovered their tow-
nes in Romagnia: notwithstanding the charges of that
warre had ben so great (amountinge to the sume of thre
millions and, 500000. ducates) and that the Floren-
lines

lines ſet out amongeſt them ſelves aboue the paſement
thercof, whiche they called Cataſto: and the citie of
Volterra rebelled againſte theſe, thonghe they were
ſoone brought to obedyence agayne.

¶ After this beganne the Florentines to make warre
againſt the towne of Lucca, whiche endured .lii. yeres
wyth wonderful damage on bothe ſides: ſpeciallye on
the Florentine, whoſe army was diſcomfited by Nico-
lo Piccinino, ſent by the duke of Appayne to ſuccoure
the Luccheſe.

¶ Then beganne contention withyn the citie betwene
Coſmo de Medici & Rinaldo degli Albizi. For that
Coſmo (who was a iuſte and a vertuouſe man) gaue
anye occaſyon thereof. But vppon a conſaite that Ri-
naldo ſuſpected, ſeyng that Coſmo with his liberaltye
& vertue had gotten the loue of the people, he ima-
gined ſtreight way, that he wēt about to be lord of all.
¶ Wherefore he ſo conſpyred, and wrought agaynſt him,
that Coſmo was taken, laied in priſon, and in daunger
of death. But finallye he was confined vnto Padoa,
where he remaigned the ſpace of a.xii. moneth, tyll by
meane of his friendes he was reconciled home, and his
enemies ſome put to death, and the reſt baniſhed, and
finallye the whole aſtate of the common wealth reſour-
med after hys owne maner. Durynge whoſe tyme the
Florentines endeouored them ſelves much to conquere
the citie of Lucca, to the enterpriſe wherof they enter-
tained Franceſco Sforza (that afterwardes was duke
of Appayne) to be theyr generall. But becauſe he
than praeciſſed marriage with the daughter of Appayne
(whoſe father Duke Philip was enemye to the floren-
tine aſ-
tine aſ-

the affare) he so coldely proceeded, that when it came to passe, that he myght haue freigned Lucca, he neuertheless was occasion of peace betwene the Florentines and the Lucchese, in such wyse that Lucca styll remayned in theyr libertee. 1438.

¶ Not longe after folowed the counsaile of florence: at whiche the emperoure of Grece, with the chiefe of the Greeke the church assembled, and agreed with the Romanayne church, though they stode not by it longe.

¶ Then arose Nicolo Piccinino, and wythout any iust grounde moued warre to the Florentines, wherein he dyd them no small dyspleasures. But finally he was discomfited at Anghiari: and immediatly after the Conte di Poppi (who befoze had assisted Piccinino) was besieged in his owne towne: and his whole affare, with the towne of Poppi taken from hym by the Florentines.

¶ And though the warre, whiche Piccinino made, was as well against the church as the Florentines, so that the bishop of Rome, of the victorie of Anghiari, entoyed as well his partie as the Florentines: yet the charge befoze, and the cost that the bishop was at in pursuing the victorie, was suche, that for verie neede of money: he solde Borgo san Sepolchro, vnto the Florentines for 25000. duckates. All this whyle were the Florentines in league with the Venetians againste the duke of Myllaine, in suche wyse that the better to dysburdeine his owne charge, the duke steered byng Alfonse of Naples against the florentines, who entred vpo Tuscane and did them much hurt, though at last layng siege to the towne of Piombino) through sickenesse that fell in

his army) he was constrained to remove his siege, and utterly to abandone his enterprise. But after Duke phillip of Millaine was deade, and Francesco Sforza in possession of the astate, the florentines (by means of Cosmo di Medici) did enter in amistee wth him: for whiche occasion, when the Venetians were oute wth Francesco, they procured kynge Alfonso to warre of new on the florentines, whycbe warre was not so sharpe, but that the florentines at lengthe dyd passe it ouer without any great losse.

1464.
Cosmo di
Medici.

Then died Cosmo di Medici, when he had governed the citee aboute. 31. yeares. He in his tyme was one of the notablest men of the world, the richeste private man that hath bene hearde of many yeares, and so lyberall wthall, that he relieved a number of his citsens, not onely wth lone, but also wth the gift of large summes of money: and many times he wolde him selfe consider who had neede, and helps them undesired. His wyfe dome was suche (and was vblearned) that he ruled the unruliest citee of the world in peace withoute ciuile sedicion, which befoze his time was neuer in quyet.

And though he might haue taken on him selfe the absolute power without difficultee, being in such auctorytee, yet ledde he stil a private life: nor for all his greate richesse, neuer sought other marriage for his daughters than amongst his owne citsens. He builded. v. princely houses, one within the cite, and. liii. without, besides liii. monastaries. ii. churches, and dyuers chappelles, so that he that wel considereth his daynges, shall iudge them rather misgite kynges than citsens.

Finally his factions were suche in Venice, in Naples, in Rome

In Rome, and in other chiefe cities of traffique, that when he was so disposed, he wolde make them all bare of money, so that with his only reputacion many times he wroughte suche qupernesse and commoditee to his citee, that all the florentine power was not able to doe.

The rule that he bare was not grounded on force or tyrannie, but vpon such a loue to the people, that when he died, the commons bewailed hym as a father of the countrey. The proofe whereof was well seen, what time throughe the yll procuremente of Diorsalut (one that he helde as his deere and secreete frende) a conspyracie was made against his sonne Peter.

When the olde Duke francesco Sforza was deade, and his sonne Galeazo established in the affaie, the ambassadours of Milaine came to the florentines for confirmation of their former amitie, which Peter the sonne of Cosmo, perswaded, was necessary to be mainteigned. In debatyng of whiche matter Peter began to perswade the intent of his aduersaries, and at length fully ascertained thereof, he wroughte so, that all the citee armed them selves in his fauour, in such wise that beyng very weake of bodie, and sicke on his bedde, the chiefe magistrates of the citee were faine to resorte to hym, and to offer them selves at his pleasure. Whereupon it folowed, that the princypall of his ennemys were some banished and some slaine, & his reputacion suche, that (though he ruled not in office him selfe) yet might he at all times commaunde and doe what he wold, and folowyng alwayes the steppes of his father in the same reputacyon dyed.

After whose death Italye happened to be deuyded,

Of the astate

betwene the kynge of Paples and the byshop of Rome on the one parte, the Venetians, the duke of Myllayne, and the Florentines on the other parte, and amongst all the rest the bishop of Rome hated the Florentines, speciallly the house of Medici, whereof two veruouse yong men, Iulian and Laurence, sonnes of the forenamed Peter, were then rulers, and in maner (thoughe they liued priuately) princes of Florence, and this hate was not secret, for the bishop openly in Rome fauoured the Pazi, & hindered the Medici, so that after the death of Phillip D' i Medici, archebishop of Pisa, the bishop of Rome placed in his seede Francesco Saluian, a mortal enemy to the house of Medici, who notwithstanding the Romish election, coude not be receiued of the Florentines. Wherefore with the holy fathers consente this newe archebishop beganne to practise, to alter the astate of Florence, and consultyng on the matter with diuers of his friendes, specially of the families of Saluiani and Pazi, concluded, that withoute the death of Iulian and Laurence D' i Medici, it was impossible to bring the matter to passe. Wherefore they procured the Cardinal of saincte George (nephewe vnto the byshop of Rome) to come to Florence, to the intente that in visting of him, they mighte haue bothe the brethren together, and so slea them. Of this their purposed intente theye they mysted. The thirde time they deuysed a solemne masse to be songe befoze the Cardinal, vnto the which both the brethren came, and at the eleuacion tyme Iulian was slayne, and Laurence hurte, but he escaped.

Practise of
a prelate.

This meane while the archebishop craftely got into
the pas

the palatce with certaine men with him, p[ri]uily armed in hope that whan the rumour shoulde ryle he myghte haue not onely the palatce but also all the chiefe rulers of the citee in his handes: but his purpose beyng espyed, he cou'd archlye it, he with certaine of his complices were immediately hanged and thzowen out at the wyndowes of the palatce. This foule ende had they2 cursed conspiracie: for whan Julian was slayne, and Laurence returned to his house, it was a wonder to see howe soone the people were armed, rennyge vp and downe the stretes, and cryyng, Medici Medici, killing and d[ea]uynge as many as they cou'de know of the contrarype parte. And almoste there was no citellin of anye reputacion, that came not vnto the house of Laurence, to offer him selfe and his goodes to succour him, in case he neded.

¶ Finallye the tumulte beyng quyeted, as manye as cou'de be founde of the Saluiati and Pazzi, and of the other conspiratours, were put to execucion: and the rest that fledde, were banysht.

¶ But for all this they2 trouble ceased not. For whan the byshop of Rome sawe that this pryuate treason toke not effect in alteracion of the affaie, he attempted openly the destruction of the citee, not vnder pretence of hate to the florentines, but to the house of Medici onely.

¶ First he exco[m]municated the citee, & after sent an armye of hys owne agaynst them, and procured the kynge of Naples to inuade them with an other army: protesting alwaies, that he desired no moze, but to haue Laurence D'i Medici in his handes: whych done, he offered to be at peace. Wherfoze Laurence, to be the better assured

of his cōseilins, called 300. of the best of them together, and resonyng the matter wyth them, founde them wholly bent to his defence, and therupon made provision of resistance, doyng al fialse to vnderstand, that the byshop of a shepherde, became a wolfe, and not onely practised this secrete treason, but also openly maynteyned it.

¶ These warres continued so longe, that the florentynes beyng destitute of all succoure, and werpe of theyr greate charge and losse of men, determyned to fall into the armes of the one of theyr enemyes, and esteemyng the kynges amities moze available and moze durable of the both, Laurence Di Medici wente hym selfe to Naples, & so behaued hym towordes the kyng, that where most mē suspected, he shold neuer retourne, he not onely retourned, but also broughte a perfite conclusyon of peace wyth hym. Whereat the bishoppe of Rome was out measure wroth, but at last the florentines sent theire ambassadours to hym. Who beyng broughte to audience in Pontificalibus, at length obtayned his absoluckon. The rather because euen then the Turke had assaulted and taken Otronto in Puglia, and minded to conquere Italie: which occasion caused all the prynces of Italie to vnite them selves together, moze for feare than loue, as afterwarde dyd well appeare. For the Turke was no sooner dead, & the feare of his iniury on passe, but they fell oute againe as farre as ever they were. For betwene the bishop and the kyng grew hote warres, and the florentines in helpe of the kyng assaulted the bishop on the other side, and besides that the campe of the league was lyke to haue taken from the

Venetians al theyr dominion in Lombardy: so that Ita-
 lie was full of warre, untill by procurement of the
 kyngs of Spaines ambassadours, a general peace thro-¹⁴⁸⁶
 rough all the affayres of Italie was concluded (the Ge-
 nowaes excepted.) By meane wherof the Florentines
 with theyr more ease warred vpon the Genowaes, and
 gat Pietra Santa, with other towncs from theim, and
 gaue them a notable discomfiture besides Serezana.
 Finally the most renowned private man of his time
 Laurence Dⁱ Medici died, leauyng one of his sonnes
 a Cardinal (who was called therunto beyng not fully
 13 yerres old) and his eldest sonne Peter in great repu-
 tacion, and his daughters also very wel marryed.

Laurence
 Dⁱ Medici

He fauoured cunnyng men, specially them that were
 learned: he was eloquent in reasonyng, quicke of in-
 uencion, wise in determinyng, and hardy in doing. Be-
 sides the conspracy wrought agaynst the hym, whan his
 brother was slayne, he was wyse in peryll of death by
 treason, and yet preuented theim both to the confusson
 of the conspratours. All the princes of Italy honou-
 red hym, the kyng Mathew of Hungary shewed hym
 great signes of loue, the Solban of Egypte sente hym
 presentes & ambassadours, the Turke deliuered Ber-
 nardo Bandini, that slew his brother Julian, into his
 handes: and his owne citelins so much loued him, that
 I thinke of his tyme died no man happier than he.

Contrarywise his sone Peter di Medici, who notwith-
 standyng his gentle interteigment of al men at the be-
 ginning (whiche made the worlde to hope well of hym)
 did at lengh growe so ambitious, so wilfull and so un-
 discrete in his procedynges, that neither the magistra-
 tes, the

495

tes, the citelins, no; yet the people could wel beare hym, to the encrease whereof, whan Charles the. viii. Frenche kyng, passed by Florence towards Naples, Peter mette hym on the way, and sayde to hym, that his father commaundyd hym. iiii. thynges, the fyrst to honour god, the secounde to worship the french kyng, and the thyrde to defende hys countrey. So that Charles seeing hym thus wel disposed, entreated hym so fayre, that he deliuered into his handes Serezana, Pietra Santa, and finally set Pisa at libertie, whych was so greate a hyndraunce to the florentine astate, that the magistrates and commons, moued of iuste disdeigne, draue hym out of the citee, toke his goodes and patrymonye as forsaictes, and condemned hym to perpetuall exile, with a number of his friendes and partetakers: and the furie of the people was suche, that they brake and defaced all the images that coulde be found of the Medicies in Florence.

¶ And albest that he attempted many waies to recouer his countrey, yet was his fortune so ill, that the more he sturred, the more was he hated, whiche at length was the vndoyng both of hym selfe, and of a great many moe as wel of his adherentes, as of his aduersaries.

495+

¶ Thus the familie of Medici lost reputacion and credite for the tyme: so that the astate of Florence retorned vnto the common rule of the magistrates and citelins, that endured til the tyme that Leo the. x. of the familie, of Medici was made bishop of rome, who though he restozed not his house vnto the full rule they had before in the citee, did neuerthelesse so much, partly wyth auctoritee, and partly by friendship, that diuers of thae

name were receiued and made partetakers of the common wealth: whiche by little and little so encreased againe, that in the tyme of bishop Clemente the. vii. who also was of the Medici, whan the duke of Burbon passed by Florence to Rome wardes, the commons of the citie made a commotion against Hippolito di Medici then gouernoure of the same: he than beyng departed out of the citie in company of the Cardinal of Corrona, to goe visite the duke Urbine. But as soone as he returned, he did so much, that they yelded theim selves againe vnto him, vpon couenant he should hurt no man for that matter.

Then bishop Clement made this Hippolito a Cardinall, wherupon he left the admynistraction of the common wealth, and so was the citie at libertie againe.

But Clement beyng determined to make it perpetuall subiecte to hys owne familie, handled hym selfe so well towarde the emperour at his coronacion at Boloigne that he obteined the imperiall power to the oppression of his owne naturall countrey, and broughte to passe, that the prince of Orange, with the Emperours armye besieged Florence.

This siege, endured a whole yere, which for the many enterprises and battailes foughte on bothe parties, may be compared to the best Tratane, Greekeish or Roman warres, namely because the common wealth alone, without helpe or any other prince or state, sustained the violence of two so mighty powers as the emperours and the bishops of Rome, untill sampne and not force overcame them.

Finally the prince of Orange, and dyuers other no-

Of the astate

table capitaines beyng slaine in the often battailes and
skymishes, at last the florentines for lacke of vittails
les, were faine to fall to composition, and yeldded vpon
these condicions, that the citee shold continew in hie li-
bertee, reseruyng the refozmacion of thaatate to the em-
perour, who wichein the terme of. lxxx. monethes shoulde
thervpon declare his pleasure. That all banished men
shoulde be reconciled without remembraunce of any in-
iurie before passed. That the Medici shoulde be resto-
red to theyr goodes taken from them by violence of the
magistrates. That the citee shoulde paye. 80000.
crownes to the dispatche of the armie, with other con-
nauntes of lesse moment. Upon whiche accorde War-
tholomew Valori, commissary for the bishop of rome,
entred with dyuers of the imperial capitaines, and there
behaued theim selves so stoutely, that (notwithstanding
the couenauntes of peace) they found the meane wythe
in lesse than a moneth to behead. vi. of the chiefest citee
fins, and to confine. 150. besides a nnumber of others
that habandoned and fledde the citee of them selves: so
that theyr promysed libertee was tourned into a moste
cruel seruitude.

Shortely after came Alexander Di Medici, nephewe
to bishop Clement, sente by the emperour out of flaun-
ders, who at his first coming made a shew of sobrietee,
in goyng priuately vnto his house, and receiuing the ci-
telins amiable: but yet at length by litle and litle he
vsurped the offices and magistracies, and finally dyspo-
sed theim all at his pleasure, causyng him selfe openlye
to be called duke.

¶ Than died Clement the Bishop, wherupon the Car-
dinalles

diuallies Di Medici and Saluiati, with the p^rincipall of the other banished Florentines (coustyng the recovery of their cities liberties) sent ambassadours to the emperour, besechyng hym to consider the tyrannye of Duke Alexander (who thā newly had builded the Cittadella) and to regarde the condicions of peace. Whiche ambassadours arrived at Barcelona eue as the emperour was takyng shippe towardes the enterpryse of Tunise: so that being returned to Rome, the Cardinall Hippolyto di Medici dysposed hym selfe to goe vnto Tunise thertore. And takyng his iourney towardes Naples dyed at Itri by the way: poysoned (as the sayce wente) to procurement of Duke Alexander.

¶ This duke Alexander was yet but yonge, who by hisshop Clements procuremēt had married the emperours bastarde daughter, he was so fowle, that without anye respecte he wolde haue his wyll in all thynges, and namelye in feates of loue and chaunge of women was his speciall delite. And amongst all other he deyled more in the company of Laurence di Medici (that shold succede him in the affaie) than of any other man. But Laurence in feede of that loue hated the duke, and had long tyme determind to slea him, whan he might finde occasiō, whether he did it in hope the rather to attaigne to the domynion hym selfe, or to restore to the citee his auncient libertee, he diuers opinyons.

¶ In effecte without makyng any man p^rsule to his intent, other than a seruant of his owne, the duke beyng on a night all alonie in Laurences house, and slepyng on a bedde, Laurence and his man slew him: and thereupon counsaillynge with certayne of his friendes, and

seeing no man disposed to stand with him in pursuing of his purpose, the selfe same night he fledde, and went straight to Venice, where in companie of the Strozzi he stued, till of late certaine persons, in hope of the Taglia (a rewarde proclaimed for the kylling of notable offenders) he was also slayne.

¶ Immediately vpon knowlage of the death of Duke Alexander, the three florentine Cardinallcs, that were then in rome, departed thence, and making all the men they coude by the waye, came with an armie towarde Florence. Wherfore the Medici, with their friendes in florence (to make their party good, that the banished men shoulde not preuaile to their destruction) elected Cosmo di Medici to their duke, a yonge man of .20. yeres of age, whose father John Di Medici had bene a man righte valiaunt in armes. And therupon sente to the Cardinallcs, prayngc them to stafe their armie by the way, and to come them selves priuately to florence, where they shoulde fynde so much reason offered them, that they shoulde neede to vse no force. So they stayed their power besides Cortona, and beyng come to florence were entreated with so faire promises, that they licenced theyr men to departe. By reason wherof the Duke that now is, with his friendes had time to make theim selves strong, and than wolde consent to nothing that the Cardynalles looked for: so that with a playne mocke they departed, lamentyng their folie: that they had chaunged the suretee of their force, for the vnsecuree of fayre wordes,

¶ This chaunge in Florence, and the mocke that the Cardinallcs receiued, so much encreased their malice, that

that they with the helpe of Phillip Strozzi and Bartholomew Valori, assembled & waged the number of 4000 men: which by Peter Strozzi (that yet lyueth and serueth the frenche kyngs) shoulde haue be conducted to Monte Murlo, and from thence to florence, had not Phillip and Bartholomew (who with a smalle company came befoze to Monte Murlo) ben set vpon by Alexander Vitelli, taken and led awaye prisoners to florence, where the whole conspiracy of those confederates, that were in the towne was discovered, and diuers taken and put to execution: and so the whole enterpryse broken and destroyed. Amongest the rest only Phillip Strozzi was preserued from deathe: notwithstanding he was kept in pryson in the Cittadella, and there dyed. Some saye he kylld him selfe rather than he wolde vndoe his chyldren by payng the raunsome that was required of him, beyng in dede one of the richest priuate men that was in his time, as it doth well appeare by the wealth of hys sonne Peter, and of hys other chyldren, which beyng banished men, and hauing nothyng in their stowe countrey, doe neuerthelesse liue abroade in so muche reparation, that fewe brethren of christendome vnder the degree of prynces doe the like.

Cittadella. I haue spoken befoze of Cittadella buylded by duke Alexander for the more suretee of his dominion, which at hys death remayned in the keepnge of one of the Dukes capitaines. But as soone as Alexander Vitelli (one that had serued well the emperour in his warres) hearde of the Dukes death, he came to florence and entred into the Castell to speake wth the capytayne, where he handled the matier so well, that he excluded

the captiuitie and kepte it hym selfe. And though he made many faire promises to duke Cosmo, yet at length he deliuered it to the emperor: who therfore rewarded hym with sayd possessions in the realme of Naples.

¶ This duke Cosmo sued first to marrie with the wife of Duke Alexander the Emperours daughter, but the bishop of Rome that now is, purchased hir (to his no small cosse) for his sonnes sonne, Duke Octauio. For the whyche there hath ben mortal hate betwene Duke Cosmo and the bishop. And beying thus preuented, the duke to obteigne the more stay towards the emperor married the daughter of Don Diego di Tolledo, Vice-Ke of Naples, by whose meane he hath redeemed the Citradella of the emperor for the summe of 400000 ducates, and is now absolute lord and kyng wichein hym selfe.

Duke
Cosmo.

¶ He hath diuers faire children by his wyfe, and loueth hir so wel, that in maner he neuer goeth abroad (vnlesse it be to church) without hir, and is reputed to be a very chaste man. He is learned and wyse, he vseth fewe wordes, and is neuertheless in hys owne tongue eloquence. In the administration of iustice he is so sincere, that syns the tyme of his reigne, whiche is now about .x. yeres, I haue not hearde, that he hath pardoned any person condemned to dye. He hath reistigned the Vice of Sodome (which heretofore reigned more in Florence than elsewhere in Italy) with payne of death: and hath broughte hys astate to suche quyetnesse, as it hath not ben this 300. yeres past: so that florence may wel saye, that in hym she hath founde hir longe desired libertee. For though he absolutely hath the whole reue-

newes

newes to his owne vse, yet the surtee that the Florens
tynes haue in their owne thynges (whych heretofore
they neuer had) is muche more worthe to them , than
the common reueue was beneficiall to the cities.

¶ Finally the vertue of this Duke Cosmo, besides the
woorthinesse of his dominion, hath brought hym in
suche reputacion, that he is numbred as one
of the rarest prynces of our tyme, and fea-
red also, as one in whom there be hyde
thynges of greater moment than
the rule of that onely
a state.

3

The

THE UNIVERSITY OF CHICAGO
LIBRARY

The state of Genoa.



Genoa standeth in maner betwoene the Alpes and Appenine hylles, and hath hys prospecte towarde the south. For it hangerh so on the sea vnderneath a man may almost discerne euery part of the citie. It hath no playne country neere it, but on the one side hilles and mountaines and the sea Mediterraneum on the other. And yet those hilles that renne alonge the sea costes, byynge forth many kyndes of pleasaunt fruite, with much wyne and oyle, for the moste parte not thozoughe fertilitye of the ground, but thozoughe the inhabitauntes pelynefull diligence.

The circuite of Genoa is little lesse than. v. myles, the walles about are very newe, sayre and stronge: specially the ii. gates Di San Thomaso and del L'arco are so large, that they seeme almost. ii. fortresses.

The haven that cometh into it, is excedyng sayre and bigge enough to receiue any naue, beyng forced some what narrowe at the mouthe, with a wonderfull costly pier of stone made out into the sea: at the ende wherof is a strange toure, called Il Mole: wherby the haven is defended from all wyndes, the southweast excepted.

Within this haven they haue an Arsenale, hable to receiue. xviij. oz. xx. galleys.

Theyr churches are very sayre and sumptuous, specially the Cathedrall church of. S. Laurence, whose fronte of whyte and blacke marble seemeth a very rare peece of worke.

Theyr

¶ Their houses are exceedinge sayze, the frontes two fozies hygh, for the most part of fine marble curiously wroughte: For theye lawe alloweth none to decke hys house any higher with that kynde of worke, (vnlesse it be in respecte of some notable seruice) because it would requyre an infinite charge to garnish them of that soze to the toppe, their houses beynge for the most part. xl. vii. and some. liii. fozes hygh. And yet are they so sayze, that I wote not vnto what citee I maye compare theye buildynges. And not onely within the citee, but all a longe the sea costes, called La Riviera, enery byllage is so furnished with gallant and sumptuous houses, that it is a world to beholde.

¶ Amongest all other the palaice of Andrea Doria, withoute the gate of. S. Thomas, is a notable thinge, very sayze, sumptuous and large: And aboue his house (a thinge wonderful) he hath made his stables to bewe out of the harde rocke mountayne, as muche space, as hath made. xl. gardenes one aboue an other: and hath caused so much earth to be caried by, as suffiseth for the growth of all maner frutes and herbes, very pleasant to beholde.

¶ Lykewyle within the towne, Andrea Doria hath the goodliest house that any man hath buylded in our daies.

¶ But the stretes of the citee for the moste part are so narrow, that it is a great defacyng to the rest. Whych I thinke the steepe descent of the hyll causeth, that they haue not roome enough to make theye stretes large.

¶ Halfe a myle without the towne Westwards, they haue a very sayze watch toure, called Torre della Uu-
 It minaria,

Of the astate

minaria, toherin nighly burneth a greate lyghte for a marke to theim that be on the sea, because it maye be discerned verye farre of.

Finally they haue a very saye conduite of water conueighed on arches, muche after the auncient Romaine faction, for the space of .v. myles or moze, oute of the bailey of Bisagnio: notwithstandinge that they haue dyuers saye spynges, and one spectallye that cannot be drawen dyse.

Of their dominion and gouernance.

Theyr dominion is not very greate, it passeth not the boundes of Liguria, which is scarcely .80. miles in length, and nothinge so muche in breath. And may dispend in publike reuenew not fullye .400000. crownes by the yeare: as I haue been enfourmed. In dedde in tyme past they had muche greater domynion: So that the common rent hath been heraye great: but the Turkes prosperitee hath muche abated that. Nevertheless it is thoughte, the pynate chiefling were neuer moze wealthie than they be at this present.

Of theyr trade and customes.

All the Genowases in maner are merchant men and very great trauallers of straunge countreys. For I haue ben reasonably perswaded, that there be .5. or .6 thousand of them continually abroade, either merchauntes or factours: so that they leaue few places of the

of the worlde busought: where anye gaine is to be had.
For the merchandise that they bring home hath speedy
dispatche, by reason theyr citie is as a kepe vnto all the
trade of Lumbardy, and to a great part of Italie.

They at home make such a number of silkes and vel-
vettes, as are habile to serue many countreys: whiche
is the chiefe merchandise that they sende forthe. In
deede they are commonly noted to be greate vsurers.

One thing I am sure of, that if Duide were nowe a-
liue, there be in Genoa, that could teach him a dozen
poinctes De Arte Amandi. For if Semiramis were
euer celebrated amongst the Assirians, Venus amongst
the Greekes, Circes among the Italians, sure there be
damns in Genoa that deserue to be celebrated & chro-
nycled: for their excellente practise in loue. And trulye
the Genowayes them selves deserue that their wyfes
should be praised, because I saw in no place where wo-
men haue so muche libertie. For it is lawfull there
openly to talke of loue, with what wife so euer she bee.
Insomuch that I haue seene yonge men of reputacion
flouryng in the streete talke of loue with yong mistresses
beyng in theyr wyndowes aboue: and openlye reherse
verses that they had made one to the other. And in
the churches, specially at euen-song, they make none o-
ther prayers. So that he that is not a louer there, is
meete for none honest companye. Many men censure
this as a reproche to the Genowayes, but they vie it as
a policie: thinking that their wifes throughe this liber-
tee of open speache, are ridde of the rage that maketh
other women to traualle so much in secret.

In deede the women there are exceding faire and bea-

Of the astate

apparalled to my fantasie of all other . For thoughē their vppermost garments be but plaine clothe, by reason of a law, yet vnderneath they weare the finest silkes that may be had, and are so finely holed and hoed, as I neuer sawe the like, open faced, and for the moste parts bare headed, with the heare so finely trusted and curled that it passeth reherfall . So that in myne opinion the supream court of loue is no where to be sought, out of Genoa.

¶ But like as the women are excellent in this, euen so doe the men excede all other in supersticion . For there be with in the citee, 20 scholes or companies of disciplinantes otherwise called Battuti, whose maner is whan they are called to deuotion, as euery good fridaye, or in the middest of a plage, of famine, of warre, or of other like occasion, that requirerh or rogacions such processions, thei assemble and cloth them selves in sacke, linnen or buckeramme; with their backs naked, and their faces couered, sauing littell holes to loke oute at . And hauinge certaine skourges or whippes (some of wyer) in their handes, they goe about the towne whypinge theim selves, that the blood shall renne from the backe downe to the heeles, so painefullye, that it moueth the poore people to compassion . For whan this is done, they thinke God must nedes fulfil their prayer . The lyke wherof is vled in all other places of Italy, but because I thinke no two citees are able to match Genoa in the number of these Battuti, I thoughte good to make mencion of them here.

¶ Finally, the astate is holden by a duke, chaungeable euerye .ii. yeare : who with .viij. gouernours and .viij. proctours

proctours assigned vnto hym, ruleth the whole for the tyme. Neuerthelesse Andrea Dorta the emperours admyrall for the myddell seas, vseth all at hys wpll in matters of peace or warre, and almost in enerye other thyng.

The building of Genoa.

Of the edificacion of Genoa be dyuers opinions: but because no certaintee is wrytten there of, I wil omitte theyr saynges that ascribe it to Ianus, or to Genuus the sonne of Saturne, and agreing with the opinion of the bishop of Nebio (that particularely wrote the Chronycle thereof) I thinke it to be of such antiquitee, that neyther the tyme of foundacion, nor yet the author thereof can wel be knowen. As for the name, it is not vnlke, but that (because it is the beyeray entrie from the seas vnto Lombardy) it was fyrste called Ianua (a gate or doore) & afterwarde corruptely Genoa. But howe or whan it was buylded, or for what cause it was so named, this is cleere, that in the Romaines tyme, almost, 300. yeres before the cominge of Christ, this citee ruled the countrey about it, as appeareth bothe by a table of brasse latelye founde in the vale of Poceuera, and also by the mencyon that Eutrope maketh of the destruction of it by Mago Anniballes brother, and of the repairynge of it agayne by the Romayne Consule Lucretius Spurius.

¶ From whiche tyme to the comynge of Charlemayne into Italie, I find nothyng notable of Genoa, save that it was one of the fyrst citees, that openly professed the

Christian say the. But after Charlemayne was crowned emperor, and his sonne Pepine made kinge of France, a demare, a baron of Fraunce, was sente thither to be captaine: who by commaundement of kyng Pepine, fought by sea with the Sarasines: and though he was taken prysoner in the battaille, yet the Genowayes overcame the enemies, take the Sarasine shyppez, and the yle of Corsica, which in maner euer sens hath remained vnder the Genowayes dominion: and so constrained Genoa obediente to the emperours captyngnes the space of 100. yeres.

Wonder

In the yere. 936. there happened in a litle strete than called Fontanella, now Bordigoto, nere to the piers of the haven, a litle spring in ground of water cast forth blood, and ranne so a whole daye, to the great wonder of the people: wherupon followed, that the Sarasines ariue came suddenly vpon the towne, and taking it by force, sacked and rifled it, sette it on fyre, and caried away the people, men women and chylde, in such wise, that they lefte the towne as a playne wilderness. But the Genowayes arriue, whiche was than abode, mette with these Sarasines on the sea aboute Sardegnia, where they fought with them, cutte them in peces, and recovered their prysoners with double praye, and so restored their citie.

958

After this the emperour Berengario granted them certayne priuileges, with full dominion ouer the townes that they than possessed: By reason whereof they shortly encreased, not onely in welth but also in such power that in the helage made into the holy lande by Godfrey of Boloigne and other prynces, the Genowayes armye

1099:

was

was one of the notablest of that companye, firste at the wyning of Antioche, and after at the getting of Jerusalem, in comyng to which seconde enterpryse the genowayes were faine to drowne theyr shippes in the haven of Iaffo, because they were not able to resist the Soldanes armie, that came vpon them: thought better to drowne them, than to encrease the enemyes power with their losse and shame both: how be it they first discharged all thyngs that might be had out of them, whiche they caried with them vnto the siege of Jerusalem, and there behaued them selves so worthily, that almoste none other company of the christian army was comparable to them.

Policies. 712

1109.

¶ After this they armed. 27. Galleys and. vi. shippes, and sent them into Syria in ayde of Boemonde than kynge of Jerusalem, where they gatte the citee of Casarea in Palestina, and leauynge it in possession of the christians, retourned home with greate tryumphe and praye.

¶ Finally within the space of. 13. yeres the Genowayes sent. vii. senerall armies into Syria, by whose meanes the pynctpal towncs from the golfe of Laiacia southwardes, to the golfe of Rissa, that is to wete Maliniastra, Solino, Antioche, Laodicia, Tortosa, Tripoli, Baruti, Accon, sometime called Pitholemada, Acres, Ghibelinto, Casaria, Asfur, Iaffo, Secaron, and Ascalon, were gotten oute of the Turkes handes: For which great seruice Bauldewyn than king of Jerusalem next after Boemonde, gaue to the Genowayes dyuers notable priuileges throughe al his dominion, whiche they enioyed longe tyme.

After

After these many victories retournyng to Genoa, the warre that ceased so farre of, sprang by nether home. For the Pisani contended with the Genowales for consecration of the bishop of Corsica, & for the ile of Sardinia. Whereupon folowed sharpe warres betwene them, for the moste parte to the disauantage of the Pisani: so that at last beyng plainely ouercomen the Genowales entred into Pisa by force, & rased all the houses therof downe to the fyrst floore.

11276

Thus finishing those warres, and wanting occasion where to be occupied, they made out an army agaynst the Saracines, & firste ouerranne the ile of Minorica, and after assaulted the cities of Almeria and Tortosa, in the confines of Granata, which they toke by force, with the slaughter of an infinite number of Moores, besydes 10000. slaves that they caried wth them to Genoa, and such a quantitee of treasure and booties, as fewe lyke had ben seen in those dates: diuidyng the dompye on that was gotten into three partes, the Erle of Barcelona (chiefe of this enterpryse) had two to hym selfe, and the Genowales the thyrde.

1146

The gloze and wealth of which victories were such to the Genowales, that for many yeres after they enterpyssed no great matter farre from home, but such sedition fel among them selves, that they owne brawling many times gaue courage to fozeine princes to worke agaynst them. For the emperor federike the fyrste after he had conquered Humbardie) thought also to subdue them: and made open preparacyon for it. Whiche was cause of theyr unyon agayne. For whan they perceived an outward ennemie, than wete they inwardlye
soone

soone agreed: and as soone as they were sure of peace
abroade, incontinently they warred againe with in them
selves. Neuerthelesse they vsed the emperoure so well
with giftes and sayze woozdes, that he not only suffred
them to continue in theyr libertie, but also encreased
theyr common wealth with a nnumber of priuileges:
and was occasion, that after long cōreñcion with them
of Pisa, the Genowales at lengthe enioyed quietlye the
one halfe of Sardegnia, whiche befoze the Pisani had
wholly to them selves.

About this time the Souldan of Aegypt gotte Ieru-
salem, and dyuers other citees in Syria out of the Chri-
stians handes. Wherfoze kynge Riccharde of Eng-
lande, and kynge Phillip of Fraunce made their biage
into those parties, and kyng Riccharde arryued at Ge-
noa with .xv. galleys, where he taried but one daye.

Richard
kynge of
England

After whom the Genowales sente .80. saile, wyth men
and munition to the assiege of Acon or Ptholemaida
To the succours of which cite the Souldan sent a shyp
charged with vitallz and armure, and amongst other
a cage full of flesyng serpentes, purposely sent to be set
forth in the Christian army, that with theyr venom they
myght plague it. But it was mette by the englysh na-
uie and taken. And the emperour federike coming to
warde the same enterpryse, beyng al ready entred into
Syria, by mishappe was drowned in a riuer.

After whose death his sonne Henrie next emperoure
came to genoa in his owne persō, requyring their helpe
to the conquest of Sicilia, promysynge them the prosyre,
so that he myght haue the honoure. Whiche so muche
enflamed the hertes of the people, that they made ouer

1194.

Of the astate

a great number of galleys and other vessels, and dyd
so much service, that the emperour (in manner by their
power) gave the whole Ile of Sicilia, whiche he vnto
thankesfullie considered. For whan they had done
theyr best for hym he rewarded them with all the spye
he coude, theyr earnyng to oppresse their libertee, and to
make them his subiectes: insomuche that the Pisani,
thorough comforte thereof, molested the genowayes of
new, and fortifyng Poggio di Bonifacio, sel to spoy-
lyng and rifyng of the Genowayes goodes by sea.

But at length the losse tourned to theim selves. For
the genowayes armed them, and takyng Bonifacio by
force, not onely sacked and munited it for theim selves,
but also toke a number of Pisane shippes, as they could
fynde theim. Whereupon it folowed, that the Pisani
made out their power, and so fought diuers times with
the genowayes with diuers fortune.

The inhabitauntes of Antimiglia breakynge the ar-
ticles of accorde betweene the genowayes and theim,
were faine to come barefoote with crosses in theyr han-
des to Genoa and aske pardon, for feare of the prepara-
cion that the citee made againste theim. And the yere
folowynge, the genowayes purchased the dominyon of
Gauis, of the inheritorours therof: and the inhabitauntes
of the vale of Arocia submytted their countrey to the
Genowayes dominion.

And because the Pisani prepared to assaile certayne
genoway shippes, comyng out of Sozia, laded with riche
merchandise, the citee armed certayne galleys & shippes
to conducte theim safely: whiche meetynge together in
the mouth of the Adriatike sea, determined to attempte
to wyne

to winne the citee of Saragosa in Sicile lately gotten by the pisant. In y^e enterpryse wherof they toke certayne Pisane shippes: and withoute greate feight wonne the citee, leauynge it forispyed and gouerned for the common welth of Genoa. Than the Pisant made out a newe armie and besseged it, and of lykelyhood shoulde haue put it to great afterdele, if Henry erle of Malea in Greece, with certayne galleys of his owne, and other shippes of the Genowayes, that came from the east, had not comen to the succours: who foughte with the Pisane armie, and with helpe of theim that were within the towne, obtayned the victorie, to the great slaughter and losse of theim of Pisa.

¶ And because the erle Henry of Malea had done the Genowayes great seruice dyuers wates, therfore they ^{1209,} ayded hym to their great charge, with galleys, shippes, men, and hoxses to defende Candia, which he had usurped vpon the Venetians: so that the Venetians beyng therewith agreued, immediatellye publyshed the Genowayes to be their ennemys, wherupon folowed sharpe warres betwene theim many yeres after. ^{1216,}

¶ Here is to be vnderstand, that from the yere. 1080. vnto the yere. 1190. the citee was gouerned frely by the citisins vnder the name of Consuls without entermedling of straunge rulers, and so in maner to this tyme, though for the space of. 26. yeres some straungers had ben now and than brought in as Potestates (the consules neuer thelesse remainyng after the olde maner) but from this tyme forthward the Consulles ceased, and straunge Potestates bare the rule a great tyme after.

¶ The generall armie of the Christians lyng at the ¹²²⁰ siege

Spege of Damis in Aegypte was relpeued wyth 10. galleys sente by the Genowates: whoughe whose helpe the citee was gotten, with wonderfull rycheesse and an infinite number of slanes, besides the multitude of infidelles that were slaine: howbeit the chzistians kepte not the citee long, for the yere folowynge the Sarasines recovered it agayne.

1222

They of Vintimiglia rebelled agaynst the genowates, so that after many light bickerings, at laste an armpe was sent out agaynst them, which lay longe at siege before the towne, and could not pzeualle: so that the Potestate to be assured of that enterpryse, edysped an other towne betwene them and the sea, and wyth a garryson held them so streight, that at last they yelded, wherupon the towne being recovered, the genowates builded there two fortresses for the more suretee of the same.

1227+

In like maner they of Sauona and of Albenga rebelled, and were to their despyte reduced to theyr former obedyence: But the warre that happened betwene Alexandria in Lumbardy, and Genoa, for the dominion of Capriata and other townes in the confines betwene them, was not so sone appeased: though in effecte the genowates at length pzeualled.

1238

Gregory the. ix. bishop of Rome trauallyng to sende an armie into the holy land, agreed the Venetians and genowates together for. ix. yeares, and bounde theim to kepe peace on payne of cursynge. But lyke as his enterpryse came to naught: so his curse coulde not kepe those two astates from renewing of their malice, as by their ofte fighting with variable fortune appered after. And beyng than in cōtencion with the emperour federike, and

erke, & calling a counsaile in rome against the emperor, he sent to the genowayes, praizinge them to conueyge in safetee the legates and prelates that came oute of the west parts towardes that counsaile. Wherfore they armed. 27. galleis, and receiuing two Cardinales, and other prelates to the number of. 40. at Pisa in Prouaice, brought them solemnely to Genoa, & goinge from thence with them towardes rome, mette wth Ansaldo admirall of the Emperours nauy: who foughte wth them, and toke. 22. of those galleis, withall those goodly prelates, and diuers of the chiefe of the Genowayes: and after bereft the common wealth soze in diuers partes of their dominion. And because the emperoure had intelligence with diuers of the citisyns, who withstode the maintenance of byshop Gregorie: therefore were they for the moste parte banished, and manye of theyr houses rased to the earth, and as banished men procured many displeasures to their countrey diuers wales. And though the most part of the imperiales were thus banished, yet diuers of that affection remayned in the citee closely, insomuch that the commons deuised them openlye by name, callinge the imperiales Mastarati, and the papistes Rampini: whiche names continued till the comyng by of Guelfi and Gibellini, that deuyded the whole Italian nation, as is mencyned in the Florentine hystorie.

¶ Then died the bishop gregory, and Celestine his successor liued but. 18. daies, after whom succeeded Innocence the. iiii. a Genowaye bozne. He folowynge the trade of hys predecessours contendyng with the emperor, & beinge in his daunger at Sutri in the realme of

Poples, wroughte so wyth the Genowayes, that they praisly made out certayne galleys, whiche came to Ciuita Vecchia beside Rome, to receiue the byshop, who as secretly as he could came thither, and toke shipping to Genoa, where he was receiued with Gloria in excelsis, as reason wolde: not a little to the emperours displeasure, that befoze accompred him selfe in maner sure of hym. And Innocence ressyng hym selfe a certayne space in genoa, he departed towarde Lyons in fraunce and there helde a general counsaile agaynst the emperour Federike, during whose life he durst not retourne into Italy: but immediately after the emperours death he came backe againe by genoa, and was there no lesse triumphantly receiued, than he was the firste tyme.

1251

¶ Upon the death of this emperour the Genowayes also recovered Saona and dyuers other towne, that by the emperours tyme rebelled agaynst theim, and had dooen theim notable dyspleasures, as wel by sea as by lande. And byshop Innocence beyng departed from genoa to Milan wroughte so, that the banished Mastarati were restozed to theyr countrey againe: .x. 10000 poundes paid them of the comminaltee in recompence of theyr goodes taken away befoze.

1257

¶ And not long after the people made a commocion agaynst the office of the Porestate, so that y rumour ceasing, they elected Guglielm Bocanigra, a citisyn, to be theyr capitaine & superiour vnto the Porestate, and all other magistrates, who beyng placed in that office for .x. yeres, by lytle and lytle vsurped the domynyon ouer the whole, and so prouoked the chiefe citisyns to conspyre agaynst hym: And though he beyng aduer-

tised

ried of the fyrst conspiracie prevented his fall, by ban-
 shyng of dyuers of the conspiratours, and by rerouls-
 yng of the rest: Yet his tyrannye so muche encreased:
 that at length, not the chiefe citelins alone, but also the
 commons openly rebelled, and deposed hym, reducyng
 the cittee to the former order of theyr draunys possesse

In his tyme the cittee happened to haue great warres ¹²⁵⁸
 specially with the Venetians, who haunyng like priuile-
 ges in the cittee of Acon, and in other partes of Sozia,
 as the genowayes had, vpon a light occasion brake the
 peace, that byshop Gregoꝛye befoze had made betwene
 theim: so that both the Venetians and the Genowayes
 made out notable armies into Sozia, either of theim to
 mainteine his party there, and after diuers skymishes
 and light bickerynge, at last the armies met & fought
 befoze Acon, where the genowayes were discomfited, &
 xxb of theyr galleis taken. So that those Genowayes
 that than were in Acon, were constrained to flie.

And ther vpon the Venetians roke, sacked & rased their
 houses to the earthe: and for a moze despise, rooted vp a
 verie fayre toure of the Genowayes, and made a ponde
 of that place, and settynge bores ther vpon, wolde saue
 in scozne: See where the genowayes toure swymmeth.

This ouerthrowe caused the Genowayes to enter in ¹²⁶¹
 leage with Michael Paleologo emperoure of Constan-
 tinople, than enemye to the Venetians: who gaue to the
 Genowayes the cittee of Lesmirre, and the yle of Sio, as
 some affyrme.

Either of those common wealthes yerely made out a
 noumber of galleis, which most commonly mette toge-
 thers and fought: but the notablest conflict of all was
 befoze

1266.

besoze Sicilia, betwene Trapani & Mazara, where the Venetians toke .xxviii. genowayes galleys, withall the boot and prisoners that were in them.

¶ And though the Genowayes many times gotte from the Venetians dyuers of theyr armed galleys, & manys of theyr merchaunt shippes richely laden: yet all thynges reckened, the Venetians had the better, whether I shuld ascribe it to fortune or force, I cannot wel iudge.

1370

¶ Helys the French kyng waged a certayne number of galleys and shippes, with .10000. men of the Genowayes, which serued him in his enterpryse made to Tunis in Afrike, where the kyng hym selfe, one of hys sonnes, and dyuers other princes & a number of soules dyours died of the plague: so that Charles kyng of Naples, than lesse chiefe of the armye, fell to composition with the kyng of Tunis, and vpon the receypte of certayne money, with promyse of other thynges, dissolued the army, and returned homewardest without any notable acte: in which retourne he mette wth Edward our prince, that with a goodly companie was departed out of Calcoyne towards the ayde of that enterpryse, and offered hym part of the money gotten towards his charges: but the prince refused it. Wherefoze the rest of the armie, (that were soze tourmented wth a great tempest, in which a number of shippes and men were lost) seeing the englishe armie cleere, and safe without losse: aspymed, that it was onely because they would take no parte of money receiued of the infidelles.

¶ And though the Genowayes bothe for shippes and number of men deserued mooste in this biage: yet had kyng Charles so litle respecte to them, that those that
remayn

remained, returned to genoa not onely without gaine:
or rewarde, but gladder with theyr greate losse to be at
home againe.

About this time, by reason of the Guelfe and ghibel-
line parties, that corrupted al Italie (as in the floren-
tine hystorie appeareth), dyuers of the chiefe houses of
genoa likewise diuided theyr selves into those sectes:
insomuche that they of the houses of Doria and Spi-
noli, with helpe of theyr partetakers, by force expelled
the Flischi & Grimaldi out of the citee, and banished
those two families, with a number of others, which be-
nished me, with helpe of a Cardinal of the flisch, pro-
uoked Charles than kynge of Naples, to make warre
against the genowates, whych endured not longe.
For Oberto Spinola, & Oberto Doria, that toke vpon
thein the absolute power, and ruled the citee certayne
yeres, keeping theyr aduersaries out, were by faire mea-
nes so entreated of Innocence the. vi. than byshoppe of
Rome, that the banished men were quietly reconciled
and called home: the gouernance of the citee neuer
the lesse remainynge in the handes of the Oberti as it
did before.

And than the common wealch bought of Nicolas De
Flischo certayne townes and territories to the value of
25000. pound, which they wel and truly payed hym.
But the Flischi and Grimaldi continued scarcely a lit-
tle monethes at home, but they were accused of conspiracie
against the astate, and so banished of new.

And though kynge Phillip of France had before this
tyme made peace for a season betwene the Venetians
and genowates, in hope of an enterpryse that he enten-

ded towardes the holy lande: yet the auncient hate was
suche betweene thein, that the one coulde scarce meere
with the other on the sea, but that they would fight to-
gether, and take that aduantage that they would doe
in warre.

1282.
Giudice

GThen began Giudice di Ginercha in Corsica to
trouble the genowaye vessels, and at lengthe to declare
him selfe open enemye to them. Wherefore they made
out a power against him, and expelled hym out of his
astate. But by thein of Pisa he was by force restored
agayne: for the which the warre renewed betweene the
genowayes and the Pisani, one of the bloudiest warr?
and greatest by sea that hath lightly ben hearde of be-
twene two common wealthes. For within the space
of thre yeres their armies foughte. iiii. battailes, and
they diligence was such, that whan the one army was
discomfited (whiche for the moste parte hapt to the Pis-
ani) they wold within a moneth or. vi. weekes repaire
their number of galleys as strong as at the first, not of
olde galleys, but of newe tymber. And it wolde seeme
incredyble to hym that knoweth those two citiees, that
they should be able (hauyng so little dominion) to make
suche powers one againste an other, as by their chroni-
cles appereth they did.

1284

For the Genowayes upon a sodaine sdynges of the
Pisanes landing in Porto Venere, armed. 70 galleys
in lesse than. iiii. dayes, and sette them soothe to the sea,
and in the same yeare was. 58. galleys, and. viii. Pami-
phili (whiche be boates of. 140. or. 160. oyes) made
readye in Genoa in a daye, which with the reste of the
armie, to the number of. 88. galleys, besides other ves-
sels,

selles, sayled forth before the haue of Pisa, where after a cruell and bloudie battaile the Genowayes had the victorie, take. 28. Pisane galleys, bouged leuen, put the rest to flight, and ledde with them. 9272. prisoners, whose ranfome yelded vnto the genowayes no small summes of money: and though this ouerthrow shoulde seeme almost sufficient to be the destruction of a great prince, yet did that one citie of Pisa so beare it, that after a litle dissembled peace they declared & continued enemies a longe while after against the Genowates, and fought many battailes by sea with diuers fortune.

The nobilitie of genoa conspired against the gonor-¹²⁰⁹ hours and people, to take from them the rule, because the citie was governed more after the commons wyl, than the gentilmens. And this conspiracy was so close kept (notwithstandynge that in maner all the chiefe families, as Grimaldi, Elischi, Negri, Malloni, Saluaticci, Embriaci, & others were confederates in it) that it was neuer knowen, tyll they were in the streetes armed on horsebacke & on foote, and had taken the church of sainte Laurence: But folowynge to the Abbots house (for so was the chiefe ruler called) the people assembled and resysted the conspirators in such wyse, that the nobilitie was fayne to laye downe their weapons, vpon promise to be pardoned of lyfe and goodes. By reason wherof the commocyon ceased, and certaine of the principall causers were banished for a tyme. 1111
 Upon examinacon, what power the genowayes were able to make by sea in tyme of neede, it was founde they¹²⁹⁰ had. 120 galleys, furnished with their owne chosen men. Wherof. 40. were immediately sent forth against Pisa.

Whiche entred the hauen, destroyed the great toure that the Pisanes had made there for thei^r defence, toke the towne of Ligorno, and rased it to the earth: and finally brake the great chaine that crossed the water, a greate parte wherof they brought with theim to Genoa, and there openly hanged it by for a perpetuall memo^rye of their victo^ries.

¶ Here as the commons the yere before had defended their rulers from the consp^racte of the nobilitie, now they them selves began to moue and to make rumours againste theim: so that the capitaines of their owne accord gaue by their offices to the people, wherebpon a newe order was taken, that they shoulde haue a stranger to be their capytayne, and the reste of all the officers, as the counsailours, the Anciani, and such other, shoulde be made halfe of the gentilm^en, and halfe of the people.

1202.

¶ Not longe after vppon a lyghte occasyon, the truce was broken betwene the Genowales & the Venetians, and either of theim armed a certaine number of galleys to the sea, and in the Leuantine seas before the hauen of Giacia mette and foughte, where the lesse number, the genowales overcame the greater number, and toke. 25 of their galleys.

1294

¶ Here it is to be noted, that wythin the space of. vii. yeres, from the beginning of the last warres agaynst Pisa, it appereth, that the genowales at sund^re tymes had armed. 627. salles, besides the merchaⁿt shippes and galleys, that yere^{ly} amounted to. 70. or mos. And the custome of comers and goers, with the tare of salte, yelded yere^{ly} vnto the commonalte aboute an. 140000

poundes

poundes (euery pounce of theirs beyng two of ours, or theraboutes) whiche semeth a thing incredible.

Then were the *Mascharati* and *Rampini* of the citee (whiche were also as *guelfi* and *ghibellini*) made at ¹²⁹⁵ one, after they had contended as ennemys more than 50. yeares. *Wherupon* (hearyng of a great preparacion that the *Venetians* made to reuenge theyr losse the yere before) the *genowales* armed. 165. galleys wherof 105. were new, in the which they had 45000 feighting men, all of their owne subiectes, vnder the leadyng of *Oberto d'Oría*, admiral for that byage, who wente into *Sicile*, thinkyng there to mete the *Venetians*, but they met not, so that the army returned without doing anye feate: and their wealthe was suche, that, 8000. men of that army were cloathed in clothe of golde and sylkes.

The olde enuye betwene the *Guelfi* and *Ghibellini* ¹²⁹⁶ renewed, so that the citee was deuided, that is to wete, the families of *Spinola*, & *Doria*, with their folowers on the one parte, & *Flischi* and *Grimaldi*, wyth theyr secte on the other parte: so that they foughte from the later ende of December, vnto the vii. of February date by daye, and burned diuers goodlie houses: but at laste *Spinola* and *Doria* preuailed, & the other were driuen out of the towne and banyshed. By reason wherof, ii. capitaines of those ii. houses were elected to the rule of the citee after the olde maner, and the strange captain, with the *Potestate* discharged.

Lamba d'Oría, beyng one of the capitaines of the towne, and admiral of the armye by sea, entred the ^{1298.} *Venetian golfe*, fought with the *Venetian* army, burned

Of the astate

77. galleys, and broughte, 18. with .7400. prisoners to
genoa, and neuerthelesse shortly after made peace with
the Venetians, and graunted cruce to theim of Pisa for
27. yeares . For the whiche the Pisani, yelded to the
genowates the Ile of Corsica, and the citie of Sassari
in Sardegnia, with. 125000. poundes in money.

1304

The emperour Adronico Paleologo of Constantino-
ple, for the greate amitie betweene hym and the geno-
wates, gaue theim the ground, wheron Pera standeth,
a myle distant from Constantinople, where al the chry-
stians now dwel, fyrst builded by the Genowates.

1306

¶ Within two yeres after beganne the discorde, that
caused so much mischiefe betwene the houses of Spino-
la and Doria, (whiche befoze tyme had been faste
friendes together) and endured the space of 15. yeares
with much bloudshedynge, till the comynge of the empe-
rour Henrie the. vi. to genoa, who agreed both parties,
and so behaused him, that the citesiens bounde theim sel-
fes by feaultrie vnto his obediensce for terme of. 11. yea-
res; which was the fyrst tyme that the citie submytted
hir selfe to the dominion of anye straunger. Forwyth-
standynge whan the emperour was departed, those two
parties Spinola and Doria fought openly in the citie
so that at length the Spinoli (beyng the weaker) were
driven out with well nere al their partetakers, and yet
the warce continued betwene them the space of. 24. ye-
res, aswel within as without the citie, to the great da-
mage, and almost destruction of the common wealth.
For many times the banished w^e by meane of frendes
were reconciled againe; and whan they were ones re-
turned, than did they worse than euer they did befoze.

1312

1315

This

This discession was not onely betwene those two families of Spinola and Doria, but also betwene the sectes of Guelles and Gibellines: into whych parties the whole citee was likewise diuided: so that the Gibellines, whiche then were hanghed by helpe of the Visconti of Myllaine, and of other gibellines, made a great armie: and vnder the leading of Marke, sonne to Mathewe Visconti, came besoze Genoa, toke the suburbs, & streigned the citee so close, that if it had not been succoured by kynge Robert of Naples (who in his owne person, wyth .25. galleys entred the hauen) the Gibellines had been lyke to haue taken it. Wherefoze they of the citee, to make theim selves strong, yelded the dominion into the handes of the bishop of Rome, and of the foresayd kynge of Naples, for the space of .x. yeres: in whiche time were so many ciuile battailes stricken, so much bloudshedde, so many towne and houses destroyed and burned, so many galleys and shippes broken downed and lost, and so great summes of money spent, that it seemeth a wonder how so little a countrey shuld bringe forth so great furniture, and all to mischiese. 1331

¶ Finally kynge Robert (to whom the rule of the citee was prolonged for .vi. yeres) called the ambassadours, aswell of the Gibellines as of the Guelles, to Naples: and there made theim to conclude a peace, so that the gibellines were reconciled home, where they liued not longe in quiete, as hereafter shal appere.

¶ In the time of this warre one notable polycpe was vlosed by sea. The yeare besoze conclusion of thys peace, federike Marabotto, capitaine of .ix. galleys of the Guelles (whereof .ii. were downed in Sardegnia) was chased.

chased by Aitono Doria, capitayne of .xliiii. of the ghibelline galleys, and came so neere wth the nighte, that they were wth in a flight thotte together, so that Federike could by no meane escape: Wherefoze in the darke of the nyghte, he set foze a little emptie vessel, wth a burnyng lanterne in it, and caused all the lightes of his galleys to be put oute. This doone he lette the little vessel lose: whyche the walwes of the sea by lytle and lytle dyane towarde the lande: so that Aitono thynke it to be the galleys that he had in chace, folowed, and by that meane was so farre from Federike er it was day, that Federike easily escaped the daunger.

1332+

¶ Than beganne the Catalaynes to make warre to the genowayes vpon a veraye light occasion, which continued a great while, wth many notable battailes by sea moze to the losse of the Catalaynes than of the Genowayes: though the better of bothe had no cause to triumphe. But those fozen warres were nothing so hurtfull to the citee, as theyr owne ciuile sedicion, whyche shortly after renued betwene the guelfes and Ghibellines: so that wth in the citee they foughte a certayne space wth variable fortune, till at length the Ghibellines preuailed, and chased away the Guelfes: and so another while toke the rule vpon them. Wherefoze the guelfes fortified them selves at Monaco, and made out dyuers armies by sea, whiche were dyuers tymes mette wthall, by the contrary parte, though in effecte there happened no notable battaile betwene them.

1335

¶ Not longe after the Frenche kynge warrynge wth Englande, byed .40. galleys of the genowayes: wherof .xx. were of the Ghibellines in Genoa, and .xx. of the

1338:

the Guelphes in Monaco, whych when they had ser-
ued him a yere, retourned not wel contented with their
payment, so that the mariners and other meane soules
ours toke the rule of the galleis from theyr capitaines: 1339.
and were growen to suche a courage, that when they
landed, they moued the commons to rebell against the
rule of the common wealch, & subuertynge the cites of
Sauona, with most parte of the countrey theraboutes,
the commons of genoa toke courage therupon to arme
them selves, and to renne to the palaice cryng, that they
would haue an Abbot made of the people, and would no
moze be ruled by the capitaines. Wherefore the nobles
(seing theyr power inferiour to the peoples furpe) as-
sembled together, & fel to counsaile for chosinge of thys
new Abbotte, in whiche counsaile they taried so longe
with in, that the people without were wery, and by farte
a pooze wyzed: a wer oz a goldesmithe (to geue hym the
better name) and asked the people, whether they would
be ruled by him? Whereunto many answered, yea, wel
(quod he) and than that Simonine Bocanegra be our
lord and ruler. He it (quod one) and he it quod an o-
ther: so that the people with an whole voyce cried, Ab-
botte Bocanegra. But he (who was a good man) did
what he could to refuse it: and they seyng that, amen-
ded the matter with cryng not Abbotte but Duke: so
that in conclusion, whether he would oz no, the abso-
lute power was put in his hande, and he called Duke:
beyng the fyrst that euer had that title in Genoa. Than
was a law made, that none should be called to any rule
oz office of the common wealche, vnlesse he were a Chi-
belline.

1340

The Turke at this tyme wared greate, and had certaine galleis goyng vpon the sea called Mare Maggioro (orherwise Pontus Euxinus) whyche had robbed certaine merchaunte shippes of the genowates, wherfore they armed them selves in Cassa, and meetynge fought with the Turkes army, and recovered not onely their owne goodes, but also toke .x. Turkish galleis and a shippe with great boote.

1344

Likewise the emperour of the Tartares made warre on the genowates, and besieged them in Cassa (a towne situate in the confines of Tartarie) oute of the whyche the Genowates slayng by night, burned the Tartares engines, and slewe .5000. men: so that their emperoure sent to genoa for peace, and vnder colour thereof (obteynynge it) did them much more hurt by treason than he had done in open warre. For he spoyled them at one tyme of .200000. poundes.

1345

The Nobilitie of genoa (that than were banished) seeyng the astate ruled all by the people, assembled their powers, and came before the citee, so that Bocanegra (seeyng also the nobilitie and people within the citee in maner at an open cōrenciaon for the same) deposed himselfe of his dignitie, and departed oute of the citee: In whose place John di Morta was by the people elected, and the noblities kepte out, til by the award of Lucchino Visconti, lord of Millaine (to whose iudgement the mattier was committed) they were restozed to the citee and to parte of their goodes, the rule remainynge nevertheless at the peoples wyll.

1346

At this while, they of Monacho mainteigned warre against Genoa, & had newly armed .34. galleis wherfore

foze they of Genoa armed also. 29. so that because they wold not meete together, they of Monaco wēt to serue Phillip the french kyng agaynst our kyng Edward the. iiii. in whiche warres they had so good successe, that one galley of theim neuer retourned home agayne: but the other army of Genoa, vnder the leading of Simonde Vignioso prospered veray much. For after diuers enterpryses achieved in the realme of Naples, he entred into the Archipelago (otherwysse called Mare Egeum) and there gat the ile of Sio, which in processe of tyme hath been occasion of wonderfull gayne and wealth to the Genowayes, and besydes that at the same time he gat the two citices called Foglie Vecchie.

Then renewed the warre betwene the Venetians and the genowayes, wherein were diuers battailles stricken, one before Constantinople, where the Venetians were dyscomfited, wyth the losse of. 30. galleys: an other in Hardegnia, where the genowayes were dyscomfited, with the losse of. 41. galleys, and an other at the ile of Sapientia, where the Venetians lost. 40. sayle, besides dyuers others of lesse importance. 1350

And though it seeme, that the Genowayes got mooste in these last warres with the Venetians; yet their gaine 1353 was so blouddy & costly, that in maner of necessitee they submitted them selves to John than archebysshop and lord of Appylayne. Under whom it continued scarce 1356 ly. iiii. yeres, but that the people (beyng offended wyth the taxes that the bishop requyred of theim) restored Simonde Bocanegra to the astare of duke: wherof he had deposed him selfe before: and he in recompence thereof, deposed all the nobilitie, and gaue the offices amongst

the people . For whiche were dyuers conspracyes
wrought againste hym: and (as some holde opinion) at
length he was poysoned at a bankette made to the king
of Cyprus, as he passed that way into Fraunce.

¶ Gabriell Adorno was made Duke next after hym,
who continued the space of v. yerres, till the people mis-
liked his rule, and by force deposyng h im, created Do-
menike di Campo Fregoso in hys roome. In whose
time happened the businesse in Cypus betwene the Ve-
netians and Genowates s^r: goyng on the vpper hand,
whych afterwarde was occasion of cruell warres.

¶ It happened vpon the death of king Peter of Cypus
(who in the night was slayne by his brethern) that as
his sonne Peter should goe to the cerimony of his coro-
nacion, the Venetians and genowayes than presente,
contended betay earnestly for the vpper hand, whych at
length by order of the kynges counsaile was geuen to
the Venetians, so that the genowales, preparyng them
selves to be reuenged, were discouered, taken, & slayne,
that of as manye as were in Cypus, there escaped but
one to bynge home newes of this mattier : whych at
length caused the destruction of that lande.

¶ For the Genowales made out an army, and the same
daye. xii. monethes, that they were beaten, they entred
by force into Famagosta (the chiefe citee of cypus) and
toke all the noblytee of the Realme. iiii. of the chiefe
they put to death, because they had been their enemies,
and hauynge all the realme at theyr disposicion, they
restored it to the yong king Peter, reseruing Famago-
sta to them selves, with a trybute of. 40000. fl. oz. iiii. s.
whych they enioyed vnto the yere of our lorde. 1464.

and

1363

1376
1372

1373+

and besides that they brought diuers noble men & gentlemen of the cypristes prisoners vnto genoa, amongest whom was the kynges vncle James Lusigniano, who beyng kept in the towre Capo di Faro, begat a sonne ¹³⁷⁸ called Iano, and was afterwarde kyng hym selfe.

¶ And albeit that Domenyke di Campo Fregoso (who for the space of .viii. yeres had ben duke) ruled the astate so well, that no man could iustly reprove him, yet the inconstant multitude, with a little sterynge of some that were great, made a commocion againste him, and not onely deposed hym, and put hym and his brother Peter (general of the enterpryse of Cyprus) in prysen, but also banyshe all theim of the house of Fregoso: who for a greate space had ben notable ministers of the common wealth.

But this ingratitude of the people can be no wonder to theim that haue redde hystories. For it is almost ordinary with the people to render yll for good.

Ingratitude
of people.

¶ Than was Nicolas di Guarco elected Duke: By whose tyme happened that notable warre betwene the genowayes and Venetians, wherein after dyuers fortunes and victories on both partes, the Venetians lobed to be beaten oute of theyr houses. For the genowayes with helpe of theyr colleges so sore oppressed theyr power by sea, that they were driven into theyr owne haven, and Peter Doria came with the armye before the two castels at Lio, within two mile of Venice, so that if the Site of the place made not the citie imprenable: of likelihode the Venetians had been subdued. For they sent their ambassadours to peter Doria to requyre peace with large condicions, who (not beyng contented

By iii

to haue

to haue the honour with a reasonable aduantage) wold
 needes they shoulde yelde thein selves and theyr citee to
 be at hys discreacion. The extremitie of whych
 aunswere made the Venetians so desperate, that strait-
 nyng their bittermost powers together, at length they
 discoumfitied the genowaes army, slew Peter Doria,
 toke .xix. galleis, and moze than .4000. prissoners: and
 so recovered Chiozza, with all theyr other places about
 theyr marishes, that were befoze taken from them.
 And than encreased their courage so much, that Carlo
 Zeno, with certayne Venetian galleis, entred the riuer
 of Genoa, and helde the genowaes shor, till by meane
 of the duke of Sauoye the peace was made betwene
 thein.

1382

¶ Than died kyng Peter of Cypzus, whom to succede
 the barons elected his vnckle James, then prissoner in ge-
 noa: who vpon aduertisement therof was not only put
 at libertie, but also (after great leaues and hono?) sent
 home with .x. galleis of the common wealthes: fyrste
 binding him selfe to certayne articles aswel for the pay-
 ment of a yerely tribute, as also for the citee of Fama-
 gosta, which remained in the genowaes possession.

1383

¶ About this time were so many commociōs in the ci-
 tee, for chosing of theyr Dukes, that I thinke there was
 neuer so much alteracion of rulers in one cōmon welch
 for the tyme. And because the reherfall thereof wolde
 occupie a greater rōume than my purpose doeth here
 allow: it shal suffice to saye, that as longe as the rule of
 the common wealth consisted in the wyll of the maie-
 stie, neuer was so inconstāt an astate as that of genoa.
 For amōggest other in the chaūge betwene Domenyke
 di Cam

di Campo Fregoso and Nicolas Guarco were. *iii.* dukes in a day: Fregoso deposed in the moynynge, and Adorno incontinentlye made, and at after noone Adorno deposed, and guarco made. Wherefore as superfluous to treat of all the Dukes elections, I woulde henceforth speake no more of theyr changes, wythoute great cause.

The Moores of Barbarie in this tyme scoured all the midale seas, robbing and spolling all that ever they ¹³⁸⁹ coulde take. Wherefore the Genowayes wyth dyuers others made suite vnto the Frenche kyng for an enterpryse to be made against the kyng of Tunise. Whych the French kyng graunted, and sent the duke of Bourbone as a generall, not onely wyth a greate power of Fraunce, but also wth aide that was sent him out of engylade, in whose company the Genowayes sent. 40. galleys, and. xx. shippes of theirs, vnder the leadynge of John Centurione. And theyr Chronicle maketh mention, how our Englishe archers behaued them selves at theyr landing in Barbarie so wel, that the Moores gaue them place: wheras withoute them the armye shoulde haue had muche adoe to lande. The ende of whychs iourney was, that the king of Tunise released all Christian Slaves, whereof there were a number in his realme, and payed the Christians. 10000. ducates, with promise to trouble the seas no more.

From the yere. 1390. till. 1396. was so muche a dooe ¹³⁹⁶ for makynge and deposing of Dukes, that Antoniotto Adorno had bene. *iiii.* tymes Duke, besides. *viii.* or. ix. others, that had been put in and out the meane tyme, wth so much bloudshed, burnynge, and spollynge, that
at length

at length for verie desperacion the citee sent ambassadours to Charles the. vi. Frenche kyng, beseeching him to take the dominion therof into hys handes. Who at theyr request sent the Counte of saint Paule, and the byshop of Meaur to be rulers there, and to receyue the fortresses into his possession, whych immediately were deliuered to them, & feaully swozne by al the subiectes.

The Frenche Gouernour had not been there fully a yere, but the sectes of Guelles and ghibellines renued so soze, that after much burnyng, spoilyng and kyllyng in the countrey theraboutes, the ghibellines entred into the citee, and from the. xvi. of Iulye, to the. v. of September fought daye by daye wyth the guelles, and forrissying the one halfe of the citee, against the other, they neuer ceased, tyl bothe parties were tyred with the fury of theyr owne blondde and flambe. For amongst their feightyng it was a common matter to set one anothers house on fyre: so that the losse that the common wealth suffeigned in this rage, was esteemed much moze than a myllion of golde.

The bishop of Meaulx, than gonerour of the citee, for feare of his owne lyfe, fledde in the myddest of this furpe. So that whan it was past, the Frenche kyng sent thither in his stede one Collarde, a counsaillour of hys, who by the Genowases was honourably receiued. He gouerned not much moze than a yere, but by meane of a new sect, called La Scorzola, he was faine to haue handone the citee, leauing them together by the eares after theyr old maner; feightyng and burnyng amongst thei in selues day by daye: whiche ceased not, till the coming of Bouciquart marshall of Fraunce, who being the

the knyghtes lieutenant, entred into genoa with a thou-
sand souldiours, & incontinently proceeded againste the
Reerrers of the common wealthe, causynge two of the
chiefe of the citee Battista Boccanegra, & Battista de
Frauchi, to be taken & brought to the palatice, & behend-
ed Boccanegra: vppon whose death the people began
such a crye, that they whyche had the other in keepynge,
lette him go: so that whan the rumour was past, Bou-
ciquart in a greate rage, caused the chiefe officer of the
wardes head to be stricken of, because thozughe his
mens negligence, happened the escape.

¶ Then did Bouciquart also fortifie the little castell, now called Castelletto, and put a garrison into it: and when he had taken aſwel from the men of the countrey as of the towne, all kinde of armure (theyr ſwordes excepted) than ſpared he none of theſm: But for euerye occaſion of any importaunce, woulde behead the offenders without any reſpect to his qualitee or kinne: And his procedynges were ſuch, that the French kyng confirmed hym in that office for terme of life, to the greates contentaciō of the ciſelins, who in his rigorous iuſtice founde greater eaſe, than in the ſofter procedynges of the other gouernours: whoſe gentilneſſe gaue libertee to the preſumptuous multitude to do what they wolde, whych was theyr owne deſtruction.

¶ Then Iano kyng of Cyprus (who had been borne, 1403
 bredde by, & wel intreated in Genoa) lated siege to the
 citee of Famagosta, intredyng to get it from the genoa
 wales: but an army of, 18. saile was incontynently made
 thither, under y^e leading of Bouciquart, who not onely
 rayled the siege, but also constrained the kyng to pay

their charges, & archleued diuers other enterpryses on the costes of Sicilia: neuerthelesse in hys retourne the Venetians metie with hym, and putting him to flight, took, lxx. of his galleis: and yet was the matter so handled, that the warre betweene the Venetians and Genowates ceased for this tyme. In dede Bouciquart in his owne quarell defied the duke of Venice, and Carlo Zeno, capitaine of the venetian galleis, to feight either hande to hande, oz number for number, but he was not answered.

Bouciquart.

This Bouciquart, for the space of. lxxx. yeres ruled the common wealch of Genoa, by whych tyme the citee of Seresana, with the countre aboute came to the obedyence of the genowates. Because they were of them selves no moze able to resist the Florentines, and Bouciquart solde the common wealch, the Porte of Ligozno helydes Pisa fo. 26000. dukates.

By his tyme also Benedict the. xlii. Scissmarke bishop of Rome, came to Genoa, and was there triumphantly receiued. And the office of. S. George was then demysed, whych endureth to this daye.

The Siores also rebelled, in so muche that Bouciquart, with. xl. galleis went thither, and reduced them to their former obedience.

Finally couetyng to haue the ruler of the estate of Milan, he made an armie of. 6000. footemen, and. 5000. horsemen, & (not mistrustynge any alteration in Genoa) passed the Greiete into Lumbardy. But the means while the people murmored against him, & at last rebelled and slew all the Frenchmen they could finde with in the demyngon, and than receyued the Marques of

Monferr

Monferrato; with a certayne power of men into the citie, who was made capteyne & presidente there, with a stipend of. 15000. pound by the yeare. So that when Bouciquart wolde retourne, it was to late. For than the Genowates would be no longer subiectes to the French kinge.

The Marques continued not fullye. liii. yeares, but they rebelled, and expelled hym out of theyr dominyon, partly by force and partly by agreement. For they gaue hym. 24.500. ducates for the restitution of those towne and fortresses that he had of theyr in hys handes. And than fell they to a newe order with the election of a Duke much after their olde maner: so that George Adorno was made duke for that time.

And albeit there coulde no fault be found in hym, for he was a good iusticer, and a man endued with muche humanitie, yet was he scarce. li. yeares in that office, but Battista Montaldo conspired agaynst hym.

Wherof folowed so muche civile warre betwene parties in the citie, that there were aboue. 100. men slaine, and that many of the best sort, and. 146. houses burned, spoiled and destroyed: and so muche hurte done besides, that it were to lamentable to tell.

Finally both parties weered, they fel. to agreement: so that george Adorno willingly renounced the estate of duke, and Barnabas di Goano was elected in hys steede. Who within the space of a yeare was also deposed, and Thomas Di Campo Fregoso made Duke in hys place.

This man immediately after his election, to get the love of the people, dysbursed. 60000. ducates of hys

stone, to the reliefe of the common wealth: whyche at that tyme was farre in debte. And yet for all that the common wealth was brought to such povertee, by their one ciuile sedicion, and resisting duke Phyllyp of Millaine, who than made Harpe warre vpon them, that for veray necessitee they solde the porte of Ligorno to the Florentines for, 120000. duckates.

And to encrease their calamitee kyng Alfonse of Aragon (goyng out of Spaine to gette the realme of Naples) landed in Corsica vpon the genowayes dominion and there besiegeyng Bonifacio put them to no small charge in the rescue thereof: wherein surely the Genowayes bare theim selves wonderful valiauntelye, notwithstanding that by their continual warres specially against the Duke of Millaine, they were broughte to suche povertee, that they were fayne at last to submitte them selves to the duke of Millaine, and in recompence of the depoyng of their owne duke, gaue him 30000. Flozines, with the lordship of Serezana. Than was capitaine Carmigniola made ruler of the citie for the Duke, in whose tyme an armie was made out into the realme of Naples against kyng Alfonse, vnder the leading of Guido Totello, who by composition toke the citties of Gaeta and Naples, and byd so much, that the Spaniards forsoke the realme, and so had the duke of Millaine his purpose there, though he bled it but easely for by faire entreatie he restored to Lucene Johan, all that the Genowayes had gotten from him. Besides that the Duke suffered the common wealth to decay, by reason that dyuers (partely by his appoynemente, and partely by his consente) occupied certayne townes & possessions.

1421.

1422

sessions to their owne vles, whych befoze belonged to the comynalte. Wherewith the genowayes were muche offended, though be for that tyme they durste not warre.

¶ And albe it that the genowayes serued hym notably ¹⁴³¹ in his warres againste the Venetians, specialllye in the conflict betwene them on the riuer of Po, nere to Cremona, where the Venetians receiued a great discomfiture: yet whan the Venetians made warre againe vpon the Genowayes, onely to be renenged of their losse on the Po, Duke Phillip nothyng ayded the genowayes: so that the Venetians discomfited their army befoze the church of sainte Fruttuoso, where the Venetians toke viij. galleys: and pursuyng their victorie, seepyng the genowayes scarce able to arme theim, and the ile of Sio vndefended, made thither: and gaue diuers assautes to the citee, thinkyng to gette it. But the States, wyth helpe of a few Genowayes that they had there, defended theim selves so valiauntlye, that the Venetians were faine to retire with great losse of their men.

¶ Than retourned kynge Alfonso of Aragone into the realme of Naples, and besieged Gaetta, to the rescue ¹⁴³⁴ wherof Blasio d'Asseretto was sente, wyth x. sayle, and not fully 2000. men: who mette and fought wyth the king, the worst battaille that hapned in those dayes, for so small a number. For the kynge set on the Genowayes armye with double the number of men, and with great advantage of shippes and galleys, yet vpon the genowayes so obstinatlye feight it out, that of the kynges part they slew aboue 5000. and toke the king with his ii. byethers, a number of dukes and Erles,

and aboute.200.knights prisoners,with so much spoyle
of golde,siluer,iewelles, and other treasure, that the
lyke bootie had not lightelye been heard of: All whiche
they brought in safetee to Genoa:saunge the kynges
person,whiche by the duke of Applynnes commaunde-
ment was had to Sauona,and from thence to Millaine
where he was not entreated as a prisoner,but at length
not onely without raunsome,but also with great prei-
ces set at libertee,and that without the genoways con-
sent,whiche with diuers other unkyndnesses and inju-
ries dooen to theim by the duke,caused the Genoways
to retourne to theyr owne wonted wylls, so that tho-
rough procurement of Frances Spinola,y whole ctyes
was in armes,and expulsiue and sleynge all the Du-
kes ministers,toke on them theyr old libertie,and made
Thomas di Campo Fregoso Duke againe,who con-
tinued in the same aboute.61.yeares. In whiche tyme
Raynolde Duke of Angio (that claimed the realme of
Naples)came to Genoa, and was not onely well re-
ceiued there,but also aided with certayne armed galleys
towards his enterpryse,and Nicolas Fregoso sent for
capitaine with him:by whose helpe he gatte the Castel
Nouo in Naples,and so muche prospered otherwaies,
that it was a great whyle doubted,who shoulde enioye
the realme,either Raynolde, or kyng Alfonso. But
at last Raynolde for lacke of men and money was faine
to leaue the enterpryse,so that the genoways returned
without any recompence of their great charge:instygged
in that quarel.And than was king Alfonso in theyr ralle
by sea:so that they were no sooner disarmd, but that
he ouerranne all the Genowaye coffres,The like labors
of old

of dyd the Duke of Apellaine by lande : and so was the common wealth in maner besieged on both sides.

¶ In the midst wherof beganne a conspiracie against the duke, who was deposed and Rafael Adorno settled ¹⁴⁴³ in hys place. Then peace was obtained of kynge Al- ¹⁴⁴⁴ fonsse vpon certayne condicions, as the necessitie of the tyme would allow: amongst whiche one was, that the Genowales shoulde yerely sende hym a basen of golde as a present, or rather as a tribute, as he toke it.

¶ Rafael Adorno being perswaded, that the common wealth shoulde amend, if he renounced the Duchie, lest ¹⁴⁴⁷ it willyngly. Wherupon Barnabas Adorno take vpon hym: but Janus di Campo Fregoso entred by nyghte into the citee, and deposing Barnabas by force: toke the affaie vpon hym, and died within two yeres.

After whom succeeded Lewys Fregoso, and after him Peter Fregoso. In whose tyme the dominion of Corsica, with the profitres comyng out of Caffa, and oute of the other places, subiect to the genowales in the east, were all conuerted to the magistrate of saint George: and the citee of Pera againste Constantinople (whiche appertained before to the genowales) was yelded to the ¹⁴⁵⁴ Turke, whan Constantinople was gotten.

¶ John duke of Angis, sonne to the fozenamed Raynolde, came this yere vnto Genoa, where by accorde of ¹⁴⁵⁸ the citelins, he receiued the citee into the domynion of the french kyng, and therupon toke thei seaultes. But than came king Alfonsse before the haueu with a notable army, & so sore besieged the citee by siege, that if death had not taken hym the rather out of the waye, he muste needes haue gotten it. Wheras his death vnloked for,
caused

caused the whole armye to scatter here and there: by reason whereof the Genowates were deliuered, euen when they despaired of all mercy, knowing how much the kynge was bent to their destruction.

Then incontinently they made out an army in fauour of Duke John towarde the recovery of the realme of Naples, whiche did hym notable seruice, though in effecte his purpose proued not.

1458

This meane whyle Peter Fregoso, that had been Duke, seeing the power of the citee wel abated by sending out of this armie, made a power, and imagineng howe he myghte recover his astate, entred the citee by nyght. But this Duke John with the citelins resisted, fought with hym all nyght and a part of the daye, and at last repulsyng his men, by chaunce locked hym with a fewe more within the gates, where at last he was slaine and some of his allies and confederates taken and beheaded.

1490:

But Duke John after this victorie rested not long, til the commons beganne to contende for payement of taxes, and findyng faulte with the burdeine that was laded vpon them, toke their weapons in hand, and constrained the duke with all his frenchemen to flee into the Castell. Where they besieged him: and then made Prospero Adorno theyr duke: so that Raynolde, farther vnto the besieged Duke (wyth helpe of the frenche kynge) made a great army by sea and lande, and came to Genoa, where he was well fought withall, overcome, and losse. 2500. men: so that the Genowayes remained in theyr libertee: and yet were the ennemies no sooner repyed, but ciuile sedition sprange by amongst them

thems within the citee. For the Duke Adorno could not be contented to suffer the Fregosi to rarie within the citee, wherbyan either of them made what power they coulde: And the Fregosi hauynge the better hande, expelled Adorno, & made one of theyr owne name Duke.

This ouerthrow was so displeasaunt to the Frenche kyng, that keeping Sauona a certayne space in his handes, and seeynge the maintenaunce therof ouerchargeable for hym, gaue it vnto Fraunceca Sforza than Duke of Myllayne, withall his ryghte vnto the astate of Genoa. Wherebyon Sforza sente an armye thither vnder the leadinge of Gasparo di Vicomercato, and easelye obtayned the dominion of the citee, by reason that paule Fregoso, than bothe Duke and archbishop of Genoa, fledde without makynge any resistence, knowynge that the people hated hym for his great tyrannie.

Thus Gasparo beyng in the dukes name placed in the rule of the citee, the genowayes sente .xliii. of their chiefeest citizens in ambassade to Myllayne, to gratyspe the duke: that amiably receiued them. And glad were the genowayes, that they had gotte him to be theyr lord, because the good gouernaunce of his owne subiectes made them to hope for like wealth and rest: as it pzoued in dede. But he lyued not fully .ii. yeres after.

Then succeeded his sonne Galeazzo: In whose tyme the Turke gatte the citee of Caffa, wyth dyuers other townes in the easts parties, apperteynyng to the genowayes: Which was not onely a great hyndzaunce to theyr wealth, but also to theyr reputacion.

And because this Galeazzo shewed hym selfe some what vnythankeful to the Genowayes (beyng in dede a wilful yonge man) therfore the people murmoured a

1476

gainst him, & ones rebelled by procurement of Ierome Gentile: whych neuerthelesse without much a doe was pacified: so that Galeazzo continued lord thereof tyll he was slayne in Millaine throughe a conspircate made agaynst hym. As in the Milanesse histoyre appeareth.

1477

But incontinently vpon hys death the commons arose againe, and expulsiſg the gouernour therfore the duke toke a new order for the rule of their common wealth. Therfore incontinently a great armie was sent from Millaine, whiche by the helpe of the Adorni, with theyr parttakers discomfited Obietto di Flisco, with hys companyalltee, and so beyng entred into the citee, Prospero Adorno was established, as the duke of Millains lieutenaut there. But he continued scarcely one yeare,

1478

tyl by meane of new practises, that he held with Ferdinando kyng of Naples, he was had in suspicion to the Milanesse: who willinge to depose hym, rased a newe commocion of the people, so that where he was before the dukes lieutenante, now he was made gouernoure absolutely of the common wealth. Therupon a newe armie was sente from Millayne to Genoa, and there foughte wythall, and so discomfited, that of. 15000. men, whiche departed from Millaine, retourned not fullye 3000. the rest, some were slayne, but the most part taken. This battaile being thus archieued, the genowales had no rather reconered their libertie, but that their old ciuile sedicion renewed. For the Fregosi could not suffer the Adorni to rule, wherfore within the citee they fell together by the eares. And albeitt that for a season the Adorni preuailed, yet at length they were oppressed and constrained to flee, and Battista Fregoso made duke

after

after their olde maner, who the. lxxx. yere after hys election was deposed by the procurement of cardinal Grego-¹⁴⁸³ go, and the Cardynall made Duke in his steede, by whose tyme the Florentines made warre agaynst the Genowates, and gat from them the towncs of Serezana and Pietra Santa, whych with the countreys about theym, were of notable importaunce to the common wealth. But it is no meruaile, though the Florentines prevailed: for the genowates were at that tyme habandoned of all the states aboute them. Whereas the Florentines were in leage with the bishop of Rome, with the Venetians, and diuers others.

Then were the commons so wery of the Cardynalles rule, that Obietto Filico, vpon comfort therof, entred by nyght into the citee, and after much fight and longe contention, made the Cardinal to renounce: so that the citezins (remembryng how they were best in quiet, whā^{1488.} they were subiectes to the Duke of Millaine) returned of newe to be vnder the Milanesie dominyon: and than was Antony Adorno made gouernoure of the citee for the duke. By whose tyme truce was taken with the Florentines, to the genowates disaduauntage: and Charles the. viii. French kynge was ayded by the genowates^{1495.} rewardes the winnyng of the realme of Naples, but in his retourn thence, they not onely discomfited a good partie of his army by lande, but also toke .x. galleys, and a great gallion, that were retournynge into Fraunce from the kings sayd enterpryse of Naples. Wherevpon diuers towncs that before rebelled agaynst the common wealth, returned thā vnto them, as Mintimiglia with others. And Serezana was boughte of the Castellane¹⁴⁹⁶

there for 25000. ducates.

The emperor Maximilian came also to Genoa and was there honourable receiued.

1499

This time was Lewys, surnamed Moro, Duke of Millaine, and sins the last submission of the astate of genoa vnto the duke, the house of Adorni had bozne al the rule. And because they had perswaded the common wealth to aide the duke against the french kynge wyth 1000. men payed for. iii. monethes, therfore whan the french kynge had chased the duke from Millayne the ciuesins toke occasion to expulse the Adorni, & sente ambassadours to kynge Lewys the. xi. thā being at Millaine to offer them selves to him: who amiably receiued them, and made hys consen Phillip of Cleues their gouernour, who with. xlviii. saile French and Genowates together, toke his blage towards the enterpryse of Mesrelaine, to the whych the Venetians also sent. 34 galleys But they returned al without atchieving their purpose

1501

1502

Whan came kynge Lewys to spoze him at genoa, and makynge greate preparacion to receiue him, the nobles contended with the auncientes of the commons, who should goe befoze, whyche for that time was iudged by Rocabertino, linetenaunt for the gouernoze, that they should goe by age, and nother by bloud noz dignitie.

1506

And albest that this contencion was appeased for that tyme, yet for this & other light causes there grew suche hate betwene the nobillite and commons, that at length the multitude arose, and confreignyng the gentylmen to flee oute of the citee, spoiled and robbed dyuers of theyr houses.

Upon knowlage of whych rumour, the French king sente

ſente the governour thither. Who with, 150. horſe and 750. footemen entred the citie, thinking wth his preſence and power to oppreſſe the peoples fury.

Then Aloife di Filico, with moſt part of the nobilitie had aſſembled a power, and were come to Quarto, in hope by the governours meanes to be reconcyled. But then beganne the Artiſanes, with the rascal of the citie (whych for their pouertie were called Capette), to aſſemble together in companies, ſome of oure ladye, and ſome of ſanctie John Baptiſt, with other lyke, and ſo to renne about doying infinite harmes, that the governour durſt no more offer to heare any auctozſtee. For they made them ſelfe rulers by the name of tribunes, againſt whom no man myghte ſpeake, ſo that the governour, ſeeing his auctozſtee cleane taken from him, departed.

A little beſore whoſe departure kyng Ferdinando of Spaine, with, 2. galleis and, 600. ſouldiers entred the haven, and taryng there a daye, departed on hys way to Naples.

Then dyd they of the citie ſende, 3000. ambadaours to the Frenche kyng, who ſcarcelye woulde lake vpon theſe; beyng determined by force to chaſtiſe them, and therfore ſente commiſſion to the Caſtellane that kepte the Caſtelletto, to damage the citie all that he coulde, who therupon ſecretly made an iſſue (whan he knew he ſhould finde the chiefest in the church of. S. Frances) and toke a number, and ledde them priſoners in to the caſtell, where for their ranſomes the captaynes gatte about, 100000. duckates. But that letted him not from the execution of his maſters commaundemente, for he neuer ceaſed, but ſhot of all manner of artillery into the

citie and into the haven, to the greates terroure and anno-
yauunce of the people.

¶ But for all that these rascall Capette were so obste-
nate in theyr rebellion, that wth helpe of theyr neire
tribunes they made them a duke, one Paule da Noue
a dier of sylke.

1507

¶ And though that the Cardinal Finaro, wth dyuers
of the best citelins, did what they could by counsaile to
cause the people to submitte theim selves to the frenche
kyng (who than newly was entred wth an army into
Lumbar dy) yet would they neuer stowpe, tyll the fren-
che kyng wth his owne armie and wth suche power
as the nobilitie of Genoa could make, came befoze the
citie: where the commons made a litle resistence, but
at length he entred in armes, made hys armie to passe
thoroughe the citie, putte dyuers of the princypall of-
fenders to death, receyued homage of the citelins spt-
tyng in his magistee, placed the nobilitie in their accu-
stomed digastees, burned the booke of couenauntes, in
steede wherof he graunted them some praiileges, made
them pay. 200000 crownes for his cosse, & 40000.
to the building of a fortreffe at Capo di Faro, increa-
sed the garrison wth, 200. souldiours, & finally bound
them to kepe. 111. galleis continuallye armed at theyr
cosse and charge. And thus (to his semyng) establis-
shyng all thynges, retourned towarde France. And
at Sauona was ouertaken by the king of Spaine, who
in his retourne from Naples landed there to visite and
salute the frenche kyng: that lykelowse receyued hym
wth solemne cheere.

1510

¶ After this the Genowases rested scarcely. 11. yeres in
quiet

quiete vnder the French kynges dominyon (Radolfo de la Noi beyng gouernoure) but there sprong by a compaignie in the citee called the felowship of the toline, which betokened, that as the barell staves of the toline were perfectly toynd, so were they knitt together in one will. And these wared so stout, that they sente ambassadours to the frenche kyng, requirynge (amongest other things) a change of theyr gouernour, whom they reported to be an extortioner and a tyranne. But they spedde not of theyr purpose.

The meane whyle the byshop of Rome tempted an alteration of the affaie, in so muche that the byshoppe of ¹⁵¹² Vintimiglia came to the citee, to the entent to slea the gouernoure, and to make a commocion. And though he myst of his purpose, yet did the greate bishops purpose proue at length. For Rano Fregoso, with a certayne number of men sent from the byshoppes campe, entered the citee, without any resistance throughte the gouernours cowardly flight. And beyng made Duke, forced the castel so sore, that the castellaine for 12000. duckasres yelded it. Neuerthelesse the Castell of Lanterne helde still the French, and was besieged of the Fregosi. But the Adorni rescued it: and by comfort of the French kynges armie by sea, entered the Citee: ¹⁵¹³ wherbypon the Fregosi fledde, so that the affaie returned french, and Antoniotto Adorno, by the kynges speesall commission was made gouernour.

¶ In whiche office he continued but 22. dayes. For as soone as the french naue was departed (whiche by reason of the great discomfure that the french kyng had at Ponara, could tary no longer) the Fregosi, with

apde of the kynge of Spaine, came so strongly to Genoa, that the Adorni with theyr parteners were fayne to geue place, & than was Octavian Fregoso made Duke: so that wpythin the space of one yeare, the affaire of Genoa altered, thre tymes.

1514

This newe Duke payed the Spaniards, that had ayded him, 80000. crownes out of the common treasure, and made Andrea Doria capitaine of. lxxx. galleys, and than besieged the Castel of the Lanterns, which for the quantitee was excellent fayre and stronge. Neuerthelesse as soone as he had gotten it (by composition payyng 22000. duckates to the capitaine) incontinently he raised it to the earth.

6515

The Adorni, with the Flischi than conspyred against the duke, and with a certayne number of men sodenly entred into the citee: Where they were not onelye foughten with, and theyr men repulsed, but also theyr theim selves taken prysoners. Whereupon the Duke, seeing the instabilitie of his affaire, to eschewe further inconuenience, sent ambassadours to the frenche king, and yelded the citee to hym: and sent hym. 2000. foote men, whych did him no small seruise in the battaille beydes Marignano.

After the notable victoie whereof, this Octavian (beyng from the duke chaunged to gouernoure) with. lxxx. other of the chiefeest citelins, went to visite the french kynge at Mollayne, and there lent hym. 80000. crownes towarde his charges.

1516

About this time Cortogoli a Turke, scoured the seas, and did muche hurte to the Christians, whereof an army was made out against him, vnder the leading of the

of the archbishop Fregoso, with Andrea Doria, and others: who sailed into the coast of Barbarie, and sundry forresses, and certayne galleys of Corrogolies burned before Bisert, whych they myght hane burned or broughte awaye, if they had not tended to muche to the spoyle. For that by reason of a soderne tempest they were drinen to forsake the costes, & returne home wryth out ought doinge.

The Cardinall Sauli (a Genowate bozne) was byon^{1517.} suspicion emprisoned by Les than bishop of Rome, and by his parentes raunsomed at. 25000. duckates: and yet for all that (it was thought) that determinate poison was geuen hym in pryson. For within a certayne ^{Poison that} space after his deliuerance he sickened, and in lesse than ^{worketh not} a yere dyed. ^{till a tyme.}

The Moores of newe troubled the seas. Agaynst whom Andrea Doria went once with. vi. galleys, gaue¹⁵¹⁹ the on set on. ix. sayle of theyr, whych he discomfited with soze feight, and toke. vi. of them.

All this while the faction of Fregoso ruled the citee^{1321.} vnder the frenche kynge. Wherefore the Adorni (who were than as banished men) armed. ix. galleys, thinking secretly to enter the citee, and to subuerthe the astate. But they missed of theyr purpose. Nevertheless they ceased not to prouoke the emperour against genoa, promysing him large succours of theyr part: So that thorough theyr procurement, immediatly after the battaile of Bicocke (where the frenche campe was discomfited)^{1521.} the duke of Myllayne, the Marques of Pescara, the Signior Prospero Colonna, and the other imperfall capitaines, with, 20000. men came betoze Genoa, and

1524

by force waikne & sacked it, and takyng the gouernours Octauia, with diuers others (whom they kepte as prisoners) after the departure of the armye, Antoniotto Adorno was made Duke. And so the cyties remayned inperpall. Adolan the. vi. elected byshop passed that waye towarde Rome: and the duke of Burbone with his bande came through to Genoa as he went to rescue Millaine than besieged of the frenche men.

1525

¶ But the frenche kyng shortly after passed the mountaynes in his owne person, and not onely recovered all that he had lost in Lumbardy, Pavia excepted, but also gatte Sauona and Varagine in the ryuer of Genoa. ¶ Wherefoze Don Hugo da Moncada (afterwardes Vice Re of Naples) issued out of Genoa with. xv. saile, set. 4000. men of the genowates on land, thinkyng to gette Varagine, where he was mette with by Iocante Cosso capitaine of the frenchemen, and the Genowates beyng discomfited, hym selfe the Vice Re was taken prisoner. Shortly wherupon folowed the takyng of the french kyng at the battaile of Pavia, who in Maye after his takyng was brought to Genoa, & from thence conueighed into Spayne.

1526

¶ Than the bishop of Rome with the Venetians entered in leage with the frenche kyng agaynst the emperour. And because the citie rested inperpall, therfoze was an armie of. 37. galleys made, that besieged Genoa by sea, to the rescue wherof the emperour sent the Vice Re of Naples out of Spaine with. xxi. saile, who encountered with. vi. galleys of Andrea Doria (that than serued the leage agaynst the emperoure) and foughte together, in which felyght Androw and his men behaued them selves
so halte

so valiantly, that they sparpled the imperial army as
bynde, and toke, ii. of their shippes. For whyche valy-
aunt acte the emperor made him admiral of his army
and knight of his order, and shortly after in porto fino
he toke, vii. galleys, liii. of the citee, and, lii. of Spayne,
so that the siege continewyng still, the citee suffered ex-
treme famine. Wherefore partly by force Caesar Frego¹⁵²⁷
so, with a bande of frenche men by land was receyued
into the towne, and the citee deliuered vnto hym in the
kynges name, without bloudde or spoyle (the duke An-
toniotto Adorno beyng fledde into the castell) and than
was Theodore Triulci Milanese made gouernoure
therof. By whose time the Anion began amongst the^{1528.}
citizens, for there had ben diuision of parties, fyrste the
Guelfes & Gibellines, than the nobles and commons,
and the commons deuided in two, merchantes and ar-
tifiers, and laste of all were the factions Adorni and
Fregosi. So that as longe as these parties reigned,
it was impossible the citee should prospere, seinge them
dayly fall together by the eares as they dyd.

¶ Finally they all agreed to extinguishe these diuisions,
and elected, 28. families to be al nobles, amongst whom
the offices should renne in common & chaunge without
hampyng any party, and so were they brought to accord
that so many yerres before had continuallye contended.

¶ When the french kyng sente a notable armye vnder
the leadyng of Gounser Lautrech, to the siege of Gas-
ples, and because it should be besieged by sea and land:
therefore Andrea Doria, armed. vii. galleys, whereof he
made his cousin Philippino doria capitaine, and sent
hym to Naples, where the Vice Ke, with, vi. galleys is

Of the astate

sued out and fought with him, but Doria prevailed, and the Vice Ke was slaine, & the Marques of Valco with dyuers others taken prysoners.

¶ Whereupon it seemed that the French kynge wared unkynd as well to the common wealith as vnto Andrea Doria. For first he suffered the citee of Sauona to be exempt from the subiection of Genoa, and farther more to haue al manner of prsulleages that genoa had with the custome of salte and other thynges, whiche at lenglhe would be the destruction of Genoa.

And though the Genowais made diuers complaintes herebpon, yet (as thonghe they were not regarded) no reformation was had.

¶ Than the french kyng had taken from Andrea Doria diuers of his prysoners, and amongest all others the prince of Drenge, and besides that had payed hym hys wages but very homely: so that whan Andrewe began to murmour agaynst this, the king wrought meanes to haue had him slaine: whiche comping to his knowlage caused hym to dyspose hym selfe otherwayes, so that whan the tyme of his wages was expired, he bare a white baner, declaring that he was at libertie to serue whom he wolde, and than after certayne practises with his prysoners, the Marques of Valco and Ascanio Colonna, he became the emperours man, and was made prince of Melit by reason whereof the citee began also to be moued agaynst the kyng, remembryng his ingratitude. So that finally by meanes of Andrea Doria the French kings officers were licenced, his galleis by sea put to flight, and some taken, & the citee restored to hie ancient libertie. Notwithstandyng that many thoughte Andrea Doria wolde haue taken the rule of it vnto him selfe.

¶ Peres

Hereupon a counsaile was called, a new reformation established, a duke. bish. gouernours and. bish. pzoctours chosen accordyng to the order that yet remaineth: and the citie ever sens continued in peace, with increase of so much wealth and quietnesse, that at this houre she may be reckened one of the happiest and richest cities of Europe.

And albeit that some stryppes haue bene sens that time for alteration of the estate, as the assaulte that the Conte Guido Rangone made with. 10000. me of the frenche kinges brought out of Lumbardy, and the conspiracy that the Conti di Flisco made now of late (in the which he him selfe was brownd, & Jannerino Doria slaine) yet hath the citie persueued nowe these. 20. yeres in one estate, much through the great wisdom of Andrea Doria, who (refusing the dominion of it, whan he might without difficultee haue taken it vpon him) hath not only restored it to the perfect libertee of a common welth, but also with his notable seruice in thempours affaires (as in hys viages to Tunise & Algier in the rescue of Coron besieged of the Turkes, in defence of Barbarossa hys armies the yeres. 27. and. 28. and in apprelling of the great cozsaies or pirattes by sea) hath so manifestly shewed the imperpall fauour towarde the genowates, that no man is able to hurt them at this day. For though in dede they be not y^e emperours subiectes, yet whan any estate shoulde happen to moue warre against them, it shoulde wel appere, that he tendereth them no lesse than as the deereest subiectes he hath. For the which they likewise at all times haue and yet doe serue him for his money to the vttermost of their powers.

The description of Myllayne.



Amongst other peticuler astatēs of Italye, the Duchie of Myllayne hath beene one the most notable.

For while the house of Visconti reigned, the same valiantly maintained warres of great importance against most puissant princes and powers. And for the interest thereof, the notablest warre of our dates haue hapned betwene the emperour and the french kyng: in so much that fraunces the fyrst of that name, seighting before Pausa against the imperiall armie (ledde by the Marques of Pescara, and the duke of Bourbone) was taken prisoner, and conueighed into Spaine: where for his raunsome, after a yeres imprisonment, he was faine to pledge his two sonnes, and consequently to marie the emperours syster, with other couenauntes to longe to reherse.

And no meruaile, though these two most mighty princes of Christendome so much contended for this onely astate. For though in name (beyng but a Duchie) it should not seeme great, yet in verie dedde bothe for the wealth of the countrey, and for the quantitee, the thing hath beene of as greate reputacion as some realmes of Europe. Wote of doubte there haue beene some Dukes of Myllaine muche greater in territozie, wealthier in reuenues and treasure, more puissant in warres, and finally more honourable in peace, than diuers of them that had kyngly tytles.

As for the riches and beautie of the countrey, I am

a fearde

a fearde to speake of, least to hym that neuer sawe it, I should seeme ouerlarge in the due praysynge of it, and least vnto him againe that hath practised there, I should seeme vnwise to treate of that, that my knowlage is not hable woorthily to set foorth. Neuerthelesse betwene feare and shame this much woul I saye, that sarthe an other peece of ground for beautiful cities and towne, for goodly riuers, fieldes and pastures, and for plentye of fleche, foule, freshe water, fish, graine, wine and frutes, is not to be found againe in al our familiar regions.

¶ I thinke the emperour, that now is lord therof, woul confesse, that he draweth moze mony yere to his purse out of that onely astate, than oute of some of hys realmes. And yet his Myllanese dominyon is not halfe so much at this present, as that that diuers dukes of Myllayne haue had. For whereas the emperour, besydes the citee of Myllaine hath now. vii. or. viii. cities, as Pavia, Lodi, Cremona, Alexandria, Mercelli, Nouara, and Como; Dukes of Myllaine haue had, some. xx. and some. xxx. Cities, and bpwardes. . . .

¶ And some so great, that they haue aspyred to the dominion ouer all Italie: as in the bytise hystorie folowynge moze plainly appeareth. . . .

¶ Neuerthelesse he that nowe shall happen to see the companye of noble men and gentlemen, that are in waier continually attendaunte on the emperours liuetenant, or depaite in Myllaine, shall saye, that the same representeth rather the court of some pntaunte kynge, than the traine of a depaite.

¶ And I thinke for ally, that Don Ferrando Gonzaga, now liuetenant there, richly arrayed in the hightably accompanied, and with a greater presence of maiestie,

Wynes of
Wyllaine.

giffes, than the emperour him selfe doeth in Germany
The like whereof with rather the more is to be sayde
of the Wyllaine gentiwomen, who in sumptuous ap-
paraille may compare with the best: specially in the or-
namentes of theyr Charottes, with coverings of cloth
of golde, of beluettes, of silkes, and a thousande sortes
of embroderies. There is almoste no craftesmans wyfe
in Wyllayne, that hath not hir gowne of silke, and hir
chayne of Golde. A thyng that should seeme rather
meruallous than credyble. But the craftesmen there
are so excellent in theyr doynges, and the women so ex-
perts in silke workes, that it is no wonder though theyr
gayne grow to the bying of gaye geare.

Wyllayne
situate.

Finally the citee of Wyllaine standyng in the herte of
the pleasauntest and fayrest plaine of all Christendom,
is serued of all delectable and necessary thynges that
are to be desyred for mans sustentacion. Honourable
for the courte, gallant for gentilmen, herboroughe for
souldiours, delicate for dames, riche for merchauntes,
and wealthy for artificers. But for notable or sumptu-
ous buildynges, it maye not be compared with Ales-
nice, Rome, or Florence. For all be it, the houses be
great and fayre within, yet outwardly it is nothing of
that beautie and pompe, that those other citees bee: by
reason that for the most part the Wyllaine buildyng is
all of bricke, because harde ston and marble is not to
be had by a great waye of.

Nevertheless the Domo of Wyllaine (beyng the
Cathedral church) is one of the rarest workes of our
time, built all of fine marble, so well grauen and cutte,
that the workemanshype is wonder. But it is of so

brutish

inmeasurable greatnesse, that most men doubt, whether euer it woulde be finished or not: though it haue many thousande duckates of yearely reuenue in good land towarde the contynuaunce, and a number of wo:kemen dayly labouryng thereon.

¶ But what speake I of the church, the castell of Myllaine being so neere: which in mine opinion is the wo:khest and strongeste of all Europe. For it hath ward within ward, so:treffe diuided from so:treffe, that one may holde against an other, walles of endlesse strength and large dyches wel watered, as saye builde ouer all as nedeth to bee, and so well fortified, that withoute faimpe it is impregnable. And this concernyng the countrey, citie and people of Myllaine in general, that suffice.

Castell of
Myllaine

¶ The beginning and successe of the State of Myllayne.

AS Iuse and diuers other autho:rs wyte, the yere before the comynge of Christe. 259. from the edification of Rome. 460. and from the beginning of the wo:ld, 4860. in the tyme of Assuere, otherwyle called Cirus and Longimanus, sonne of Xerxes, and nephew to Dario kynges of Persie: The citie of Myllaine was rather augmented than newly builde by certayne frenchmen called Senoni or Insubrii, people of low Italye, now called Semans, where likewyle is a towne called Myllayne. These were the frenchmen that fyrst passed the mountaynes, and settled them selves in Lumbardy, & that afterwarde went vnder the load

Of the astate

dyng of Brenne to rome, burned the citie, and besieged the Campidoglio though at last they were discomfited. Finally in proceſſe of tyme beyng becomen *Milaineſe*, and made ſubiectes to the Romaynes, Amilcare the Affricane at his coming into Italy, perſuaded them to rebel, whereſoꝛe they were foughten with and wyſe ouerthrowen: firſte by Furio the Pretor, and after by Claudio Marcello, who in the later conflict ſlew Mago brother of Hannibal, with 37000. Affricanes and *Milaineſe* together: and therfoꝛe at hys returne vnto rome was receiued with triumphe.

*Milaines
name.*

Milowe whereſoꝛe it was called *Milaine* be two oppoſitions, the one is, that it toke that name of the other *Milaine* in *Brittaine*: the other, by reason the foꝛme of a farowynge ſolwe halfe couered with woulle (ſignifying fatteneſſe) was found at the digging of the foundation, they called it *Milana*, as who ſhould ſaye halfe woulle. But how ſoener the occaſion thereof proceeded, I fynde that it had diuers names, as *Subria* *Melopia* *Paucetia*, *Alba*, & *Ercolea* of *Ercole*, *Malsimino* that furniſhed it with houſes, and cloſed it with walles: and alſo builded a temple in it to the honour of *Hercules*, which is nowe conuerted to be the church of, *S. Laurence*. Thus after the triumphe of Claudio Marcello, *Milaine* encreaſed moze and moze, & reſted in peace about 500. yeres, beyng in maner the chiefe markette of all Italy. Inſomuche that many Romaynes came thither, to dwell, and manye tymes the ſelfe Emperours came thither to ſolace. But at length, in the tyme of *Sainto Ambroſe* biſhop there, whan the ſect of *Arrians* began, it was ſomewhat troubled: and ſhortly after deſtroyed by kynge

by kyng Attila, called of the Italians flagellum dei,
 ¶ And albeit that it was after reedified, yet by Tortila ^{Attila}
 and the emperor Iustinians capitaines, it was for the
 more parte agayne and agayne destroyed. And by the
 Lumbards also it was many times soe bexed. But last ¹¹⁶³
 of all Saluano, (who beyng taken prisoner by the em-
 perour Barbarossa, by escape was retourned) seeing af-
 terwards the same Federico occupied with the french
 warres, reedified it of new, and dysynge without issue,
 left it to his citesins: who (with fauoure of their neygh-
 bours) gouerned the same as a common wealthe, the
 space of .52. yeres, tyl Giouanni Torrigiani, a princel: <sup>Giouanni
Torrighiani
Tyranny</sup>
 pal citesin vsurped the dominion by force.

¶ This Torrigiani (as he that was cruell and despy-
 rous to make his estate durable) reigned daylye newe
 crimes and offences against his citesins, and specialtye
 against the Visconti, to ríde them out of the way.
 And though he cloked his crueltie with the best colour
 of iustice that he could imagine outwardely, so that no
 man for feare durste withstande him, yet God takynge
 vengeance suffered hym to be discomfited, and slayne
 besyde Parma, where he had ben two yeres generall of
 the emperours army against the bishop of Rome.

Now vpon the death of Torrigiani, the Milanesie be-
 gan to contend amongst them selves, so longe, that at
 last Martino Torrigiani toke the dominion vpon him, <sup>Martino
Torrighiani</sup>
 and kept it two yeres, in whych time beyng aduertised,
 that Ezelino, lord of Verona, with many banished Mi-
 lanese came in armes against him, he issued out into the
 field with his power, fought with Ezelino, barre, and
 toke him prisoner, and so beyng victoríous, and of the

The state

Philippo
Corrig

age of .So. yerē, dyed at Scuzino.

¶ After hym succeeded his sonne Philippo, who beyng but weake hearted and grossewitted, made neuertheless warre against the Cremonese, sacked Como, took Bergamo and Nouara, and finally expelled the familie of Tornielli. After whych enterprises he died, leauynge the astate to his sonne Napoleone, that after happened to be slayne. Unto whom succeeded hys sonne named Philippo, that by meane of the archebyschoppe Ottone Visconti was afterwarde expelled.

Napoleone

Visconti

It is to be vnderstand, that before the time of Giouanni Corrigiani, the house of Visconti was equall wth the best of Millaine: beyng descended of the erles of Anglera, that before time had ben lordes of Millayne: for the name of Visconti, was taken of Ottone Sonne of Elipandro, who by reason he was lord both of Angiera and of Millaine called him selfe Visconte, as who shold say, twyse Erle.

Ottone

This Ottone being gone in a crossy wth other princes to conquere the holye lande, fought there wth a Sarasine hande to hand, and ouercame him, and because the Sarasine for his enseigne caried on his crest an adder, wth a lyttel childe in his mouth, Ottone as a perpetual memozy of his victozy, vsed the same euer after in hys armes.

¶ But now to come to the purpose, aboute the yeaer of grace. 1262, there remained. iiii. byetherne of the house of Visconti on liue, that is to wete, Ouone before named, Vberto, Iacopo, and Gasparo, sonnes of Vberto de Visconti.

Ottone
Visconti

¶ This Ottone (the archebyschop being than a banished man)

Handwritten signature

Handwritten flourish

Of the astate

azo (so called because in the nyghte of his birthe the
rockes crowed more than they were wonte) the seconde
Giouanni, the. iiii. Stefano, and the. iiii. Lucchino.

Galeazo.

This Galeazo succeeded his father, and goynge after-
wardes with Henry the emperour to Rome, was there
made capitaine of the lighte horsemen, and aboute that
tyme begat two sonnes, the one called Azone, and the
other Marco. His courage was so great, that when the
emperoure Lodouico di Baniera required a certayne
summe of money of the Milanes, Galeazo withstode it.
Upon displeasure whereof Lodouico toke hym prysos-
ner, and banished his sonnes Azone and Marco.

But at length, at the instance of Castruccio Luc-
chese, Galeazo was deliuered. And finallye beyng in
company of the same Castruccio at the siege of Pistoia
sickened and dyed in the towne of Pestia.

Azone.

After whose death Azone and Marco (for a certayne
summe of money payed before hand) obtained of the em-
perour Lodouico the restitution of the state of Myl-
layne. And so Azone as elder brother haupng the do-
minion, Marco in his name gat the cities of Lucca,
and his uncle Lucchino the cities of Bergamo, Brescia
and Pavia: wherby Azone became great, and so hygh
of stomacke, that remembryng the iniuries doon to him
by the emperour Lodouico: when he wolde haue passed
throughe Myllaine (as lord of all Italye) he clos'd the
gates against him: refusing to accepte him for his bee-
ter. Thersfore not without good cause was he both
feared and esteemed, speciallye for his approued valy-
antnesse: for beyng sent of his father to helpe Castruc-
cio, he fought with the florentines neere to Fucecchio,

discom-

discomfited, and pursued them euen to the gates of Florence: and laiyng siege to the citee, remaigned there 32 del certayne daies, for no man durst issue out to meddle with him. Whiche was the fyrste enterpryse of the Visconti against the Florentines.

¶ After whych Azone, throughe helpe of Castruccio, became lord of the Alco Pascio, and of Bologna: and as some say, beyng in the campe on a daye, after he had broken his fast: puttinge his sallet on his head (whych before had lien on the earthe) there issued out an adder, that glyded downe alongest his face, withoute dooyng hym anye hurte; whereof it folowed, that the Visconti bled the adder in theyr armes. And thoughe it so may wel be true, yet this seconde opynion of the adder doeth not so much satisfie me as the fyrst.

¶ Finally Azone dyng without issue, his vnckles Lucchino and Giouanni rested in his place, and were confirmed in the estate by Benedetto the .xi. bishop of rome as vicars of the Church: with condycyon, that after the death of the Emperour Lodouico di Bauiera, the State of Myllaine shoulde be holden of the dominion of the church.

Lucchino as elder brother, toke vpon him to gouerne; and proued a veray righteous and mercyfull man. He granted recōcilement vnto many of the citelins before tyme confyned by Azone: and buylded manye deuoute places in Myllayne. He gatte manye towneys parte by force and part with loue, and in maner renued the walles of Bergamo at hys owne cosse. He reformed many thynges in Bressa, and so finally dyed.

After him his brother Giouanni succeeded, who incon-
sistently

The state

finently called home Matteo, Bernabo, and Galeazzo, sonnes of hys brother Stefano, befoze time banyshted by Lucchino.

¶ And albeit, that this Giouanni was an archebischop, yet being moze geuen to armes than to the church, thas rough the valiantnesse of Galeazzo he gat Parma, Lodi, Cremona, Bergamo, Genoua, Sauona and manye other towne: and finally dyed, leauyng his estate dyuyded betweene Bernabo and Galeazzo.

Bernabo

¶ This Bernabo helde warre longe tyme with the byshoppe of Rome for the citee of Bologna, that together wyth Genoua had rebelled agaynst hym: and finallye toke for Bologna a great summe of money, and soz bare Genoa, because it had been befoze redeemed at hys handes for the summe of .600000. duckates. But some saye, he was enforced to lette it alone, by reason that in one selfe tyme he was troubled of the Romish legate, of philippino di Gonzaga, and of Cane della Scala, for the thynges of Bressa, where he had been ones discomfited.

He had no wyfe one of the daughters of Mastino della Scala, a woman that for hir vnrasonable pryde was surnamed. La Reina, the Queene. And had by hir. 14. chyldren, wherest. 1111. were sonnes.

To Lodouico the eldest he gaue the citee of Cremona. To Carlo, Parma: To Risolfo, Bergamo, and to Mastino, Lodi.

¶ The rest beyng daughters he married on this wyse. La Verde, vnto Leupoldo duke of Austria, graundfather to the emperor Frederico the thyrde.

La Taddea, to the Duke of Bauiera,

La Vae

La Valentina, to Peter kyng of Cypus.

La Catherina, to Giangaleazo Visconti his nephew

La Antonia, to Federico kyng of Sicilia

La Maddalena, to the duke of Bauiera againe.

La Agnesa, to Francesco Gonzaga.

La Lisabetta, to Ernesco duke of Monaca in Baviera.

La Angiolella, to Federico the younger: and La Lucia to Lodouico Duke of Angiers, eldest sonne to the French kyng. And after to Baldasar Marques of Spina, and finally to Edmond, Erle of Kente, sonne to the kyng of Englands. And with the maryage of euerie of these daughters he payed an. 100000. duckat. Besides these he had. iiii. bastarde daughters, Bernarda, Ricciarda, Lisabetta, and Margherita. And five bastarde sonnes, Ambrosio, Pietro, Lancelotto, Galeotto, and Sagramoro.

On the other syde Galeazo begatte on hys wyfe Bl. Galeazo. anca, daughter of Amone duke of Saualo, a sonne named Giangaleazo, and a daughter named La Isolante whiche afterwarde was maryed to Lionell Duke of Clarence, and sonne to the kyng of Englands. At the sumptuous feast of whose maryage Petrarcha happened to be presente. How be it, some haue written, that he was maryed to the French kynges sonne, with the dowry of an. 100000. crownes. But how so euer it were, his husband lyued not passyng fye monethes after the mariage, and thortye thereupon the father Galeazo also dyed.

After whose death his sonne Giangaleazo growen to full age, goten disaides the state with his vncle Bernabo

Giangaleazo.

on this manner. He kepte to hym selfe Paula, Cortona, Alexandria, Pouara, and the other towines neere vnto the Alpes, with the one halfe of Wyllayne: and gaue vnto Bernabo Parma, Viaczza, Cremona, Lodi, Creina, Bergamo, Como, and the other halfe of Wyllayne, with this aduantage: that so; as muche as Bernabo was the mo;re auncient, he shoulde dwell in Wyllayne, and Giangaleazo in Paula. Thus beyng agreed after a certayne time Giangaleazo was aduertised by his wyfe, how Bernabo hir father & hys vncle, had byuers tymes soughte his death, to rydde hym oute of the state: so that Giangaleazo incontinentlye determined to p;euent hym, and goyng vnto Wyllaine vnder pretence of pastime or of some other busynesse, Bernabo (to honour hym the mo;re) issued out against hym, and so was taken tyed in prison, and parte of his sonnes slayne, parte hanged. Whiche acte onely excepted (thoughe it was not yett all agaynst reason) this Giangaleazo in all hys doynges was accompted so worthy, noble, and valiant a prince, that of the people he was called . Il Conte di Virtu, that is to say, The Erie of vertue. For he was not onely beautifull of personage, but also learned, eloquent, wise, hardy, & liberal And was the first that euer was inuested duke of Wyllayne, payyng therefore to the emperour Vincellao an. 100000. ducates. After the obtaynyng of this honour he encreased his estate by the getting of Verona, Viaczza, Padua, and Bologna.

He discomfited the armes of the league made betwene the Florentines & Bolognese with other their confederates at Casalecchio, & brought the Florentines at length to that takinge, that had he not died the rather, they

they must nedes haue yelded to bene his sub'ctes.

He ouercame Antonino della Scala, and buylded the saye palayce in Pausa, with that goodly librarye, that yet is seen there, walled the parke aboute, beyng of a great circuite, and edified the Charterhouse, that to this houre amongst the beaustiful buildynges of the world, may be rekered one of the rarest.

He brought Italy into such feare, that the Pisani, the Senesi, the Perugini, the Ascesi, and the Lucchesi willingly became his men, so that he sounce hym selfe lord ouer .29. citiees, and thought to haue bene kyng of Italy, if death had not so sone taken hym.

He had two wifes, the one called Lisabetta, doughter to the kyng of Boeme, by whome he had a doughter named la Valentina, married afterwarde to the duke of Myens, with the dowre of the Erledome of Asie, that hath ben cause of no small trouble in Italye: and the other wife named Caterina de Visconti, by whom he had two sonnes Giouanni, and Philipppo Maria.

He had one bastarde called Gabriello, who afterwarde sold Pisa to the florentines.

Finally this notable prince at Marignano dyed: and ¹⁴⁶² accoꝝdyng to his owne order was from thence caried to the sayd Charterhouse besides Pausa, and there buried.

¶ Chan succeeded in the affaie Gianmatia the eldresse sonne, whose dealinges were so greuous to the Milanesse, without any their deservyng, that hearynge masse on a day in the churche, thꝛough the surfe of the people and of his owne men together he was slayne, first causyng his mother to die in prison, for ofte warnyng him of that that happened in dede.

1433

Philippo
Maria

He was wonte to say many times (in excusing of his errors) that in a greate house it was necessarye there should growe men of diuers sortes, and that he therfore bled the contrary of his fathers doings, so that through his crueltie and his death together, many citiees rebelled, in such wise that the Milanese were constrained to call the sonnes of Bernabo to the Douchy, who enioied the same butyl that Philipppo maria recovered the dominion, and dring them out merite with one of theim called Nestore in a skirmish, and slewe hym.

This Philipppo was first lord of Mantua, and had married Beatrice the daughter, or (as other say) sometime wife of Fazzino Cane della Scala: for none intent but because he was inheritor of many layze lordshippes beyonde the Po, and had also very much money. By meane wherof sleayng Crabrino lord of Verona he gat that citie to hym selfe.

He was constrained to yelde Bologna, Furl, and Imola to the byshop of Rome. Neuerthelesse he gat Genoa, though afterwarde he lost it agayne.

He lykewise toke Bressa, whych beyng recovered agaynst him by the venetians, caused betwene them very longe and cruell warre. Wherein on the Venetian side were capitains Francesco Carmignola, Gionani Malanolta, Stanfrancesco Gonzaga, and Hanni Strozzi, a Florentine knyght. And on the side of Philipppo agaynst the venetians were Francesco Sforza, Agnola da Pergoleto, the one and other Nicolo Guerriero & Piccolino, & one Fierauate da Perugia, with the helpe also of Alfonso kynge of Naples, who beyng before tyme brought prisoner to Philipppo by the genowates, and by
hym

hym restozed to lybertee: lyke a saythfull friende (for a great whyle after) succoured hym in al his busynesse.

¶ Thus whan Philipppo had synghed the enterpryse agaynst the Venetians, and by meane of those his capytaines gotten Placenza, Como and Lodi, he made the Marques of Monferrato so asfearde of hym, that wyllynge he yelded vnto Philipppo's hande Mercelli, Alexandria, and Asti. And Picolo da Este of Ferrara came to visite hym, renderinge Parma, that befoze had ben taken from Ottone, and knowlageynge hym selfe to holde the citee of Reggio in fee of Philipppo.

The citee of Florence fearyng the power of this man, entred in leage with the Venetians, whose two armies vnited together were foughten withall by certayne of Philipppo's capytaynes, in the Countie of Farenza, and there quercomen.

¶ Notwithstanding that the same victozy was of much lesse importunace, than that which the noble florentine Cosmo di Medici obtaigned in the plaine of Anghisti agaynst the armye of Philipppo, led by Picolo Piccinatino, towarde the florentine damage: for the whyche victozy Cosmo at hys retourne to Florence was called father of hys countrey.

¶ But for all that those warres had neuer ende as long as Philipppo lyued: who finally fell oute wyth the foze named Alfonse kynge of Naples, and by force restozed the Queene Giouanna to hir possession.

He receiued into Myllayne Martine the .v. bysheppe of Rome, as he retourned from the counsaile of Constance: and married his daughter Bianca vnto Francesco Sforza.

¶ Finally finding hym selfe fallen in great aduersitee what thorough the blindenesse that toke hym in his age, what through the losse of Cenoa, and what through the discouragement of his armie at Casale Maggiore: In following the victorie wherof the Venetians had already passed the river of Adda, and scoured the countrey euen to the gates of Wyllaine, he at laste a littell before his death, bequeathed his estate by testamente vnto the kyng Alfonso, as to one the dearest friend he had.

Philipppo
Warta
Described.

¶ This Philipppo had ben a prince of a subrell nature, witty, a lover of trauayle, couetouse to learne and to haue, and yet liberal in geuyng, easie of pardoning, but suspitious oute of measure, & so lighte of credence, that many tymes he wongefully ride ouer of the waye the dearest friendes he had. ¶ Wherof it folowed, that in his most businesse he founde hym selfe vterly habandoned, leauyng the state of Wyllaine in maner naked.

For the duke of Milens in the righte of his wyfe Valentina, daughter of Giangaleazzo, enforced hym selfe to attaine the possession, whych the emperour Federico for his parte in tytell of the empyre deuyed.

Testament
broken

¶ But Francesco Sforza, as sonne in lawe of the deade Philipppo, withstode them bothe, insomuche that thorough this rumour the Wyllains rent the testament in peeces, and toke on them theyr liberte, electyng e. xij. men to diuise order for the gouernaunce of theyr ciities, wherunto they had the helpe of Carlo Gonzaga, who beyng lately departed from the campe of Sforza, was present in Wyllaine the same time. And so the new officers beyng ordeyned, there were manye of those nobles slaine, that were knowen fauourable to the part of Francesco

celso

celco, whose power & courage the Myllanese feared much more than the puissance of France, or of the Emperour.

The father of this Francesco, named Mutio, was borne besides the castel of Cotignuola: and following the warres first serued the soldiers with carrying of woode and water. Than getting a little with sackynge here and there, became so strong and hardy, that many tymes he would by force take the bootie from his owne companions, and therfore was called Sforza.

From whiche base condition he beganne to waue an aduenturer, and to seight on horsebacke, so that finally he became a capitaine: and in short space was iudged equal vnto Braccio Montone, the valiauntest and honourablest general of those dayes.

But at last (after he had long time serued the Queene Giouanna againste Kinge Alfonse in the Realme of Naples, and in other places dooen many notable enterpryses) couetyng to save a lake in the riuer of Pescara, he was drowned hym selfe, and coulde neuer after be found nor heard of.

Than was this Francesco his sonne firste waged of the forenamed Queene, and after the Venetians, than of Philipppo, and after Philipppo of the Myllanese againste the Venetians, and lastlye of the Venetians againste the Myllanese. In all whiche doynges as well in the realme, as in Lombardie, he evermore shewed great prouffes of his worthinesse: and at last with helpe of the Venetians came against Myllaine and besieged it, insomuche that after longe resistance, constrained with hunger, & deceyued of theyr promysed helpe from the Venetians, the Myllanese (firste sleayng the Venetians

Of the astate

(an ambassadour) accepted Francesco for they prince
 Who not longe after (Establishyng the thynges of My-
 laine at his pleasure) made warre to king Alfonso, and
 to the Venetians bothe: in whiche warres he was ser-
 ued of these valiaunt capitaines, Tiberto Brandolino,
 Nicolo Guertiero, Dolce dell' Anguillara, Carlo di
 Capo Basso, and Jacopo Piccinino, whiche Jacopo
 was promised to haue to wife his daughter Prustiana,
 before tyme married vnto Iano Fregoso duke of genoa
 Now be it, the duke Francesco after wardes for suspy-
 cion caused this Jacopo to be slayne.

Aboures the same time, whylest Eugenio bishoppe of
 rome was occupied at the counsaile of Basile, Francesco
 (as hys enemye) attempted to take the state of Parca
 from hym. And there kept warre longe tyme wyth
 kyng Alfonso, whom the sayde byshop had sent thither
 against hym: where they saye Francesco was defied by
 Nicolo Piccinino, & beyng challenged to feight hande
 to hande, would in no wyse accepte it. That notwithstanding
 he was vndoubtedly a worthy man of armes,
 the most happye and valiaunte of all other in hys tyme.
 For in those .xvi. yeares, that he reigned Duke, he in
 maner extinguished the sedition of the parties of Guel-
 fi and Gibellini, insomuche that the Genowayes sal-
 len in dyscorde amongst them selves, seeing the good
 gouernaunce of this duke Francesco, with the louing
 enterteinement of his subiects, willingly embraced hym
 for theyr lord. He loued muche Cosmo di Medici of
 Florence, by whose helpe and counsaile it is thought he
 prospered not a litel in the begynnyng of his astate: se-
 yng that Cosmo (as soone as he was made Duke) sent
 ambassa-

ambassadors vnto hym, reioysing at his prosperitee. For the frendshipp wherof francesco afterwarde succoured Piero di Medici in the cōsuracion made against him by Luca Pitti, whom Borso duke of Ferrara fauoured.

This Duke francesco reedysed the litte forte in the Castell of Myllayne, called Cloue, and buldoed manye deuoute places. Neuerthelesse in hys age he was somewhat blamed for hys disordinate loue to women, moze than hys affaite, hys age, and hys passed vertues dyd allowe.

Finally finishyng the course of this lyfe, he lefte (by his wife Bianca). v. sons Galeazo, Lodouico, surnamed Moro Ascanio, philippo, Ottauiano, and a daughter named Hippolita Maria that afterwarde, was maryed to Alfonso duke of Calabria.

When Galeazo beyng in the warres in france wyth ^{Galeazo,} kynge Lewys, heard of his fathers death, he retourned to Myllayne: where he was receyued as duke. And all be it, he was expert in armes, yet did he neuer shewe any honourable prouffe thereof: as he that entered into an affaite ouermuche wealthye and quyet. And because he had so muche felciete, that he thought it impossible euer to decay, he set so litte by men and by vertue, that many of his owne ciuelins and seruauntes hated hym. And they whom he fauoured moste conspyred his death and slewe hym. The princypall wherof was one Graiādreā Lampugnano that with his owne handes first strake him, in the church of saincte Stephen, when Galeazo had his garde of Halberders rounde aboute hym. Whiche Halberders incontinently slewe

Of the astate

the same Giuādreā (that sleepeing through the woman
happened to be tangled by the spurre) made after the
maner as he was serued, that slew Asoruball in spaine.
¶ And albeit that this Galeazo through his delycate or
wanton life, became odious & vnwozthy to them that
delicet in chieualry, and also hated of them that had the
fairest wifes and daughters, with whom he wold be fa-
miliar (as the same went) yet the commons lamented
him a great deale moze than many of his predecessours
because that durynge his life they remaigned in peace.
For in peace whan the souldour doeth begge, the plow
prospereth: and in warre whan the plow man is fledde,
the souldour plafeth the swyne.

Giouanni.

¶ These thinges beyng thus happened, Giuanni, the
sonne of Galeazo, thā but a childe, succeeded in the astate,
vnder the gouernance of his mother Bona, and of one
Cecco, that longe tyme had bene broughte vp in that
house.

This Cecco was borne in Calabria of verpe low de-
gree. But through his wisdom he became noble and
of so good credite with Francesco Sforza, that he go-
uerned most thinges in Myllaine.

¶ Finally, whan Galeazo was deade, to the extent that
Giouanni might the moze quietly enjoy the dominyon
he sent away his other brethren into exile. But at lēgth
Rodouico Moro, vncle to Giouanni was reuoked by
the people: and incontinently vpon his retour Cecco
beheaded, and Bianca the mother exiled.

¶ After whych time Giouanni remayned in the astate
aboue .xii. yeares. But his prouise was so simple, that
in maner by force he committed the rule of all thynges
to Lodouico

to Lodouico. By whose meanes (as he that was not yet contented) some say Giouanni at length was poisoned, and dyed in Pavia, leauinge issue a sonne called francesco Sforza begotten on his wife Isabella daughter of Alfonso kynge of Naples.

Now incontinently as Giouanni was deade, this Lodouico ^{Lodouico Sforza} won both of the people, and also by consent of the emperour Maximilian was proclaymed Duke, and shortly after married his neece Bianca, daughter of his brother Galeazo vnto the same Maximilian, takyng also vpon him the protection of his nephewe the yonge Francesco Sforza, and of his mother Isabella.

Then married he Beatrice the daughter of Ercole duke of Ferrara, and begat on hir Francesco Sforza, with a secounde sonne, in whose birth the mother dyed.

This Sforza was a wittie man, of bettay good disposition, and one that deuyred muche in the administration of iustice, in peinyng, and in cunnyng men.

In the begynnynge of his astate he entred in amytie with the florentines, the Senese, the Bolognese, with Ercole da Este, with the Marques of Mantua, with Lewis king of fraunce, and with Alfonso kynge of Naples. But lyke as he was easy to enter into frendshipp, so for a trifle wold he suddenly bzeake with the best of them.

He helped Charles Duke of Sauoy against Lodouico Marques of Saluzzo, and confined his brother the Cardinall Ascanio, because in Ferrara he had practysed dyuers new thynges agaynst him.

He toke Boccacino by siege, that had rebelled agaynst the Romayne church, and therby gracified the bishop of Rome.

See it

with

With his great polycy he recovered Genoa, that be-
foze had rebelled agaynste hym. He founde the meanes
to bring Charles the. viii. frenche kyng into Italye, to
expulse kyng Alfonso out of Naples, because he had be-
foze taken him for his enemy, for sekynge to mainteigne
the affaite of Glouanni the sonne of Galeazo, agaynste
hym.

This comyng of the frenche kyng not only annoied
Alfonso, but also troubled all Italye.

Finally he made warre against the Venetians, whych
dured til that after the death of kyng Charles, Lewys
succeeded in the realme of fraunce, who hated so muche
this duke Moro, that beyng entred in leage wpyth the
Venetians: Moro was constrained to fies into Al-
maine, where he remained wpyll the frenchemen toke
Millaine, and the venetians Cremona & Gieradadda
How be it not long after the frenchmen thonghte thes
yll gouernaunce were dyuen from Millaine, & Lodo-
uico renoked home out of Douchelande, who after his
arrruall, takyng Ponara, and trauyslinge to chace the
frenche men out of Italye, was betrayed of the Douches-
men, and bothe he and Ascano taken and ledde into
fraunce, where finally he dyed.

Francesco

This Lodouico reisyng in his dominion, vsed to an-
swere them that counsailed him to encrease his treasure
with taxes and tallages, that the office of a good shep-
herde was to sheere his sheepe, and not to flate them.

Thus Lodouico Moro taken and deade, as is be-
foresayd, his sonne Francesco shortly after the battaile
of Rauenna, being thā but tender of yeres, was establi-
shed duke of Myllayne by the emperours meanes, and
continued

continued in the estate til the coming of Fraunces the frenche kynge into Italye, who wyth the helpe of the Venetians chased him away, and gatte the state of Myllaine by force, leauynge Mounser de Lautrech gouernour of the same, so that francesco Sforza withdrew hym to Trent, and there remained til the French men throught their tyranny and yll gouernaunce, became so hated of the Milanese, that at lengthe they were chased away, and francesco returned home: though in effecte he enioyed it not longe. For the frenche kynge shortlye after with a great power came in his owne person into Italy, & so chased francesco againe oute of the state of Myllaine, and prospered much in his warres there, vntyl the iourney of Paula, where he with manye of his nobles were taken prisoners. After whych discomfiture francesco Sforza, by the emperours fauour was ones againe restored to the douchie of Myllaine, & continued in the same til throught enuye and malyce of some pike-thanks, the emperone was vntruly persuaded, that the sayd francesco was not so faithfull towarde his master, as his goodnesse had merited, so that the emperour conceiuyng an vnkyndenesse & a mistrust in him, constrained him by force not onely to habandone Myllaine, but also for his sauegarde to flee into the castell, whych after a verys longe siege he yelded vnto the imperialles, to depart frely with bagge and baggage. And so (beyng letted of the imperialles from goinge to Como where he entended to sodgourns, tyl he might clere his innocency towarde the emperour) in maner halfe desperate, he agreed with the french men: & dyelwe to the campe of the leage, that than was made againste

Of the astate

the Emperoure.

Finally he went vnto Cremona, ill after the taking of saincte Polo, the Frenchemens doynges in Italye went all to wacke. Wherefoze seeing the emperour Charles the.v. that nowe is come to Bologna to bee crowned, he went simplye thither vnto hym: and there submittyng hym selfe with tuff excules, reconcered bys magistrees fauour, with restitution of the astate of Myllaine, vpon these condicions folowynge: That the Duke shoulde marye the emperours neece, daughter of the kyng of Denmarke and of the emperours syster: that he shoulde paye the emperoure nine hundred thousande duckates in tenne yeres by equal porcions: And finally, that dyngge withoute issue, he shoulde leaue his astate of inheritaunce to the emperoure.

Incontinently byd which agreement Alexandro Bentiuogli, as vice Duke, with diuers other officers, were sent to Myllaine, to leauey the fyfthe paymente of this money, whych was easilye gathered by. For the Myllanese couetyng the recourue of theyr duke (whome for his gentil & temperate gouernance in tymes past they hertely loued) wickerd not to freigne them selves for his reliefe, in suche wyse, that though theyr customes and taxes were doubled by reason of these paymentes, yet theyr hope of better life to come vnder their duke, made them not to esteeme theyr present charges.

Then came the emperours neece, the daughter of Denmarke, to Myllaine, and there was moste solemnely received with infinite triumphes: and finally married to the duke in presence of the Cardinal of Mantua, with such feastes and plaies afterwarde, as so greate a marriage

riage requyred.

¶ But ere a yere went about, the Duke (thzough grea-
infymities, blinded of one eye) dyed without issue: lea-
uyng the affaire of Myllaine wholly to the empersure,
who euer sens hath governed the same by his licuten-
nantes. The fyrst wherof was named Antonino di
Leua, so lame a man of his limmes, that he vsed to be
carried on men shoulders: but on the other syde so pru-
dent and ware a capitaine in his doing, as in his daies
was not lightly to be founde agayne.

¶ Next vnto whom folowed the Marques of Vasco a
very honourable and courtlye man, but not altogether
so happye in hys procedynges as suche noble men cou-
nette to be.

¶ Finally after his death the emperours hath placed
there the famousse Don Ferrando Gonzaga, vncle to
the Duke of Mantua, whose prosperities hath not one-
lye been greate in feates of warre, but also wonderfull
in purchasing of fame, thzough the sincere and rare ad-
ministracion of iustice, that he vseth.

I call it not rare for other cause, than for the rare
correction he hath vsed against the offendours, wherby
he hath wonne the herres of them that loue iustice.

As for the progresse of the thynges happened in the
State of Myllaine, sens the death of Francesco Sforza
(in whome it seemeth the house of Visconti to haue ta-
ken his ende) I shal not neede here to make any reher-
sall, because on the one syde the dooynges of the same
haue not been very great; and on the other side they are
present and familiare.

Of the astate of Mantua.



MHe citee of it selfe is verye fayre and strong, and standeth ryche, by reason the Countreys aboute are playne, & no lesse plentyfull than the other partes of Lumbardy. It is strong, because the riuer of Adigio, (or Mentio as some call it) fallynge oute of the lake of Garda throughte the towne of Peschiera, passeth to the Po by Mantua, and maketh about it suche a poole, that thre partes of the citee are defended with the bredth of a quarter of a myle of water every waye: whych in some places is deepe, & in some shalowe, that it can not be passed wth botes. And than in the necessarye places such bulwarkes are made to defende, that it semeth impossyble to be wonne by assaults on that syde.

And for the .iiii. parte, whych is towards the west, it is very wel fortiffied with stronge wall, and bulwarkes, and a large dyche well watered, besydes that the grounde on that side is in maner all marishe, or at the least so ranke, that in the drierst of the sommer there can none artilletry passe, so that the citee is vndoubtedly one of the strongest that I haue seen.

The dominion that the duke hath is not greate, neyther of circuite nor of reuenewe. For at the best (as I haue ben enformed) the rétes neuer passed an. 100000 duckates a yere, and many times it hath ben much lesse by reason it is not standyng, but riseth of customes and casualtees.

It is true, that the state is much encreased by reason
of Mon

of Monferrato, that the last Duke had by the marriage of his wyfe, so that now the Duke of Mantua's rentes by estimation are reckened at . 130000. buckares or thereaboutes.

And as for notable buildynges in Mantua, other than suche as be vniuersall in the goodly citees of Italie, I finde none, sayyng certayne proper lodgeinges that the Duke Federico deceased, hath made on the south parte of his palace, whych undoubtedly are galant and rishe. Wherefore procedyng nowe to the originall of the citee and citie, with the successe therof hitherward.

The Originall of Mantua.

By agreement of moſte authours I finde, that the people of Mantua are descended of those aunciente Tuscans, that before the siege of Troy departed out of Lydia in Asia, and vnder the leadynge of theyr prince Tirreno, came and inhabited the region of Italie. Parte of whiche Tuscans, chosynge afterwarde the place of Mantua for theyr habitation, builded the citie, before the comynge of Eneas into Italie, and before the edificacyon of Rome, more than . 300. yeres. The capitaine of whiche people at that tyme was named Dgno, a very expert man in Astronomy, or in the science of diuynacyon. For his vertue in which science, folowynge the Greke wordes Mantia, he named the citie Mantua. Now be it, Dance (speakynge thereof) referreth the beginning of Mantua to Manto, daughter of Tiresia, kynge of Thebes: whom the poetes feigne, lost his sight for iudgeing betwene Iupiter and Iuno,

that the woman in the vse of nature had more pleasure than the man: taken for iudge in this matter, because (through the killynge of certayne serpentes) he before tyme had ben chaunged from a man to a woman, & had vsed in bothe kyndes. So that Iupiter in recompence of his sight (that Iuno had taken from him) gaue hym the science of disuination, and he hauynge a daughter afterwarde, according to that sciences named hir *Panec* who comynge into Italy was anethour bothe of the beginninge and also of the name of *Pantua*. But howe soeuer it were, I find, that ones it was destroyed by *Atella* kyng of the *Fori*, and after by *Agilulfo* kyng of the *Lumbardes*, thyrde by *Cacclano* king of *Baviera*, and lastly by the *Hungaryens*. And than being redified *Picolas* the second byshop of *Rome* helde a generall counsaile ther, in the which these holy *Pillares* (I wold say *pzelates*) decreed, that from thensforth the bishops of *Rome* shulde be elected by the college of *Cardinals*, to the intent the emperours should haue no more to do wth that. At the tyme of which counsaile *Matilda* daughter of the *Conte Bonifacio*, was lady of *Pantua*. This *Conte Bonifacio* was lord of the cities of *Luca*, *Parma*, *Reggio*, *Pantua*, and *Ferrara*, called altogethers at that tyme. *Il Patrimonio*, and was so greate a man, that he obteygned vnto wyfe *Beatrice*, sister of *Henry* the second emperour of *Almayne*. Whiche *Beatrice* after hir husbands death governed the whole dominion. xv. yeres, and was finally buried in *Pisa*: leauynge hir daughter *Matilda* before named wth an husband named *Godfrey* in the laste.

1063

Matilda

Matilda after the death of hir husband *Godfrey* married

resed againe, and at length found meane to be disordered:
insomuch that dyng withoute issue she leste hir whole
estate vnto the church of Rome, and was buried in the
abey of. S. Benette de Bondeno besides Mantua.

After whose death the citie of Mantua was gouerned
by Romaine bicares & legates, vntill aboutes the yere
of grace. 1220. one Sozdello founde the meanes to be
principal gouernoꝝ therof: the myghtiest man of bodye
and strength that was in those dates, insomuch that he
inspired many times to feight, he alwaies remai- Sozdello
ned vanquisher. Through the notable fame wherof the
Frenche kyng sent for hym, and beyng arrined in hys
presence, merily sayd vnto him: he beliened not that he
shuld be Sozdello: wherwith Sozdello being offended,
incontinently tourned his backe without speaking any
word: and beyng called againe, was demaunded by the
French king, what he meained so sodeinly to tourne his
backe, he answered: I wolde haue retourned to Man-
tua to bypnyng witnessse, that I am Sozdello.

He married one of the daughters of Czelino da Ro-
mano, who first being enamoured on hym, vled secret-
ly to departe from hir fathers house, & goe to Mantua
vnto him. Whereof Czelino at length hauynge know-
lage, tempted by meane of his daughter, that Sozdello
shoulde haue betrayed the Mantuanes into his handes,
but Sozdello wolde neuer consent therunto, insomuch
that at last Czelino came hym selfe and besyged Man-
tua, hoppyng to gette it by force. But all in vayne, for
after he had lien before it certayne daies, he finally was
constrayned to raise his siege, and not long after dyed.
So that the Mantuanes prouoked through that example

immediately endeavored them selves to fortify their cities with ditches and water, to the ende that in time to come their vittrailes might not easily be cutte from them. And in that space after fel in contention with the Cremonese for the possession of the ryuer of Oglio. In which time the notablest families of Mantua were the Poledroni (that had chased away the Craxiosi) and next them were the Arlotti, the Caccialodi the Grassolani, and the Agnelli, but at length the Buona Colli became most puissant of all the rest, the heade of which house was named Pinamonte, who beyng conspired against by all the other soynamed families, founde the meane to overcome all their forces. And beyng elected with an other named Ottoneiso, unto the chiefe office of iudgement byppon. and death for terme of. vi. monethes, he founde the meane also to slea bys celleage, and blurpe the dominion over the citie by force.

Pinamonte. ¶ Periclitatelle afterwarde he behaved hym selfe so well, that throughe his gentle and iuste dealinges, he gatte the citizens fauour, and continued in the affaie 18. yeres. After whom succeeded Bardelao, yll beloued of all men: and next him Botticello indifferentely well beloued: on the other syde. But last of all Passerino entosed the domynyon, whose sonne named Francesco, caused the destruction of his father, of hym selfe, and of their other kinne and frendes by this meane.

Passerino.

¶ Amongest his manye friendes Philippino, sonne of Luigi Gonzaga was one. Of whom this Francesco began to conceiue a talously touchyng his wyfe: and so much encreased this suspition, that beyng on a day (as the maner is) greeted by Philippino, he churlishly answered,

swered.

swered, that he wolde be suen with hym, by forsyngge
 his wyfe againe openly in the markette place. The ar-
 rogance of which aunswere so much enflamed the in-
 nocent hert of Phillippino, that incontinentlye he began
 to imagine how to be auenged: not on Francesco alone
 but also on the father Passerino considerynge that the
 one coulde not be well done without the other. And so,
 declaring the terrible wordes of Francesco, lamented
 the case vnto hys brother Guido Gonzaga, & to dyuers
 other of his friends and kinne; who all together with
 the helpe of Cane lord of Scala, determined to dispatch
 Passerino. And as the daye appoynted assembled in
 armes in the market place, and there slew Passerino,
 as he fledde towarde his owne house to haue saued
 hym selfe. So that whan Passerino was slayne, the
 house of Gonzaga toke on it the dominion, banished di-
 uers of for contrary part, beheaded Francesco, & ther-
 with ceased from further crueltie agaynst thei ennem-
 ies: by commaundement of the forenamed Luigi
 Gonzaga, that first of that name was lord of Mantua.
 This familie of Gonzaga had his beginnynge of one
 Luigi Tebalco an Almaigne of royall bloodde, who (in
 the tyme that all Italy was in armes, and so many ar-
 mies about Rubicone) had taken place for hym and all
 his familie at Mantua. Of whom afterwarde descen-
 ded this Luigi Gonzaga before named, that aboute
 the yere of grace, 1328. began his dominion ouer Man-
 tua, and governed the same afterwarde the space of
 53. yeres. He had thre wyfes, and by euery wyfe thre
 sonnes: By the fyrste he had Guido, Phillippino, and
 Feltrino, By the second Currado, Alberto, and Fe-
 derico,

Gonzaga.

Luigi.
Gonzaga.

derico. And by the thyrd, Azo, Jacopo, and Glouan-
ni. Insomuche that there hapened in Mantua thre no-
table mariages of that house in one tyme, Luigi him selfe
to his last wyfe of the house of Palestyn: Cerrado his
son to the sister of Mastino della Scala, & Ugolino his
sons son bozne of Guido, vnto a little girle of Becacci
da Paula. At which mariage there assembled a wonder-
ful number of people: insomuch þ Luigi him selfe gaue
away amongest nobles & gentlemen, 120. goodly horses.
¶ After the successe of these thynges whilste Philip-
pino was folowynge the warres, in seruice of the kynge
of Hungarie against the kynge of Naples, there hapned
a mischaunce vnto the house of Gonzaga.

¶ Isabell wyfe of Lucchino Visconti: lord of Myle-
laine, a verie fayre woman, feigned to hir husband, that
she had made a vow to goe in pylgrimage vnto Venice
and vnder that colour, obteynynge lycence, she toke
Mantua in hir waye, where she lodged in the house of
Gonzaghi, auncient frends vnto hir husband. And af-
ter she had supped, secretlye sente for Ugolino, vnto
whom she declared, that for the seruient lons she bare to
him, she had taken on hir that iourney: praynge hym
therfore to kepe hir company vnto Venice.

This thing came to the eares of Lucchino, who pro-
uoked thereby, laied spege to Mantua. Nevertheless
findynge the frendes of Ugolino innocent of the fault
and that Guido the father did his best to correct him,
Lucchino, through intercession leuied the spege: And
shortly after Luigi Gonzaga, of the age of .93. dyed,
hauinge led an happye life, to see so many forward per-
sones to the .iii. and fourth degree of his olone gene-
racion,

After

¶ After whom Guido his eldest sonne entered into the
 affare, and whilst the empyre was vacant, by the helpe Guido
 of his brother Philippino gatte Lamporeggio, and
 contended longe tyme in armes wth Obizone Mar-
 ques of Ferrara: who at length was ouercomen by
 Philippino, and wth great losse constrained to with-
 draw hym home vnto Ferrara.

This Guido had .iii. sonnes, Vgolino, Francesco, and
 Luigi. And because the two younger perceiued,
 that the father fauoured more the eldest, they takinge
 counsaile together, determined to ridde hym out of the
 waye: and so biddinge hym to supper on an eueninge,
 slew hym.

This unnaturall parte of the sonnes was supported of
 the dolourous father as well as nature wolde suffer it.
 But because the correction therof should haue drawen
 more bloudde of his owne, he therefore sought to abate
 his passion with the new marriage of his sonne Fran-
 cesco vnto the daughter of Guido Polenta, lord of
 Rauenna, nephew to Bernabo Visconti, uncle to
 the wife of Vgolino, to auenge Vgolino's death (af-
 ter he had first sette away his neece) lated siege to Man-
 tua: by reason wherof Guido was constrained to sue
 for helpe to the emperor Charles, that then warred in
 Italye: who before time going towards his coronaci-
 on, and passing through Mantua, had ben there moste
 honourably receiued, by Luigi father of Guido: so that
 by the emperours meanes the matter was remedied,
 and within short space after died Guido and his sonne
 Francesco both.

And then came the affare cleerely to Luigi, who buy- Luigi
 ded the

ded the palatce, wherin all his succellours to this daye
hane dwelled. He begatte on his wyfe Alda, a sonne
named Francesco, whom he married verie yonge vnto
Agnela, doughter of Bernabo Visconti, and at laste
being known openly to haue committed adutrie, the
people arose and cruelly slew hym.

Francesco.

After whose death the astate descended to his sonne
Francesco, than beyng of the age of. xiii. yeares. But
growen afterwarde to more tyme, he so muche loued
prate that he refused to enter into confederacion, wyth
Giangaleazo Duke of Myllaine. And vpon displea-
sure therfore folowynge betwene them, Francesco cau-
sed the adder (that for the great amitie and alyuance be-
twene those two houses had in tyme past been forgyed
to the armes of Mantua) to be cleane taken oute there-
of. For whiche despite Giangaleazo besieged Man-
tua, and laye before the same an whole yere, in whiche
meane tyme there perished many notable men on both
sydes, and specially of the house of Gonzaga. 4. that is
to wete, Guido, Lotello, Bartolino, and Galeazo.

Whiche Galeazo Gonzago amongest al other was re-
puted the strongest & hardiest man of his daies, hauing
fought ostentynies bodie to bodie, and remained ener-
more baskynisher, namely against Buccialdo a notable
stronge man the gouernour of the French kynge in
Genoa. These busynesse at length beyng pacified,
and Francesco somewhat awakened in armes, he enter
priser warre in the name of Giangaleazo agaynst the
Bolognese, and against Giouanni Bentiuogli, in the
chke wherof he toke Jacopo Carraro of Padoa pry-
soner, and led hym to Mantua, geuyng hym inche cur-
seple his

teyfe libertee there, that yeldyng unkyndnesse for kindnesse Jacopo escaped awaye: whereof folowed muche a doo afterwarde. For as soon as the Duke of Myllaine was dead, the Venetians (consideryng the prouoked displeasure before reherfed) elected the sayde Francesco to be their generall in thenterpryse agaynst the Carrari, and were so well serued of hym, that after he had chased the Carrari out of Padoa and Verona, he reduced bothe those citees to the Venetian obedyence: And so after a glozyouse lyfe dyed.

1407

Leauinge after him hys sonne Gianfrancesco in the domynyon of the age of. 14. yeaeres, who by hys wyfe Paola, daughter of Malatesta, lorde of Rimini, had. 4. sonnes, Luigi, Carlo, Lucido, and Alexandro. To the fyrst wherof he obteyned for wyfe Barbera daughter of the Marques of Brandenburghe, and kinnel woman vnto the emperour Edmond, who at his comming into Italy, and passing throughe Mantua, was there honourably receiued by Gianfrancesco, insomuche that before his departure he made hym Marques, and gaue hym in his armes the ensigne of the empire.

Gianfrancesco.

After the attaigning of whych honours he was thre senerall tymes made generall of the Venetians, and in euery enterpryse gat the vpper hande. And at laste forsakyng them, he was waged agaynst them by Philippo Duke of Myllaine: and in that seruice in compaigne of Piccolo Piccinino was part of the occasion, that the Venetians than lost the citee of Verona: with many other townes of the Bressane and Vicentine: so he died leauynge his dominion diuided in iiii. partes vnto hys foure sonnes. To Luigi (as eldest) the citee of Mantua,

1443

Egg

with

With those other townes that he had aboute Verona, to Carlo (who was an exceedingly stronge man) Lucera, with the rest of those lands that he held in Cremonese territorye. To Lucido (yll shapen and weake of person) Capriana, La Volta, and Ceregiala; and finallye Alexandro (who was crookedbacked, and becomen religiousse) Canneto, with that land that he had on the Bresane.

Luigi

Thus Luigi the eldest toke the astate vpon hym, and continued not longe in the same vniuersed of his brother Carlo, whose myghynesse and force of bodye was conpledd with such an haughtynesse of mynde, that for desyre of attaigning his elder brothers astate, he coulde not be contented to liue in peace.

And al be it that in the warres betwene Francesco Sforza, & the Milanese he fled from one part to another and backe againe; yet by his brothers meanes he recovered the fauour of Sforza, at whose hands he receiued dyuers benefytes. But Luigi, seeing now the yll disposition of his vnquiete mynde, finallye toke from hym all the landes that his father lefte hym: so that Carlo fledde to the Venetians, and became their captaine, so long till at length throughe their helpe he assembled a power of men, wente agaiust his brother, and fought with hym to the leoparde of the losse of the Mantuan astate. But in conclusion the right of Luigi preuailed agaiust the force of Carlo, who being discomfited and fledde, died afterwarde very poorely in exile.

This enterpryse being thus ouercomen, and the thynges of the astate quieted, Luigi triumphantly receiued the emperoure Federico the thyrd, as he passed throughe

through Mantua to Rome, and being then a widower by the death of his first wife, married Marguerite daughter of the duke of Bauiera, and cousin to the reigned emperoure.

He was so great of body that he was commonly called the Turke, so well exercised in armes, and so beloved specially of the Dukes of Millaine, that duke Philippo called him sonne, Francesco called hym brother, and Galeazo called him father.

He was noble of courage, fine of wytt, and somewhat learned, which thinges together with his liberall and courtesie lyfe, made him beloved of all men.

Finally through some disorder in luyng, as he thae loved to live in pleasure, he dyed somewhat before the full course of his naturall terme. Leaving by his first wife Barbara, v. sonnes, Federico: Francesco made Cardinall, Luigi, Gianfrancesco, and Rodolfo, all notable and vertuous persons.

Federico as eldest, succeeded in the estate, and was afterwards generall to the duke of Millaine, and married La Margerita Tedesca, on whom he begat a sonne named Francesco: and in the Venetian warres against the duke of Ferrara, having gotten Asola, which after wardes he was constrained by force to restore, sickened for sorrow and dyed.

By reason wherof his sonne Francesco, of the age of 18. yeares, entered into the estate, & at the age of 28. was made general of the Venetians, in whose service he did wonders: specially against Charles the eyght French kyng, nere unto the river of Taro besides Parma, as the same king returning from the conquest of the realme

Of the astate

of Paples, laden with great riches, was goynge into Fraunce. In which enterpryse Francesco so behaued him selfe, that he led manye noble men prysoners with him at his retourne, insomuch that the frenche kynge made verie greate offers to haue had hys seruyce, but al in vaine. For continuing his ennemy he afterwards fought with the french men in Puglia and so dyscomfited them, that he restozed the kyng Ferrandino vnto hys astate. And leauyng thre sonnes by his wyfe Beatrice, daughter of Ercole, duke of Ferrara, that is to wete, Federico that nexte succeeded him, Ercole made Cardinall, and Don ferrando that nowe is the emperours general at Millaine, finally he dyed.

Federico.
1520

After whose death, Federico toke the astate vpon him and was made general of the Romaine church by byshop Lyon the x. confirmed by Adrian the. vi. and continued also vnder Clemente the. vii. And as the emperour (that nowe is) returned from hys coronacyon at Bologna, passinge throughte Mantua (where he was most honourably receiued) his maiestee, for the vertue, worthinesse, and nobilitie knowen in this Federico called hym fro the degre of Marques, & created hym duke. He married Margerite daughter and heire of the lord Guglielmo paleologo, Marques of Monferrato, in whose right by fauoure of the emperours maiestee, he obtayned hys fathers astate, that is to say, the dominion of Monferrato. And so notably fortifyinge the citee of Mantua, he died, leauinge. iiii. sons, Francesco Guglielmo, Lodouico, and federico.

1539

Francesco

Francesco after his fathers death entred into the dominion, but because he was than of very tender yeres,

and

and passeth not yet the age of .14. his father by testamēt committed the governaunce of hym vnto his wife, with the helpe and counsaile of his brother Ercole the Cardinall, vntil the yong duke shal be growen to sufficient yeres: who by the parentes consente, and by the emperours procurement, hath bene contracted vnto one of kyng ferdinando's daughters, and shal mary hir very shortly, as the sayinge is.

Of the state of Ferrara.



Ferrara is one of the notableste Cities of Lumbardy, as wel for the beautie and greatnesse, as also for the stronge sitte and fortification. First for beautie, if that part, that is called La terra nuova had ben thoroughly finished: as it was devised, it should haue bene worthy for faire streetes, to haue bene preferred before any other citee that I haue seen. And now as it is, I thinke it no lesse worthy. For you shall finde aboue a dosen streetes so lust and euently sette forth, that I warrante you there is not so muche as the corner of a house to let a man of his ful sight from the one end to the tother. Some of whiche streetes lacke lyttell of a myle longe, with the goodly houses and buildynges on bothe sydes so fayre and vniforme, that it semeth all dooen at one tyme and by one agrement, as no doubt the most part hath been in deede. And than in the myd-

best it hath a very fayre greene, appoynted oure for the market place. But the Duke that now is, hath had no mynde to folow it, althoughe his father Alfonso bestowed the most traualle of all his daies about it, to his wonderful charge: as he that shall see it maye well consider. So that the most habitation of people resteth styl in the olde parte of the citee, whych is also indyfferente fayre, but nothyng comparable to the newe. Than as touchyng the greatnesse, I thinke the circuit by the walles be lyttle lesse than .v. myles. And finallye for strength it hath the goodliest and strongest wal, and the largestt ditch, well watered, that I haue seen: specialllye for thre partes to the lande warde. And as for the fourth part, though the wall be not so stronge, yet is it reputed of no lesse force on that side, than on the other, by reason that withyn .20. yardes of the wall, the great riuer of Po, hath his course downe towarde the sea: whyche renneth so swyfte, and is so broad and deepe, that it is not to be passed of any enemy to geue assaulte to the towne.

The duke hath vnder his dominion tise other citises that is to wete, Modona, and Reggio, wyth a good part of the low countreys of Romagna, and may dispende perely by estimation betwene .200. and .250000 ducates: and is esteemed verie riche, because he hath had no warre, nor other charge of importaunce, for the space of .xlii. yeres or moze, that he hath gouerned the affaire.

The Originall and successe of
the Citie,

LIke as of other places be dyuers opinyons, even so is there of the begynnynge, and name of Ferrara. Some woul, that the name therof hath growen of a certayne quantitee of yron, that the same citie yelded for a tribute vnto the lord of Rauenna: as Argenta, and Aureolo haue also doen of the payement of syluer and golde. Some other woul, that it be so called of the mynes of yron that haue bene founde there, whiche opinion is most sensible, considering that Ferrara (after the vse of the latine tongue) signifyeth none other but the place where yron is digged, for, as Caesar in his commentaries, the viii. booke of the French warres, and as Lise in the fourth of the Macedonycall warres doe asseyme.

But to passe ouer these antiquities, and come nerer to ^{700.} our purpose, I finde, that the said citie of Ferrara was first closed with walles by one Smeraldo, captaine for the Greekish emperor in Rauenna: and long time after (being a certayne space vnder the obedience of Henry the second emperor of Almanie) it was recovered by the countesse Matilda, daughter of the Cōte Bonifacio ^{1029.} as his right inheritaunce, through helpe of the Venetians, and of the lordes of Rauenna, out of the handes of Henry the thirde than emperorre: whiche Countesse at his death, with other his possessions, left it vnto the vse of the Romaine church: insomuche that longe tyme it was gouerned of bicares & of legates, vntill the house of Este gatte the rule thereof. Who first obteigned it
vnto

Under condicſion, that they ſhould for ever hold it in fee of the church of Rome.

And to reſite the beginning of that houſe, ſome thinke the ſame is deſcended of thoſe auncient Troſanes, that came with Anchenor into Italy: and ſome other woul, that their ſtocke ſhoulde be of a certayne towne called Eſte, nowe vnder the Venetian domynion, lyinge .xv. miles frō Padoa, on the ſouthſide of the Padoan hilles From which towne (they ſay) this family of Eſte came to dwell in Ferrara. But howe ſoener it be, the fyrſte notable man of that houſe, that ruled Ferrara, was named Azo, who at his death leſte iſſue two ſonnes, Aldobrandino, and Azo: the fyrſte entred in poſſeſſyon, an lying but a ſhorte ſpace, leſte the aſtate vnto Azo the ſecond his younger brother.

Azo. 1
Aldobrandino.

Azo. 2,

This Azo was druen out of it by Federike the emperour, and one Salinqueria put there in his place: ſomuch that Azo for ſuccoure reſortied vnto a certayne Ferrareſe named Gregore Montelungo being at that time Romiſh legate in the citie of Bologna: by whole meanes, with helpe of the Venetians, of the Mantuanes, and of Ezelino, than lord of Verona, brother in lawe vnto this Azo: Salinqueria was by force expelled, and Azo reſtozed vnto his aſtate: vppon condicpon that he ſhoulde hold it for ever as vicar of the church, and none other wyſe.

Crueltes

Now this Azo the ſecond hauing by his firſte wyſe a ſonne, named Freſco, maried agayne the ſeconde daughter of the kynge of Naples, named Beatriſe: whiche marriage ſo much offended his ſonne Freſco (as he that was deſirous to reigne) that priſonyng his father put

put hym vnto death, and after with helpe of the Venetians toke on hym the affaire.

But his owne ciuities, abhorryng so greate a crueltie, Fresco.
procured so much the Romish legate Palagurra to the vengeance of Fresco, that both Fresco and the Venetians were excommunicated, and war moued against them: the general wherof was named Diego Catelano a Spanyarde.

Now Fresco warpyng moze cruell throughe these busineses than before, put to death all those of his subiectes, that were contrarie to hym, and after burned the one halfe of the citee, purposyng to destroye the whole. Crueltie
But the furie of the people was so moued therby, that takyng weapon in hande, they sought hym, and as he woulde haue fled out at the Lyon gate, slewe hym.
And Rinaldo his brother (to whome of right the estate ought to haue descended) was also dead in prison.

So than Obizone, sonne of Rinaldo, toke on hym Obizone
the affaire; and was the firste that began to enlarge his dominion throughe the gettyng of Modena and Reggio.
And after Obizone succeeded Azo his sonne, the. iiii. Azo. 3
of that name, who delited much in armes: many times attemptyng to conquere Parma and Bologna; and at length dyed without issue.

Leauynge his affaire vnto his nephewes Rinaldo and Piccolo, sonnes of his brother Aldobrandino. Rinaldo.
This Rinaldo desirouse to encrease his dominion, with the helpe of Passerino Buona Colli, than lord of Mantua, obtained Argenta, & after toigning his power with an army of the lordes of Scata, laid siege to the towne of San felice on the Modenese, which towne the king

Manfredi, together with 30. other townes, had left in custody of Charles sone to the king of Boeme: so that the same Charles, with Manfredi, and with Beltrame the bishop of Rome general (uniting their campes together assaulted Rinaldo, and discomfited him, taking part of his men, amongst whom Nicolo brother unto Rinaldo rested prisoner, insomuch that the Romish legat, waxing immoderately proude of this victorie adressed his power towards Ferrara, and besieged it. But at last Rinaldo issued out and discomfited him, taking prisoners Galeotto da Rimini, Francesco de gli Ordelaffi, Ricciareo Manfredi di Faenza, & Astagio da Polera, whom he deliuered in exchange for his brother Nicolo, and after let the rest goe freely vpon the others, that they should no more be against hym. Finally this Rinaldo was so much perswaded by his owne ciuitians, that he restored Argenta, to the bishop of Rome, wherby he recouered the bishoppes blessing, and so at length dyed without issue.

Obizone 2. Leauinge his estate vnto his nephewe Obizone the second of that name, sonne vnto his brother Nicolo.

This Obizone (throughe fauoure of the legat) was the first that was made general of the church, and had therfore 10000. duckates of yerely prouision assigned vnto hym. And shortly after was Parma also gotten into his handes by Azo da Correggio, notwithstanding that it appertained vnto Mastino della Scala, and the same Azo also had before offered to sell it vnto the florentines for 50000. duckates.

Not longe after there grewe a controuersye betwene Obizone and Philippino di Gonzaga for the cytie of

Reggio,

Reggio, wherof ther folowed so sharpe warre betwene them, that Obizane, mistrustynge his owne power, yelded the citee of Parma into the handes of Rucchino Visconti, and finally leauynge thae two sonnes, Nicolo and Alberto, dyed.

After whome Nicolo the eldest succeeded, beynge alwaies fast frende to the Romaine byshoppes, in whose fauour Nicolo manye tymes he foughte wyth Bernabo Visconti, and had the better, specyallye in that notable iourney that happened betwene them on the Bressane territory nere to the byll Pozzano.

He purchased also of Giouanni Aguto, an English capitayne, the citee of Faenza, for 20000. duckates, and boughte also the towne of Bagnacavallo, though he kept it long, for Astorgio Manfredi gatte it from him by treason.

Finally he dyd muche for hys citelins, and greatly augmented Ferrara.

He was eloquent, mercysfull and learned, constante both of nature and of countenance, and so liberall, that he neuer repulsed person that soughte benefyte at hys handes. At laste dyng without issue, he lefte his astate vnto his brother Alberto, who also at hys deathe, ha- Alberto uynge no lawfull chyld, left it vnto Nicolo his bastarde sonne, than beynge but a chyld.

Nowe was there one Azo of the house of Este, that seeing Nicolo yet tender of yeares, vnder the gouerne of tutours, and vnapt to rule, did as much as he could to preuaile hym selfe. But with the helpe of the Venetians, of the Florentines, and of the Bologniese, Nicolo was not onely maintained in the astate, but Azo for his

presumpcion confined also into Candia. And after
wardes beyng growen vnto age, this Nicolo became so
mortall ennemye vnto Ottone, Lorde of Parma, that
seigninge at lengthe to mete with hym for a treatye of
peace, caused him secretly to be slayne by the waye, by
meane of Sforza Cotignola, & so recouerd the citiees
of Reggio & Parma, that Ottone before had occupied.
¶ After the which, being all geuen vnto the commodi-
tee of Ferrara, he builded the great palatce or castell in
the herte of the cite, wherin the Dukes euer sens haue
dwelled: and besides that the palatces of Fecarolo, and
of Bellosguardo, and toke vnto wife the doughter of
Francesco Vecchio da Carrara. By reason whereof
he became enemye to the Venetians, and prouoked a-
gaynst his selfe a dangerous warre.

¶ But finally in seates of armes he became excellent, and
in the gouernyng of his affaie verie prudent, and
of suche reputacion, that he caused the generall coun-
saile of that time to be kepte in Ferrara. At the whyche
the emperour of Grece happened to be present: and not
long after he died, leauynge two bastarde sonnes, Lio-
nello and Borso, and two lawfull sonnes by his second
wife, of the bloud of the Marqueses of Saluzo, named
Ercole, and Gilmondo.

¶ Of whom, Lionello beyng the eldest succeeded in the
affaie, by what reason I cannot tell, but that the father
wolde so.

Lionello,

This Lionello was a verie wyse man, and in his time
made of new the wall of Ferrara on the side of the Po,
and amended the houses and stretes on that part of the
citee. And because his sonne Nicolo, whom he had be-
gotten

gotten on the daughter of Stanfrancesco Gonzaga was a verie childe at the time of his death, on his death bed he committed his affaire to his brother Bozso, beseeching him, that when his sonne Nicolo shulde be growē vnto sufficient age, he wold vouchesafe to restore it vnto him. Thus entered Bozso into the dominion, and incontinently reuoked his bretherne Ercole & Gismondo, whom Lionello had before confined into the realme of Naples, and to the intent there shuld growe none enuy betwene them, he alwayes nourished them together a lyke.

Bozso,

He fortified Ferrara with stronge walles, and builded the Charterhouse of the same: and was of so good a nature, that he wolde offer no man wrong, but rather for getting those that were done vnto him, he was wont to saye: That sooner and with moze ease shuld a man overcome his enemye by benefytes and curtesye than by sword or vengeance.

”

”

”

He delisted much in runnyng men, and kepte dytters about him, as well of learned as of others. And finally was so worthy a man, that the emperour Federico passing through his dominion, of his owne motion created him Duke.

After the death of Bozso, Nicolo the sonne of Lionello, according to the couenaunte made betwene Bozso and his father, succeeded in the affaire.

Nicolo,

He ruled not longe, but the righte heyze Ercole, before named, with helpe of the Venetians, by force expelled hym, in suche wyse that for succoure he fledde to his vncle to Mantua, where after the terme of thye yerres, assembling about an. 800. banished men, he attempted to recover Ferrara: & watchynge his time whilste

Ercole,

Ercole was forth of the citee, by night scaled the wall, and came to the market place, crying Uela, Uela (which was his enseigne) but there was none of his frēdes so hardy, as to aryle to succour him: so that Gismondo brother to Ercole (seying the weakenesse of Niccolo's succours) gathered together sache power as that hasty rumour allowed, and not only dyscomfited Niccolo's companie, but also toke hym, with .xx. of hys men prisoners, and broughte hym vnto Lionora the wyfe of Ercole daughter to Ferrando kynge of Naples: who sente for the Duke vnto Bellosguardo. And so within iii. dayes after (the Duke beyng retourned vnto Ferrara) Nicolo lost hys head, and was neuerthelesse honourable buried amongst hys auncestours.

Not longe after the Florentines (at that time troubled by the byshop of Rome, and the kynge of Naples) elected thys duke Ercole for theyr general, who accordinge lyfe serued them very honozably.

Finally fallynge out wyth the Venetians for the breach of certaine articles betwene them, what with war and wyth hunger he was so oppressed, that had he not obteyned the byshop of Romes fauour, he myght easily haue losse hys estat. After whyche enterpryses, beyng general of the Venetians, and of the Mylaneise both, and bitterly suppressing his aduersaries the cries of saynt Bonifacio, at last he dysposed hym selfe altogether to religious workes: and amongst all other with his owne handes he dayly distributed to .12. poor men for goddes sake, two poundes of fleshe, a measure of wyne, three louts of breade, and a litle peece of money, vnto euery one of them, and than dyed.

Leauynge

Leauyng hys affate vnto hys sonne Alfonso, who proued so worthy a man, that notwithstanding he had married Lucretia, daughter of Alexandro bishop of Rome, yet when the same bishoppe by force offered to take from hym the countrey of Romagna, he resisted so valiantly, that the bishop was fayne to forgoe hys enterpryse. The lyke wherof he dyd vnto bishoppe Leon the .x. that purposed to haue taken Ferrara from hym.

And thus hauyng by Lucretia hys fyrste wyfe three sonnes, Ercole Hippolito nowe Cardynall, and Don Francesco; and by Laura hys secounde wyfe two sonnes, Alfonso and Alonsino, he dyed.

After whose death Ercole as eldest sonne, entered into the affate, and at this day enioyeth the same.

And albeitt, that hitherto there hath happened no notable occasion to trie hys worthynesse, yet can he not chuse, but proue well. For he is a goodly man of personage, hyghe of stature, stronge and well proportionate in all his members, bald on the crowne of the head, and amiable enough of countenance. He hath a good write and is somewhat learned, and indifferent in the administration of iustice. And one thyng special I remember of him, worthy to be recited. The emperour at his being in Italy borrowed money of all handes. And demaunding amongst the rest. 100000. crownes in lone, of this duke, he brought him a bagge of. 50000. crownes: excusing him selfe, that to lend. 100000. crownes he was not hable, but to geue his maiestee those. 50000. he could be contented with all his here: and by this wyse kept the other. 50000. crownes in hys purse.

Finally of the religion he is no moze earnest than most prynces

princes are, and in his life he foloweth the court of lone,
to lose no time of pleasure.

He is frendly to faire women, and cherissheth change
By his fathers dales he married madame Renes daugh-
ter vnto Lewys the .xii. frenche kinge, a very gracious
lady. By whom he hath two sonnes, Alfonso, and Lu-
gi. Wherto he hath mainteined his dominion in peace,
and is therfore thought (as I haue sayd) to be very ry-
che. He is well furnished of artillerie and munition;
and of deuotion is altogether frenche. So that if
there shuld happen any businesse in Italy betwene the
emperor and french king, his part is like to be therein

The astate of Placentia. and Parma.



Placentia and Parma are two
notable cities of Lombardy, lyng
betwene the Appennine hylles and
the riuer of Po; whose territory and
pastures are so fatte and swete, that
it is thought no place of al Europe
habable to compare with it for the excellent cheeses it ma-
keth, whych by the name of Parmesanes are right wel
knowne ouer all,

These two cities of late appertained vnto the chur-
che of Rome. But Paule the thyrd, nowe byshop of
the same, a Romaine of nacion, of the house of Farnes, to en-

to encrease his owne familie, found the meane to separate these two citess wyth theyr territoryes from the churches dominyon, & to geue it vnto his owne sonne named Peter Aluigi, crearyng him Duke therof. And in recompence annexed vnto the church the Duchie of Camerino, that he befoze had taken by foze from the duke of Urbine.

This Pietro Aluigi, beyng the yere of oure lorde 1546, entred into the estate, beganne to beare him selfe ouerflowtly against the nobilitie of the same, & specially towards the Signor Ieronimo Pallauicini di Corte Maggiore, who rather disdaininge then enuynge this mā's dominion, was faine at last to flee, & to haue done wyse and chyldren, goodes and landes. In so muche that this new duke toke all vnto him selfe, and furnished the castel out of Corte Maggiore (being a very strong holde) wth his owne men, toke all the rentes (beyng. 12000 duckates a yeare) to his owne purse: except a small porcion assigned to the ladie wife of Ieronimo, for hir liuyng: wth condycyon neuerthelesse, that if she relued hir husband wth any part therof, she should lose the whole. Besydes this, he oppressed hys subiectes, causyng them to hie harness, and to furnishe them selves for the warre on theyr owne cost. But most of all he occupied a great number of labourers in his woozkes, beginning the foundacion of a strong castel, in the place where the Abbey of. S. Benettes in Placentia stode. The monkes wherof he appointed vnto a spittle hous, called saint Lazares in Chaumpaine. And these labourers were taken vp by foze from all partes of the Parmesane and Placentine: of whych there per-

perched at one time, with the fall of an holowe banke as
 boue. 50. persons, so that what with one thyng, & what
 with an other (beyng also a man knowen full of abho-
 minacion in all kinde of vices, and specially in the un-
 natural) in conclusion he became hated of all men, in so
 much that the Conti Giouanni Aguzzolo, and the
 Conte Augustino di Pallauicini, with certayne of
 theyr kynne and frendes, conspired agaynst hym, and
 at theyr time appoynted, slinding him with a smal gard
 in his owne house in Placense, slew him, hangyng af-
 terwardes the deade body oute at a wyndow for a spec-
 tacle vnto the people.

¶ Finally these gentlemen (foresaying the danger that
 for this doying might folow vnto them, in case the state
 should continually of the church) practised before with
 Don Ferrando Gonzaga, to see whether he woulde
 backe them, by receiuyng the strong citee of Placense
 vnto the emperours behoufe: so that being at a pointe
 with him, the matter was so handled, that the nexte
 nyght after the dukes death, there were secretly recei-
 ued into the towne. 800. of the emperours men, and so
 the citee wonne without stroke or stryng.

All the money, plate, ieweltes and stuffe that could be
 founde of the Dukes, to the value of 30000. crownes
 and vpwards, were diuided amongst the confederates
 and the Conte Giouanni Aguzzolo, who kyled the
 Duke his owne handes, allowed by the emperours. 20.
 men for his garde.

¶ Finally the bishop ofrome (being hereof aduertised)
 incontinente caused Parma to be fortified, and furny-
 shed with men of warre, and tempted by corruption of
 money

money to haue had one of the gates of Placense deliuered hym by night: but his practise was discovered, and certayne Spanyardes therfore taken and hanged. And euer sens for moze than this halfe yere, the emperours power vppon the Placentine, and the byshoppes on the Parmesane haue kepte diligence watche and warde, locking euery houre for open war. What it woul proue to, he best knoweth that gouerneth all.

Of the astate of Urbine.



The Citie of Urbine standeth almoste on the toppe of the Appennine hilles, in maner betwene the marke of Ancona and Tuscanie, the people wherof (as Plinie writeth) haue ben surnamed Metaurensi, & it seemeth to haue taken name of Urbes Bina, two townes. For who that wel considereth the proportion of it, shall iudge by the miter facion therof, that it hath bene two townes ioyned together, and the middell, whiche is a holow descente betwene two hilles, is the skenderesse part of the citie.

The Dukes palatse is a very fayre house, but not so excellent as the Conte Baldasar in hys Courtisane doeth commend it.

The dukes dominion is two citiees, Urbine and Persano: his reuenew passeth not 60000. crownes by the yere. But his auncetours for the most parte serued other astates, as the Duke that now is also doth, where

Of the astate

by they kepte muche greater portes than their owne habilltee wolde beare.

Amongest other this Dukes father builded an house within a mile of Pesaro, called Imperiale, whyche in mine opinion is one of the best devised litle things that maye lightlye be founde. It standeth on the syde of an hyl, and hath pprospect both to the cittee and to al the valley, it hath manye fine litle chambers, goodlye open bankes, and excellēt faire fountaines. But that whych most of all pleased myne eye, was that being of a great height, you may out of the highest gardenne ryde about on the toppe of the house, whiche is verie faire paved with bricke, and railed on bothe sydes with fine pillers and ralles of white marble.

As for the edificacion of Urbine, or other notable memory before the yere. 1345, I finde nothing mete to be written. At whych tyme (by reason of the variaunce betwene byshop Clement of Rome, and the emperours Lewis of Bavarie, who to make their parties stronge, made diuers new lordes in Italy) Galasso di Montefeltro was made bicare for the emperour in the citiers of Urbine and Eugenio, againste the byshop of Rome and his adherentes: in which his succession continued inheritors unto the yere. 1444. that Federike, after made duke, obteigned the astate. The occasion whereof was, that Guido Conte di Urbino, havyng no heire male by his firste wyfe, seigned, that he hadde gotten a Concubine with childe, and so secretly toke the sonne of his nere kinneman Bernardino della Corda, whiche even then was newly bozne, and namyng it Federike, caused it to be nourished as hys owne.

Galassa di
Montefeltro
1345

Conte
Guido,
1428

Not longe after his wyfe died, and marryng againe, engendred a sonne named Dodo, who in orde succeeded the father in hys estate. But he was so victouse of lyuyng, and so buſſe with gentilmens wiſes, that in a ſodeine rumour of the people, he was ſlaine, and a Protonotary, called Carpeſſiano with him.

Whereupon this Federſke the putatiue ſonne, by the whole voice of the people was elected their prince: who in hys yowthe had ben very well brought bp, ſpectallye in feates of armes, in the exerciſſe wherof he loſt one of hys eyes.

This Federſke was not only valiſſant, but alſo very well learned, and ſo happie a man, that in his tyme he was general of. viii. ſeuerall armies, and died captayne of the Venetians army in the field beſore Ferrara.

The biſhop of Rome ſo: his worthynesse made hym duke, the kyng of England not onely gaue him mony, but alſo made hym of the Garter. For whiche curteſye all Engliſhe men haue a certaine priuilege of freedom in his dominion, and the French kyng made him alſo of his order. Beſides that, there was none estate in Italy, but that at one tyme or other preſented hym with ſome worthy gyfte.

And aboue all the reſt his fydelytee ſemeth to me moſte worthy of commendacion. For whan Franceſco Sforza, was ſo: ſaken of all his other friends, and purſued with 20000. men, he onely receiued him, and thereby put hym ſelfe and his whole estate in leoparde, whiche he determiued rather to loſe, than to ſeme an vnfaithful friend, and in effecte mainteyned Sforza tyll time ſerued him to recouer.

Guido
Vbaldo
1482

After the death of Federike, his sonne Guido Vbaldo, of the age of .xii. yeres succeeded, who reigned quietly about .xii. yeres, til the coming of Valentino Borgia, sonne of Alexander the .vi. byshop of Rome: that first by such craft gatte the astate into hys handes, that Guido Vbaldo was faine to flee disguised in a plow mans clothinge. Nevertheless through the good wyll of his subjectes he recovered his astate in short time againe. But Valentines force was such, that at length this Duke toke suche treasure as he had, and fledde to the Marques of Mantua, whose sister he had maryed: & there dying without issue, ended the house of Montefeltro, that had reigned in Urbine the space of .157. yeres. Valentino Borgia helde it but a verye smalle space, for shortly after his fathers death, Iulij the seconde byshop of Rome persecuted him, and brought the house of Borgia to naughtes: and therupon gaue the astate of Urbine to his nephew Francesco Maria Prefettino della Rouere: whom he created duke there.

Valentino
Borgia
1503

Francesco
Maria
1504.

1514.

Juliano di
Medici
Laurence
di Medici,

1522.

This Francesco Maria was a very wise and valiant prince, nothinge inferioure to Federike beforenamed: who reigned not fully .x. yeres, but Leo the .x. that succeeded Iulij the .ii. made a puissant army, and expulsed him out of his astate, and rased the walles of the citie even to the earthe. Whereupon he established hys nephew Juliano di Medici Duke in hys place, and after his death (for he lived but a while) his brother Laurence di Medici: who continued in the same, tyll Adrian the .vi. that succeeded Leo, expulsed him, and restored the astate unto Francesco Maria, that enjoyed it til he died, the space of .xvi. yeres in so great reputation, that

all prin

all princes and states of Italy loved and honored him and the greatest of them were glad to entertaine him for their general in the warres. Wherin he got infinite summes of money. But he was so greate a builder and so lyberall vnto his souldoyours, that when he dyed, he lefte no kynde of money in his coffers.

By his life time he builded the palace besides Pesaro, called Imperiale, and fortified the citie of Pesaro, and the castel there, with diuers other goodly buildinges and gatte Katherine daughter and heire to the Duke of Camerine to be married vnto his sonne Guido Vbaldo, that now lyueth. In whose right he enjoyed that estate during the fathers life.

As soon as Francesco Maria was dead, Paule the III. now byshop of Rome, seying this Duke that now liueth a younge man, without money or greate friendes, made so greate a power agaynst him, that for feare to lose the whole, he was contente for a lyttle money and some other smal recompences, to yeld to the byshop the estate of Camerina, whyche the byshop hitherto enjoyed. And yet for all this, the same byshoppe hath founde the meanes to marie his neece to the same duke: where
Guido Vbaldo 2
1538

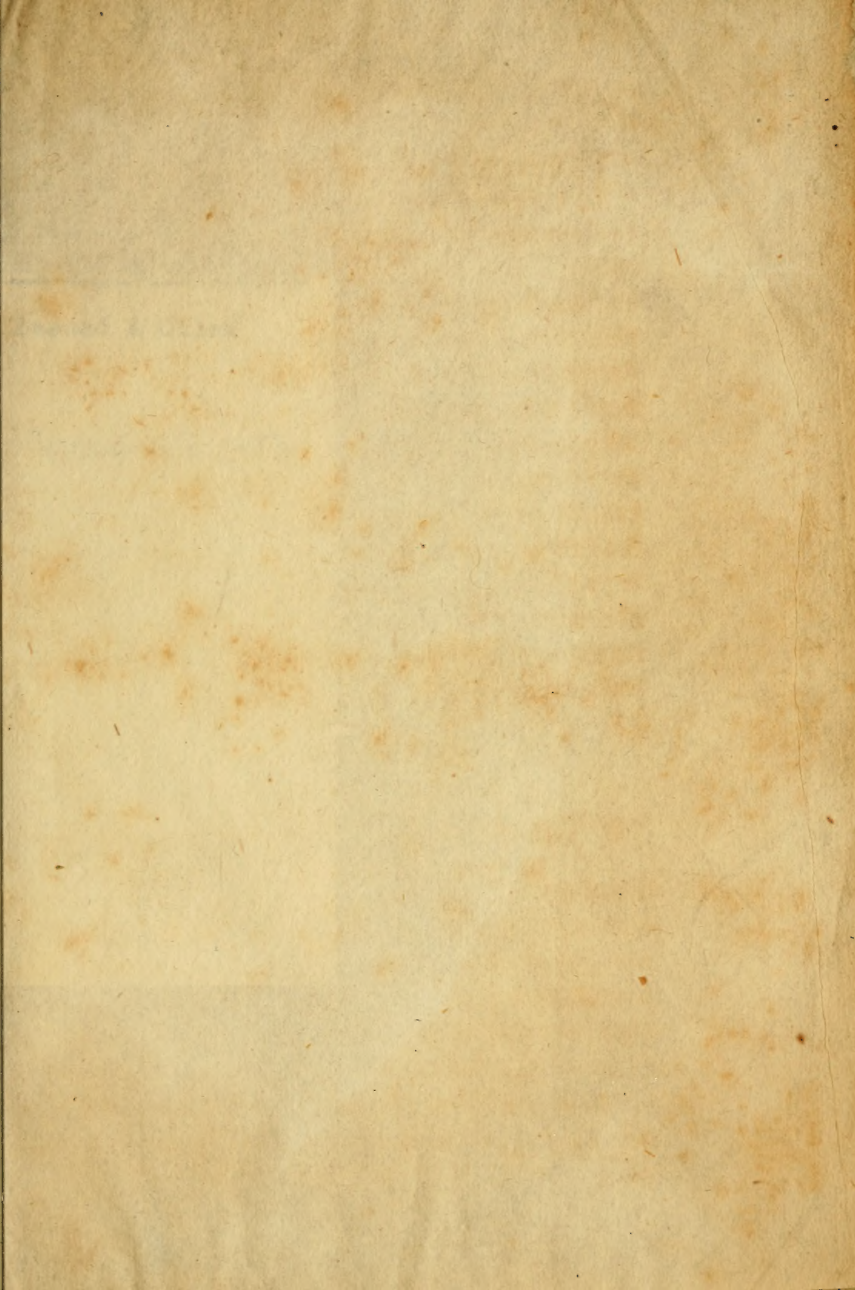
Finally this Duke Guido Vbaldo is generall ouer all the Venetians landes, towne, and fortresses, and hath of the m. 10000. crownes annuities. But hitherto he hath had none occasion of trill in the warres. He is meane of stature, hard of fauour, & very grane in countenance. And though he be well learned, his wisdom hath had no great trill as yet, but men trust he will proue as vertuouse as his predecessours.

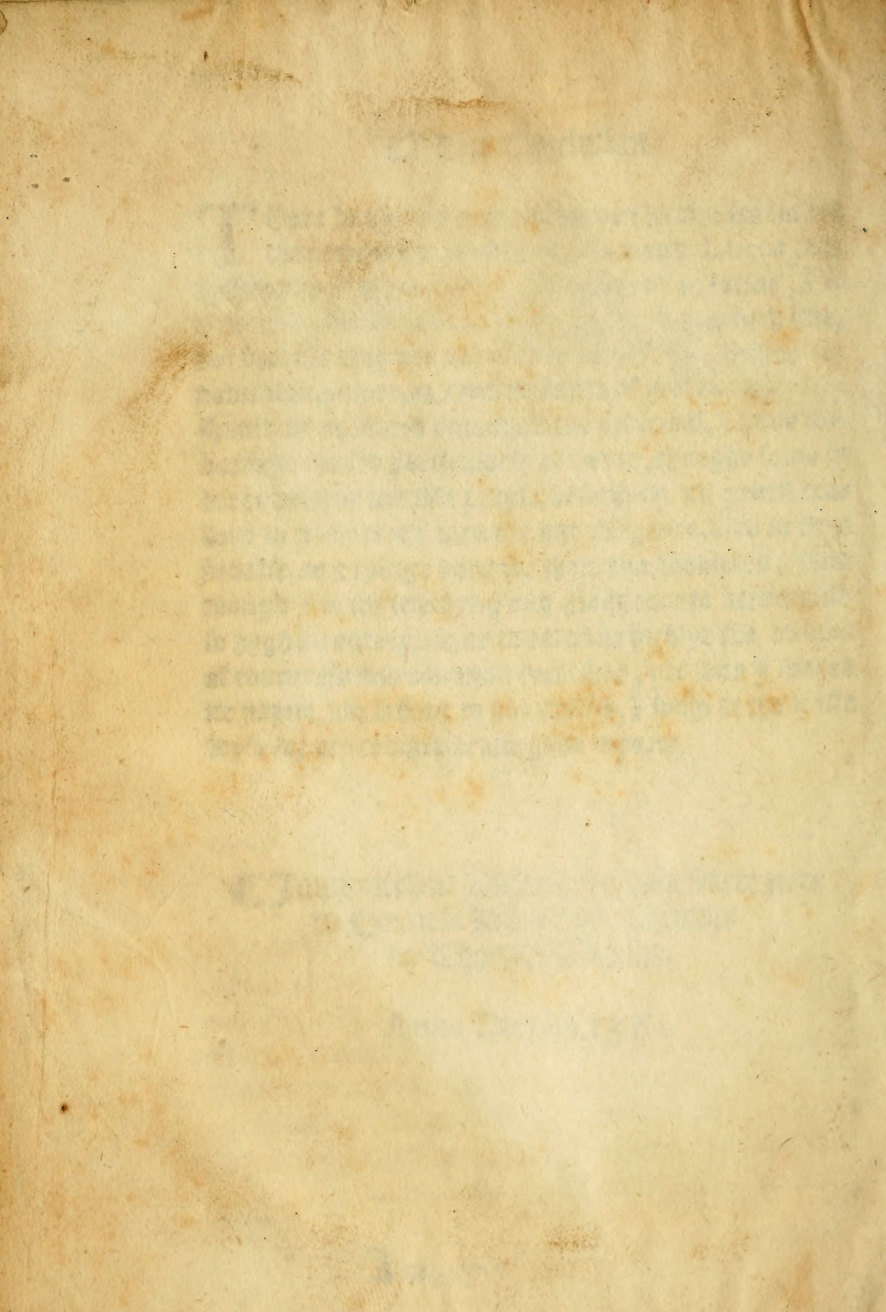
K The Conclusion.

There be dyuers other astatys in Italye speciallye
the common wealthes of Siena and Lucca, the
bythoppyke of Trent called Tridentum in latine, Pis-
ombino, Mirandula, Castel Gessrole, and such like,
but because they are not of such repucation eyther for
dominion, power, or continuance of yeaeres, that they
shoulde be numbred amongst the pyncipal, I haue for-
borne to speake particulerly of theym, thoughe some in
deede deserue notable prayse; besecchyng all gentill reas-
ders to accepte my trauaile and diligence, vsed in this
behalfe, as a thinge done for their commoditees. And
though I want learning and eloquence to accomplishe
so hygh an enterpryse, as to descriue pithlye the astatys
of countreys and common wealthes, yet sens I spared
no payne, nor labour to doe profite, I wold at the leaste
wyse for my reward craue good repoyte.

C Imprinted at London in Fleetestrete nere
to Saincte Dunstons Church
by Thomas Warthe.

Anno Domini. 1561.





5/2/86

20

